00097597

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
Town Hall, Bombay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 28 September, 2015

THE

WORKS

OF

Samuel Johnson, LL.D.

A NEW EDITION,

IN TWELVE VOLUMES.

97597
ae

WITH

AN ESSAY ON HIS LIFE AND GENIUS,

BY ARTHUR MURPHY, Esq.

B 1942

VOLUME THE TWELFTH

B 1942

LONDON:

Printed by J. Nichols and Son, Red Lion Passage, Fleet Street,

For J. Nichols & Son; F. & C. Rivington; Otridge & Son; A. Strahan; Leigh & Sotheby; G. Nicol & Son; T. Payne; W. Lowndes; G. Robinson; Wilkie & Robinson; C. Davis; T. Egerton; Scatcherd & Letterman; J. Walker; Vernor, Hood, & Sharpe; R. Lea; Darton & Harvey; J. Nunn; Lackington, Allen, & Co.; J. Stockdale; J. Cuthell; Clarke & Sons; G. Kearsley; C. Law; J. White & Co.; Longman, Hurst, Rees, & Orme; Cadell & Davies; J. Barker; John Richardson; J. M. Richardson; J. Booker; J. Carpenter; B. Crosby; E. Jeffery; J. Murray; W. Miller; J. & A. Arch; Black, Parry, & Kingsbury; S. Bagster; J. Harding; J. Mackinlay; J. Hatchard; R. H. Evans; Matthews & Leigh; J. Mawman; J. Booth; J. Asperne; R. Scholey; R. Baldwin; J. Faulder; Sherwood, Neely, & Jones; J. Johnson & Co.; *and* T. Underwood—Deighton & Son, at Cambridge; *and* Wilson & Son, at York.

1810.

NN d 3

Joh/Wor
97597

00097597

CONTENTS

OF THE

TWELFTH VOLUME.

LIVES OF EMINENT PERSONS.

	Page
Father Paul Sarpi	3
Boerhaave	11
Blake	41
Sir Francis Drake	63
Barretier	149
Morin	160
Burman	168
Sydenham	180
Cheynel	190
Cave	210
King of Prussia	220
Browne	271
Ascham	308

LETTERS, selected from the Collection of Mrs. Piozzi, and others.

Letter		Page
I.	To Mr. James Elphinstone	331
II. to LIII.	To Mrs. Thrale	333
LIV.	To Mrs. Piozzi	437

Page

PRAYERS composed by Dr. JOHNSON.

Prayer on his Birth-day, September 7th, 1738 — 441
——— on the Rambler — — — 442
——— on the Death of his Wife, reposited among her Memorials, May 8, 1752 — — — 443
——— May 6, 1752 — — — 444
——— March 28, 1754 — — — ibid.
——— on the Day on which his Mother died, January 23, 1759 — — — — 445
——— March 25, 1759 — — — 446
——— January 1, 1770 — — — 447
——— January 1, 1777 — — — ibid.
——— September 18, 1779 — — — 448
——— June 22, 1781 — — — 449
——— on leaving Mr. Thrale's Family, October 6, 1782 ibid.
——— previous to his receiving the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, December 5, 1784 — — 450

LIVES

LIVES

OF SUNDRY

EMINENT PERSONS.

FATHER PAUL SARPI *.

FATHER PAUL, whose name, before he entered into the monastick life, was Peter Sarpi, was born at Venice, August 14, 1552. His father followed merchandize, but with so little success, that, at his death, he left his family very ill provided for, but under the care of a mother, whose piety was likely to bring the blessing of Providence upon them, and whose wise conduct supplied the want of fortune by advantages of greater value.

Happily for young Sarpi, she had a brother, master of a celebrated school, under whose direction he was placed by her. Here he lost no time, but cultivated his abilities, naturally of the first rate, with unwearied application. He was born for study, having a natural aversion to pleasure and gaiety, and a memory so tenacious, that he could repeat thirty verses upon once hearing them.

Proportionable to his capacity was his progress in literature: at thirteen, having made himself master of school-learning, he turned his studies to philosophy and the mathematicks, and entered upon logick under Capella of Cremona, who, though a celebrated master

* Written for the Gentleman's Magazine for 1738. C.

of that science, confessed himself in a very little time unable to give his pupil farther instructions.

As Capella was of the order of the Servites, his scholar was induced, by his acquaintance with him, to engage in the same profession, though his uncle and his mother represented to him the hardships and austerities of that kind of life, and advised him with great zeal against it. But he was steady in his resolutions, and in 1566 took the habit of the order, being then only in his 14th year, a time of life in most persons very improper for such engagements, but in him attended with such maturity of thought, and such a settled temper, that he never seemed to regret the choice he then made, and which he confirmed by a solemn public profession in 1572.

At a general chapter of the Servites, held at Mantua, Paul (for so we shall now call him) being then only twenty years old, distinguished himself so much in a publick disputation by his genius and learning, that William duke of Mantua, a great patron of letters, solicited the consent of his superiors to retain him at his court, and not only made him publick professor of divinity in the cathedral, but honoured him with many proofs of his esteem.

But Father Paul, finding a court life not agreeable to his temper, quitted it two years afterwards, and retired to his beloved privacies, being then not only acquainted with the Latin, Greek, Hebrew, and Chaldee languages, but with philosophy, the mathematicks, canon and civil law, all parts of natural philosophy, and chemistry itself; for his application was unintermitted, his head clear, his apprehension quick, and his memory retentive.

Being

Being made a priest at twenty-two, he was distinguished by the illustrious cardinal Borromeo with his confidence, and employed by him on many occasions, not without the envy of persons of less merit, who were so far exasperated as to lay a charge against him, before the inquisition, for denying that the Trinity could be proved from the first chapter of Genesis; but the accusation was too ridiculous to be taken notice of.

After this he passed successively through the dignities of his order, and in the intervals of his employment applied himself to his studies with so extensive a capacity, as left no branch of knowledge untouched. By him Acquapendente, the great anatomist, confesses that he was informed how vision is performed; and there are proofs that he was not a stranger to the circulation of the blood. He frequently conversed upon astronomy with mathematicians, upon anatomy with surgeons, upon medicine with physicians, and with chemists upon the analysis of metals, not as a superficial enquirer, but as a complete master.

But the hours of repose, that he employed so well, were interrupted by a new information in the inquisition, where a former acquaintance produced a letter written by him in cyphers, in which he said, "that "he detested the court of Rome, and that no pre- "ferment was obtained there but by dishonest "means." This accusation, however dangerous, was passed over on account of his great reputation, but made such impression on that court, that he was afterwards denied a bishoprick by Clement VIII. After these difficulties were surmounted, Father Paul again retired to his solitude, where he appears, by

some

some writings drawn up by him at that time, to have turned his attention more to improvements in piety than learning. Such was the care with which he read the scriptures, that, it being his custom to draw a line under any passage which he intended more nicely to consider, there was not a single word in his New Testament but was underlined; the same marks of attention appeared in his Old Testament, Psalter, and Breviary.

But the most active scene of his life began about the year 1615, when Pope Paul Vth, exasperated by some decrees of the senate of Venice that interfered with the pretended rights of the church, laid the whole state under an interdict.

The senate, filled with indignation at this treatment, forbade the bishops to receive or publish the Pope's bull; and convening the rectors of the churches, commanded them to celebrate divine service in the accustomed manner, with which most of them readily complied; but the Jesuits and some others refusing, were by a solemn edict expelled the state.

Both parties, having proceeded to extremities, employed their ablest writers to defend their measures: on the Pope's side, among others, Cardinal Bellarmine entered the lists, and with his confederate authors defended the papal claims with great scurrility of expression, and very sophistical reasonings, which were confuted by the Venetian apologists in much more decent language, and with much greater solidity of argument.

On this occasion Father Paul was most eminently distinguished, by his *Defence of the Rights of the supreme*

preme Magistrate, his *Treatise of Excommunication* translated from Gerson, with an *Apology*, and other writings, for which he was cited before the inquisition at Rome; but it may be easily imagined that he did not obey the summons.

The Venetian writers, whatever might be the abilities of their adversaries, were at least superior to them in the justice of their cause. The propositions maintained on the side of Rome were these: That the Pope is invested with all the authority of heaven and earth. That all princes are his vassals, and that he may annul their laws at pleasure. That kings may appeal to him, as he is temporal monarch of the whole earth. That he can discharge subjects from their oaths of allegiance, and make it their duty to take up arms against their sovereign. That he may depose kings without any fault committed by them, if the good of the church requires it. That the clergy are exempt from all tribute to kings, and are not accountable to them even in cases of high treason. That the Pope cannot err: that his decisions are to be received and obeyed on pain of sin, though all the world should judge them to be false: that the Pope is God upon earth; that his sentence and that of God are the same; and that to call his power in question, is to call in question the power of God: maxims equally shocking, weak, pernicious, and absurd; which did not require the abilities or learning of Father Paul, to demonstrate their falsehood, and destructive tendency.

It may be easily imagined that such principles were quickly overthrown, and that no court but that of Rome thought it for its interest to favour them.

The

The Pope, therefore, finding his authors confuted, and his cause abandoned, was willing to conclude the affair by treaty, which, by the mediation of Henry IV. of France, was accomodated upon terms very much to the honour of the Venetians.

But the defenders of the Venetian rights were, though comprehended in the treaty, excluded by the Romans from the benefit of it; some upon different pretences were imprisoned, some sent to the galleys, and all debarred from preferment. But their malice was chiefly aimed against Father Paul, who soon found the effects of it; for as he was going one night to his convent, about six months after the accommodation, he was attacked by five ruffians armed with stilettoes, who gave him no less than fifteen stabs, three of which wounded him in such a manner, that he was left for dead. The murderers fled for refuge to the nuncio, and were afterwards received into the Pope's dominions, but were pursued by divine justice, and all, except one man who died in prison, perished by violent deaths.

This and other attempts upon his life obliged him to confine himself to his convent, where he engaged in writing the history of the Council of Trent, a work unequalled for the judicious disposition of the matter, and artful texture of the narration, commended by Dr. Burnet as the completest model of historical writing, and celebrated by Mr. Wotton as equivalent to any production of antiquity; in which the reader finds "Liberty without licentiousness, piety without "hypocrisy, freedom of speech without neglect of "decency, severity without rigour, and extensive "learning without ostentation."

In

In this, and other works of less consequence, he spent the remaining part of his life, to the beginning of the year 1622, when he was seized with a cold and fever, which he neglected till it became incurable. He languished more than twelve months, which he spent almost wholly in a preparation for his passage into eternity; and among his prayers and aspirations was often heard to repeat, *Lord! now let thy servant depart in peace.*

On Sunday the eighth of January of the next year, he rose, weak as he was, to mass, and went to take his repast with the rest, but on Monday was seized with a weakness that threatened immediate death; and on Thursday prepared for his change by receiving the *Viaticum* with such marks of devotion, as equally melted and edified the beholders.

Through the whole course of his illness to the last hour of his life, he was consulted by the senate in publick affairs, and returned answers, in his greatest weakness, with such presence of mind as could only arise from the consciousness of innocence.

On Sunday, the day of his death, he had the passion of our blessed Saviour read to him out of St. John's gospel, as on every other day of that week, and spoke of the mercy of his Redeemer, and his confidence in his merits.

As his end evidently approached, the brethren of the convent came to pronounce the last prayers, with which he could only join in his thoughts, being able to pronounce no more than these words, *Esto perpetua, Mayst thou last for ever;* which was understood to be a prayer for the prosperity of his country.

Thus

Thus died Father Paul, in the 71st year of his age: hated by the Romans as their most formidable enemy, and honoured by all the learned for his abilities, and by the good for his integrity. His detestation of the corruption of the Roman church appears in all his writings, but particularly in this memorable passage of one of his letters: "There is nothing "more essential than to ruin the reputation of the "Jesuits: by the ruin of the Jesuits, Rome will be "ruined; and if Rome is ruined, religion will re-"form of itself."

He appears by many passages of his life to have had a high esteem of the church of England; and his friend, Father Fulgentio, who had adopted all his notions, made no scruple of administering to Dr. Duncomb, an English gentleman that fell sick at Venice, the communion in both kinds, according to the Common Prayer which he had with him in Italian.

He was buried with great pomp at the publick charge, and a magnificent monument was erected to his memory.

BOERHAAVE.

THE following account of the late Dr. BOERHAAVE, so loudly celebrated, and so universally lamented through the whole learned world, will, we hope, be not unacceptable to our readers: We could have made it much larger, by adopting flying reports, and inserting unattested facts; a close adherence to certainty has contracted our narrative, and hindered it from swelling to that bulk, at which modern histories generally arrive.

Dr. Herman Boerhaave was born on the last day of December, 1668, about one in the morning, at Voorhout, a village two miles distant from Leyden: his father, James Boerhaave, was minister of Voorhout, of whom his son *, in a small account of his own life, has given a very amiable character, for the simplicity and openness of his behaviour, for his exact

* "Erat Hermanni Genitor Latinè, Græcè, Hebraicè sciens: peritus valdè historiarum & gentium. Vir apertus, candidus, simplex: paterfamilias optimus amore, curâ, diligentiâ, frugalitate, prudentiâ. Qui non magnâ in re, sed plenus virtutis, novem liberis educandis exemplum præbuit singulare, quid exacta parsimonia polleat, & frugalitas." *Orig. Edit.*

frugality

frugality in the management of a narrow fortune, and the prudence, tenderness, and diligence, with which he educated a numerous family of nine children. He was eminently skilled in history and genealogy, and versed in the Latin, Greek, and Hebrew languages.

His mother was Hagar Daelder, a tradesman's daughter of Amsterdam, from whom he might, perhaps, derive an hereditary inclination to the study of physick, in which she was very inquisitive, and had obtained a knowledge of it not common in female students.

This knowledge, however, she did not live to communicate to her son; for she died in 1673, ten years after her marriage.

His father, finding himself encumbered with the care of seven children, thought it necessary to take a second wife, and in July 1674, was married to Eve du Bois, daughter of a minister of Leyden, who, by her prudent and impartial conduct, so endeared herself to her husband's children, that they all regarded her as their own mother.

Herman Boerhaave was always designed by his father for the ministry, and with that view instructed by him in grammatical learning, and the first elements of languages; in which he made such a proficiency, that he was, at the age of eleven years, not only master of the rules of grammar, but capable of translating with tolerable accuracy, and not wholly ignorant of critical niceties.

At intervals, to recreate his mind, and strengthen his constitution, it was his father's custom to send him into the fields, and employ him in agriculture and such

such kind of rural occupations, which he continued through all his life to love and practise; and by this vicissitude of study and exercise preserved himself, in a great measure, from those distempers and depressions which are frequently the consequences of indiscreet diligence, and uninterrupted application; and from which students, not well acquainted with the constitution of the human body, sometimes fly for relief to wine instead of exercise, and purchase temporary ease by the hazard of the most dreadful consequences.

The studies of young Boerhaave were, about this time, interrupted by an accident, which deserves a particular mention, as it first inclined him to that science, to which he was by nature so well adapted, and which he afterwards carried to so great perfection.

In the twelfth year of his age, a stubborn, painful, and malignant ulcer, broke out upon his left thigh; which, for near five years, defeated all the art of the surgeons and physicians, and not only afflicted him with most excruciating pains, but exposed him to such sharp and tormenting applications, that the disease and remedies were equally insufferable. Then it was that his own pain taught him to compassionate others, and his experience of the inefficacy of the methods then in use incited him to attempt the discovery of others more certain.

He began to practise at least honestly, for he began upon himself; and his first essay was a prelude to his future success, for, having laid aside all the prescriptions of his physicians, and all the applications of his surgeons, he, at last, by tormenting the part with salt and urine, effected a cure.

That

That he might, on this occasion, obtain the assistance of surgeons with less inconvenience and expence, he was brought, by his father, at fourteen, to Leyden, and placed in the fourth class of the publick school, after being examined by the master: here his application and abilities were equally conspicuous. In six months, by gaining the first prize in the fourth class, he was raised to the fifth; and in six months more, upon the same proof of the superiority of his genius, rewarded with another prize, and translated to the sixth; from whence it is usual in six months more to be removed to the university.

Thus did our young student advance in learning and reputation, when, as he was within view of the university, a sudden and unexpected blow threatened to defeat all his expectations.

On the 12th of November, in 1682, his father died, and left behind him a very slender provision for his widow, and nine children, of which the eldest was not yet seventeen years old.

This was a most afflicting loss to the young scholar, whose fortune was by no means sufficient to bear the expences of a learned education, and who therefore seemed to be now summoned by necessity to some way of life more immediately and certainly lucrative; but, with a resolution equal to his abilities, and a spirit not so depressed and shaken, he determined to break through the obstacles of poverty, and supply, by diligence, the want of fortune.

He therefore asked and obtained the consent of his guardians to prosecute his studies so long as his patrimony would support him; and, continuing his wonted industry, gained another prize.

He

He was now to quit the school for the university, but, on account of the weakness yet remaining in his thigh, was, at his own entreaty, continued six months longer under the care of his master, the learned Winschotan, where he once more was honoured with the prize.

At his removal to the university, the same genius and industry met with the same encouragement and applause. The learned Triglandius, one of his father's friends, made soon after professor of divinity at Leyden, distinguished him in a particular manner, and recommended him to the friendship of Mr. Van Apphen, in whom he found a generous and constant patron.

He became now a diligent hearer of the most celebrated professors, and made great advances in all the sciences; still regulating his studies with a view principally to divinity, for which he was originally intended by his father, and for that reason exerted his utmost application to attain an exact knowledge of the Hebrew tongue.

Being convinced of the necessity of mathematical learning, he began to study those sciences in 1687, but without that intense industry with which the pleasure he found in that kind of knowledge induced him afterwards to cultivate them.

In 1690, having performed the exercises of the university with uncommon reputation, he took his degree in philosophy; and on that occasion discussed the important and arduous subject of the distinct natures of the soul and body, with such accuracy, perspicuity, and subtilty, that he entirely confuted all the sophistry of Epicurus, Hobbes, and Spinosa,

and

and equally raised the characters of his piety and erudition.

Divinity was still his great employment, and the chief aim of all his studies. He read the scriptures in their original languages, and when difficulties occurred, consulted the interpretations of the most antient fathers, whom he read in order of time, beginning with Clemens Romanus.

In the perusal of those early writers*, he was struck with the profoundest veneration of the simplicity and purity of their doctrines, the holiness of their lives, and the sanctity of the discipline practised by them; but, as he descended to the lower ages, found the peace of Christianity broken by useless controversies, and its doctrines sophisticated by the subtilties of

* "Jungebat his exercitiis quotidianam patrum lectionem, secundum chronologiam, a Clemente Romano exorsus, et juxta seriem seculorum descendens: ut *Jesu Christi* doctrinam in *N. T.* traditam, primis patribus interpretantibus, addisceret.

"Horum simplicitatem sinceræ doctrinæ, disciplinæ sanctitatem, vitæ Deo dicatæ integritatem adorabat. Subtilitatem scholarum divina postmodum inquinasse dolebat. Ægerrimè tulit, Sacrorum interpretationem ex sectis sophistarum peti; & *Platonis, Aristotelis, Thomæ Aquinatis, Scoti;* suoque tempore Cartesii, cogitata metaphysica adhiberi pro legibus, ad quas castigarentur sacrorum scriptorum de Deo sententiæ. Experiebatur acerba dissidia, ingeniorumque subtilissimorum acerrima certamina, odia, ambitiones, inde cieri, foveri: adeo contraria paci cum Deo & homine. Nihil hic magis illi obstabat; quam quod omnes asserant sacram scripturam ἀνθρωποπαθῶς loquentem, θεοπρεπῶς explicandam; & θεοπρέπειαν singuli definiant ex placitis suæ metaphysices. Horrebat, inde dominantis sectæ prævalentem opinionem, orthodoxiæ modum, & regulas, unice dare juxta dictata metaphysicorum, non sacrarum literarum; unde tam variæ sententiæ de doctrinâ simplicissimâ." *Orig. Edit.*

the

the schools. He found the holy writers interpreted according to the notions of philosophers, and the chimeras of metaphysicians adopted as articles of faith. He found difficulties raised by niceties, and fomented to bitterness and rancour. He saw the simplicity of the Christian doctrine corrupted by the private fancies of particular parties, while each adhered to its own philosophy, and orthodoxy was confined to the sect in power.

Having now exhausted his fortune in the pursuit of his studies, he found the necessity of applying to some profession, that, without engrossing all his time, might enable him to support himself; and having obtained a very uncommon knowledge of the mathematicks, he read lectures in those sciences to a select number of young gentlemen in the university.

At length, his propension to the study of physick grew too violent to be resisted; and, though he still intended to make divinity the great employment of his life, he could not deny himself the satisfaction of spending some time upon the medical writers, for the perusal of which he was so well qualified by his acquaintance with the mathematicks and philosophy.

But this science corresponded so much with his natural genius, that he could not forbear making that his business which he intended only as his diversion; and still growing more eager, as he advanced farther, he at length determined wholly to master that profession, and to take his degree in physick, before he engaged in the duties of the ministry.

It is, I believe, a very just observation, that men's ambition is generally proportioned to their capacity.

Providence seldom sends any into the world with an inclination to attempt great things, who have not abilities likewise to perform them. To have formed the design of gaining a complete knowledge of medicine by way of digression from theological studies, would have been little less than madness in most men, and would have only exposed them to ridicule and contempt. But Boerhaave was one of those mighty geniuses, to whom scarce any thing appears impossible, and who think nothing worthy of their efforts but what appears insurmountable to common understandings.

He began this new course of study by a diligent perusal of Vesalius, Bartholine, and Fallopius; and, to acquaint himself more fully with the structure of bodies, was a constant attendant upon Nuck's publick dissections in the theatre, and himself very accurately inspected the bodies of different animals.

Having furnished himself with this preparatory knowledge, he began to read the ancient physicians in the order of time, pursuing his enquiries downwards from Hippocrates through all the Greek and Latin writers.

Finding, as he tells us himself, that Hippocrates was the original source of all medical knowledge, and that all the later writers were little more than transcribers from him, he returned to him with more attention, and spent much time in making extracts from him, digesting his treatises into method, and fixing them in his memory.

He then descended to the moderns, among whom none engaged him longer, or improved him more, than Sydenham, to whose merit he has left this attestation,

testation, "that he frequently perused him, and "always with greater eagerness."

His insatiable curiosity after knowledge engaged him now in the practice of chemistry, which he prosecuted with all the ardour of a philosopher, whose industry was not to be wearied, and whose love of truth was too strong to suffer him to acquiesce in the reports of others.

Yet did he not suffer one branch of science to withdraw his attention from others: anatomy did not withhold him from chemistry, nor chemistry, enchanting as it is, from the study of botany, in which he was no less skilled than in other parts of physick. He was not only a careful examiner of all the plants in the garden of the university, but made excursions for his farther improvement into the woods and fields, and left no place unvisited where any increase of botanical knowledge could be reasonably hoped for.

In conjunction with all these enquiries he still pursued his theological studies, and still, as we are informed by himself, "proposed, when he had made "himself master of the whole art of physick, and "obtained the honour of a degree in that science, to "petition regularly for a licence to preach, and to "engage in the cure of souls," and intended in his theological exercise to discuss this question, "why "so many were formerly converted to Christianity "by illiterate persons, and so few at present by men "of learning."

In pursuance of this plan he went to Hardewich, in order to take the degree of doctor in physick, which he obtained in July 1693, having performed a

publick disputation, "de utilitate explorandorum ex-
" crementorum in ægris, ut signorum."

Then returning to Leyden full of his pious design of undertaking the ministry, he found to his surprize unexpected obstacles thrown in his way, and an insinuation dispersed through the university that made him suspected, not of any slight deviation from received opinions, not of any pertinacious adherence to his own notions in doubtful and disputable matters, but of no less than Spinosism, or, in plainer terms, of Atheism itself.

How so injurious a report came to be raised, circulated, and credited, will be doubtless very eagerly inquired: we shall therefore give the relation, not only to satisfy the curiosity of mankind, but to shew that no merit, however exalted, is exempt from being not only attacked, but wounded, by the most contemptible whispers. Those who cannot strike with force, can however poison their weapon, and weak as they are, give mortal wounds, and bring a hero to the grave: so true is that observation, that many are able to do hurt, but few to do good.

This detestable calumny owed its rise to an incident from which no consequence of importance could be possibly apprehended. As Boerhaave was sitting in a common boat, there arose a conversation among the passengers upon the impious and pernicious doctrine of Spinosa, which, as they all agreed, tends to the utter overthrow of all religion. Boerhaave sat, and attended silently to this discourse for some time, till one of the company, willing to distinguish himself by his zeal, instead of confuting the positions of Spinosa by argument, began to give a loose to contumelious

tumelious language, and virulent invectives, which Boerhaave was so little pleased with, that at last he could not forbear asking him, whether he had ever read the author he declaimed against.

The orator, not being able to make much answer, was checked in the midst of his invectives, but not without feeling a secret resentment against the person who had at once interrupted his harangue, and exposed his ignorance.

This was observed by a stranger who was in the boat with them; he enquired of his neighbour the name of the young man, whose question had put an end to the discourse, and having learned it, set it down in his pocket-book, as it appears, with a malicious design, for in a few days it was the common conversation at Leyden, that Boerhaave had revolted to Spinosa.

It was in vain that his advocates and friends pleaded his learned and unanswerable confutation of all atheistical opinions, and particularly of the system of Spinosa, in his discourse of the distinction between soul and body. Such calumnies are not easily suppressed, when they are once become general. They are kept alive and supported by the malice of bad, and sometimes by the zeal of good men, who though they do not absolutely believe them, think it yet the securest method to keep not only guilty but suspected men out of publick employments, upon this principle, that the safety of many is to be preferred before the advantage of few.

Boerhaave, finding this formidable opposition raised against his pretensions to ecclesiastical honours or preferments, and even against his design of assuming

ing the character of a divine, thought it neither necessary nor prudent to struggle with the torrent of popular prejudice, as he was equally qualified for a profession, not indeed of equal dignity or importance, but which must undoubtedly claim the second place among those which are of the greatest benefit to mankind.

He therefore applied himself to his medical studies with new ardour and alacrity, reviewed all his former observations and enquiries, and was continually employed in making new acquisitions.

Having now qualified himself for the practice of physick, he began to visit patients, but without that encouragement which others, not equally deserving, have sometimes met with. His business was, at first, not great, and his circumstances by no means easy; but still, superior to any discouragement, he continued his search after knowledge, and determined that prosperity, if ever he was to enjoy it, should be the consequence not of mean art, or disingenuous solicitations, but of real merit, and solid learning.

His steady adherence to his resolutions appears yet more plainly from this circumstance: he was, while he yet remained in this unpleasing situation, invited by one of the first favourites of King William III. to settle at the Hague, upon very advantageous conditions; but declined the offer. For having no ambition but after knowledge, he was desirous of living at liberty, without any restraint upon his looks, his thoughts, or his tongue, and at the utmost distance from all contentions, and state-parties. His time was wholly taken up in visiting the sick, studying, making chemical

mical experiments, searching into every part of medicine with the utmost diligence, teaching the mathematicks, and reading the scriptures, and those authors who profess to teach a certain method of loving God *.

This was his method of living to the year 1701, when he was recommended by Van Berg to the university, as a proper person to succeed Drelincurtius in the professorship of physick, and elected without any solicitations on his part, and almost without his consent, on the 18th of May.

On this occasion, having observed, with grief, that Hippocrates, whom he regarded not only as the father but as the prince of physicians, was not sufficiently read or esteemed by young students, he pronounced an oration, "de commendando Studio Hippocratico;" by which he restored that great author to his just and ancient reputation.

He now began to read publick lectures with great applause, and was prevailed upon by his audience to enlarge his original design, and instruct them in chemistry.

This he undertook, not only to the great advan-

* "Circa hoc tempus, lautis conditionibus, lautioribus promissis, invitatus, plus vice simplici, a viro primariæ dignationis, qui gratia flagrantissima florebat regis Gulielmi III. ut Hagamcomitum sedem caperet fortunarum, declinavit constans. Contentus videlicet vita libera, remota a turbis, studiisque porro percolendis unice impensa, ubi non cogeretur alia dicere et simulare, alia sentire et dissimulare: affectuum studiis rapi, regi.' Sic tum vita erat, ægros visere, mox domi in musæo se condere, officinam Vulcaniam exercere; omnes medicinæ partes acerrime persequi; mathematica etiam aliis tradere; sacra legere, et auctores qui profitentur docere rationem certam amandi Deum.' *Orig. Edit.*

tage

tage of his pupils, but to the great improvement of the art itself, which had hitherto been treated only in a confused and irregular manner, and was little more than a history of particular experiments, not reduced to certain principles, nor connected one with another: this vast chaos he reduced to order, and made that clear and easy which was before to the last degree difficult and obscure.

His reputation now began to bear some proportion to his merit, and extended itself to distant universities; so that, in 1703, the professorship of physick being vacant at Groningen, he was invited thither; but he refused to leave Leyden, and chose to continue his present course of life.

This invitation and refusal being related to the governors of the university of Leyden, they had so grateful a sense of his regard for them, that they immediately voted an honorary increase of his salary, and promised him the first professorship that should be vacant.

On this occasion he pronounced an oration upon the use of mechanicks in the science of physick, in which he endeavoured to recommend a rational and mathematical enquiry into the causes of diseases, and the structure of bodies; and to shew the follies and weaknesses of the jargon introduced by Paracelsus, Helmont, and other chemical enthusiasts, who have obtruded upon the world the most airy dreams, and instead of enlightening their readers with explications of nature, have darkened the plainest appearances, and bewildered mankind in error and obscurity.

Boerhaave

Boerhaave had now for nine years read physical lectures, but without the title or dignity of a professor, when, by the death of professor Hotten, the professorship of physick and botany fell to him of course.

On this occasion he asserted the simplicity and facility of the science of physick, in opposition to those that think obscurity contributes to the dignity of learning, and that to be admired it is necessary not to be understood.

His profession of botany made it part of his duty to superintend the physical garden, which improved so much by the immense number of new plants which he procured, that it was enlarged to twice its original extent.

In 1714, he was deservedly advanced to the highest dignities of the university, and in the same year made physician of St. Augustin's hospital in Leyden, into which the students are admitted twice a week, to learn the practice of physick.

This was of equal advantage to the sick and to the students, for the success of his practice was the best demonstration of the soundness of his principles.

When he laid down his office of governor of the university in 1715, he made an oration upon the subject of "attaining to certainty in natural philosophy;" in which he declares, in the strongest terms, in favour of experimental knowledge, and reflects with just severity upon those arrogant philosophers, who are too easily disgusted with the slow methods of obtaining true notions by frequent experiments, and who, possessed with too high an opinion of their own abilities,

rather

rather chuse to consult their own imaginations, than enquire into nature, and are better pleased with the charming amusement of forming hypotheses, than the toilsome drudgery of making observations.

The emptiness and uncertainty of all those systems, whether venerable for their antiquity, or agreeable for their novelty, he has evidently shewn; and not only declared, but proved, that we are entirely ignorant of the principles of things, and that all the knowledge we have is of such qualities alone as are discoverable by experience, or such as may be deduced from them by mathematical demonstration.

This discourse, filled as it was with piety, and a true sense of the greatness of the Supreme Being, and the incomprehensibility of his works, gave such offence to a professor of Franeker, who professed the utmostesteem for Des Cartes, and considered his principles as the bulwark of orthodoxy, that he appeared in vindication of his darling author, and spoke of the injury done him with the utmost vehemence, declaring little less than that the Cartesian system and the Christian must inevitably stand and fall together, and that to say that we were ignorant of the principles of things, was not only to enlist among the Sceptics, but sink into Atheism itself.

So far can prejudice darken the understanding, as to make it consider precarious systems as the chief support of sacred and invariable truth.

This treatment of Boerhaave was so far resented by the governors of his university, that they procured from Franeker a recantation of the invective that had been thrown out against him; this was not only complied with, but offers were made him of more ample satisfaction;

satisfaction; to which he returned an answer not less to his honour than the victory he gained, "that he "should think himself sufficiently compensated, if "his adversary received no farther molestation on "his account."

So far was this weak and injudicious attack from shaking a reputation not casually raised by fashion or caprice, but founded upon solid merit, that the same year his correspondence was desired upon Botany and Natural Philosophy by the Academy of Sciences at Paris, of which he was, upon the death of count Marsigli, in the year 1728, elected a member.

Nor were the French the only nation by which this great man was courted and distinguished; for, two years after, he was elected fellow of our Royal Society.

It cannot be doubted but, thus caressed and honoured with the highest and most publick marks of esteem by other nations, he became more celebrated in the university; for Boerhaave was not one of those learned men, of whom the world has seen too many, that disgrace their studies by their vices, and by unaccountable weaknesses make themselves ridiculous at home, while their writings procure them the veneration of distant countries, where their learning is known, but not their follies.

Not that his countrymen can be charged with being insensible of his excellences till other nations taught them to admire him; for in 1718 he was chosen to succeed Le Mort in the professorship of chemistry; on which occasion he pronounced an oration "De Chemiâ errores suos expurgante," in which

which he treated that science with an elegance of style not often to be found in chemical writers, who seem generally to have affected not only a barbarous, but unintelligible phrase, and to have, like the Pythagoreans of old, wrapt up their secrets in symbols and ænigmatical expressions, either because they believed that mankind would reverence most what they least understood, or because thay wrote not from benevolence but vanity, and were desirous to be praised for their knowledge, though they could not prevail upon themselves to communicate it.

In 1722, his course both of lectures and practice was interrupted by the gout, which, as he relates it in his speech after his recovery, he brought upon himself, by an imprudent confidence in the strength of his own constitution, and by transgressing those rules which he had a thousand times inculcated to his pupils and acquaintance. Rising in the morning before day, he went immediately, hot and sweating, from his bed into the open air, and exposed himself to the cold dews.

The history of his illness can hardly be read without horror: he was for five months confined to his bed, where he lay upon his back without daring to attempt the least motion, because any effort renewed his torments, which were so exquisite, that he was at length not only deprived of motion but of sense. Here art was at a stand, nothing could be attempted, because nothing could be proposed with the least prospect of success. At length having, in the sixth month of his illness, obtained some remission, he took simple

simple medicines * in large quantities, and at length wonderfully recovered.

His recovery, so much desired, and so unexpected, was celebrated on Jan. 11, 1723, when he opened his school again, with general joy and publick illuminations.

It would be an injury to the memory of Boerhaave not to mention what was related by himself to one of his friends, that when he lay whole days and nights without sleep, he found no method of diverting his thoughts so effectual as meditation upon his studies, and that he often relieved and mitigated the sense of his torments by the recollection of what he had read, and by reviewing those stores of knowledge which he had reposited in his memory.

This is perhaps an instance of fortitude and steady composure of mind, which would have been for ever the boast of the Stoick schools, and increased the reputation of Seneca or Cato. The patience of Boerhaave, as it was more rational, was more lasting than theirs; it was that *patientia Christiana* which Lipsius, the great master of the Stoical Philosophy, begged of God in his last hours; it was founded on religion, not vanity, not on vain reasonings, but on confidence in God.

In 1727 he was seized with a violent burning fever, which continued so long that he was once more given up by his friends.

* "Succos pressos bibit Noster herbarum Cichoreæ, Endiviæ, Fumariæ, Nasturtii aquatici, Veronicæ aquaticæ latifoliæ, copia ingenti; simul deglutiens abundantissimè gummi ferulaceæ Asiatica." *Orig. Edit.*

From

From this time he was frequently afflicted with returns of his distemper, which yet did not so far subdue him, as to make him lay aside his studies or his lectures, till in 1726 he found himself so worn out that it was improper for him to continue any longer, the professorships of botany and chemistry, which he therefore resigned April 28, and upon his resignation spoke a "Sermo Academicus," or oration, in which he asserts the power and wisdom of the Creator from the wonderful fabrick of the human body; and confutes all those idle reasoners, who pretend to explain the formation of parts, or the animal operations, to which he proves that art can produce nothing equal, nor any thing parallel. One instance I shall mention, which is produced by him, of the vanity of any attempt to rival the work of God. Nothing is more boasted by the admirers of chemistry, than that they can, by artificial heats and digestion, imitate the productions of Nature. "Let all these heroes of science meet together," says Boerhaave; "let them take bread and wine, the food that forms the blood of man, and by assimilation contributes to the growth of the body: let them try all their arts, they shall not be able from these materials to produce a single drop of blood. So much is the most common act of Nature beyond the utmost efforts of the most extended Science!"

From this time Boerhaave lived with less publick employment indeed, but not an idle or an useless life: for, besides his hours spent in instructing his scholars, a great part of his time was taken up by patients which came, when the distemper would admit it,

it, from all parts of Europe to consult him, or by letters which, in more urgent cases, were continually sent, to enquire his opinion, and ask his advice.

Of his sagacity, and the wonderful penetration with which he often discovered and described, at the first sight of a patient, such distempers as betray themselves by no symptoms to common eyes, such wonderful relations have been spread over the world, as, though attested beyond doubt, can scarcely be credited. I mention none of them, because I have no opportunity of collecting testimonies, or distinguishing between those accounts which are well proved, and those which owe their rise to fiction and credulity.

Yet I cannot but implore, with the greatest earnestness, such as have been conversant with this great man, that they will not so far neglect the common interest of mankind, as to suffer any of these circumstances to be lost to posterity. Men are generally idle, and ready to satisfy themselves, and intimidate the industry of others, by calling that impossible which is only difficult. The skill to which Boerhaave attained, by a long and unwearied observation of nature, ought therefore to be transmitted in all its particulars to future ages, that his successors may be ashamed to fall below him, and that none may hereafter excuse his ignorance by pleading the impossibility of clearer knowledge.

Yet so far was this great master from presumptuous confidence in his abilities, that, in his examinations of the sick, he was remarkably circumstantial and particular. He well knew that the originals of distempers are often at a distance from their visible effects;

effects; that to conjecture, where certainty may be obtained, is either vanity or negligence; and that life is not to be sacrificed, either to an affectation of quick discernment, or of crowded practice, but may be required, if trifled away, at the hand of the physician.

About the middle of the year 1737, he felt the first approaches of that fatal illness that brought him to the grave, of which we have inserted an account, written by himself Sept. 8, 1738, to a friend at London *; which deserves not only to be preserved as an historical relation of the disease which deprived us of so great a man, but as a proof of his piety and resignation to the divine will.

In this last illness, which was to the last degree lingering, painful, and afflictive, his constancy and firmness did not forsake him. He neither intermitted the necessary cares of life, nor forgot the proper preparations for death. Though dejection and lowness of spirit was, as he himself tells us, part of his distemper, yet even this, in some measure, gave way

* "Ætas, labor, corporisque opima pinguetudo, effecerant, ante annum, ut inertibus refertum, grave, hebes, plenitudine turgens corpus, anhelum ad motus minimos, cum sensu suffocationis, pulsu mirificè anomalo, ineptum evaderet ad ullum motum. Urgebat præcipuè subsistens prorsus & intercepta respiratio ad prima somni initia: unde somnus prorsus prohibebatur, cum formidabili strangulationis molestia. Hinc hydrops pedum, crurum, femorum, scroti, præputii, & abdominis. Quæ tamen omnia sublata. Sed dolor manet in abdomine, cum anxietate summa, anhelitu suffocante, & debilitate incredibili: somno pauco, eoque vago, per somnia turbatissimo: animus vero rebus agendis impar. Cum his luctor fessus nec emergo: patienter expectans Dei jussa, quibus resigno data, quæ sola amo, & honoro unicè." *Orig. Edit.*

to

to that vigour which the soul receives from a consciousness of innocence.

About three weeks before his death he received a visit at his country house from the Rev. Mr. Schultens, his intimate friend, who found him sitting without-door, with his wife, sister, and daughter: after the compliments of form, the ladies withdrew, and left them to private conversation; when Boerhaave took occasion to tell him what had been, during his illness, the chief subject of his thoughts. He had never doubted of the spiritual and immaterial nature of the soul; but declared that he had lately had a kind of experimental certainty of the distinction between corporeal and thinking substances, which mere reason and philosophy cannot afford, and opportunities of contemplating the wonderful and inexplicable union of soul and body, which nothing but long sickness can give. This he illustrated by a description of the effects which the infirmities of his body had upon his faculties, which yet they did not so oppress or vanquish, but his soul was always master of itself, and always resigned to the pleasure of its Maker.

He related, with great concern, that once his patience so far gave way to extremity of pain, that, after having lain fifteen hours in exquisite tortures, he prayed to God that he might be set free by death.

Mr. Schultens, by way of consolation, answered, that he thought such wishes, when forced by continued and excessive torments, unavoidable in the present state of human nature; that the best men, even Job himself, were not able to refrain from such starts of impatience. This he did not deny; but said, "He

"that loves God, ought to think nothing desirable "but what is most pleasing to the Supreme Goodness."

Such were his sentiments, and such his conduct, in this state of weakness and pain: as death approached nearer, he was so far from terror or confusion, that he seemed even less sensible of pain, and more cheerful under his torments, which continued till the 23d day of September 1738, on which he died, between four and five in the morning, in the 70th year of his age.

Thus died Boerhaave, a man formed by nature for great designs, and guided by religion in the exertion of his abilities. He was of a robust and athletic constitution of body, so hardened by early severities, and wholesome fatigue, that he was insensible of any sharpness of air, or inclemency of weather. He was tall, and remarkable for extraordinary strength. There was in his air and motion something rough and artless, but so majestic and great at the same time, that no man ever looked upon him without veneration, and a kind of tacit submission to the superiority of his genius.

The vigour and activity of his mind sparkled visibly in his eyes; nor was it ever observed, that any change of his fortune, or alteration in his affairs, whether happy or unfortunate, affected his countenance.

He was always cheerful, and desirous of promoting mirth by a facetious and humorous conversation; he was never soured by calumny and detraction, nor ever thought it necessary to confute them; "for they "are sparks," said he, "which, if you do not blow "them, will go out of themselves."

Yet

Yet he took care never to provoke enemies by severity of censure, for he never dwelt on the faults or defects of others, and was so far from inflaming the envy of his rivals by dwelling on his own excellences, that he rarely mentioned himself or his writings.

He was not to be overawed or depressed by the presence, frowns, or insolence of great men, but persisted on all occasions in the right, with a resolution always present and always calm. He was modest, but not timorous, and firm without rudeness.

He could, with uncommon readiness and certainty, make a conjecture of men's inclinations and capacity by their aspect.

His method of life was to study in the morning and evening, and to allot the middle of the day to his publick business. His usual exercise was riding, till, in his latter years, his distempers made it more proper for him to walk: when he was weary, he amused himself with playing on the violin.

His greatest pleasure was to retire to his house in the country, where he had a garden stored with all the herbs and trees which the climate would bear; here he used to enjoy his hours unmolested, and prosecute his studies without interruption.

The diligence with which he pursued his studies, is sufficiently evident from his success. Statesmen and generals may grow great by unexpected accidents, and a fortunate concurrence of circumstances, neither procured nor foreseen by themselves: but reputation in the learned world must be the effect of industry and capacity. Boerhaave lost none of his hours, but, when he had attained one science, attempted another: he added physick to divinity,

chemistry to the mathematicks, and anatomy to botany. He examined systems by experiments, and formed experiments into systems. He neither neglected the observations of others, nor blindly submitted to celebrated names. He neither thought so highly of himself as to imagine he could receive no light from books, nor so meanly as to believe he could discover nothing but what was to be learned from them. He examined the observations of other men, but trusted only to his own.

Nor was he unacquainted with the art of recommending truth by elegance, and embellishing the philosopher with polite literature: he knew that but a small part of mankind will sacrifice their pleasure to their improvement, and those authors who would find many readers, must endeavour to please while they instruct.

He knew the importance of his own writings to mankind, and lest he might by a roughness and barbarity of style, too frequent among men of great learning, disappoint his own intentions, and make his labours less useful, he did not neglect the politer arts of eloquence and poetry. Thus was his learning at once various and exact, profound and agreeable.

But his knowledge, however uncommon, holds, in his character, but the second place; his virtue was yet much more uncommon than his learning. He was an admirable example of temperance, fortitude, humility, and devotion. His piety, and a religious sense of his dependance on God, was the basis of all his virtues, and the principle of his whole conduct. He was too sensible of his weakness to ascribe any thing to himself, or to conceive that he could subdue

passion,

passion, or withstand temptation, by his own natural power; he attributed every good thought, and every laudable action, to the Father of goodness. 'Being once asked by a friend, who had often admired his patience under great provocations, whether he knew what it was to be angry, and by what means he had so entirely suppressed that impetuous and ungovernable passion? he answered, with the utmost frankness and sincerity, that he was naturally quick of resentment, but that he had, by daily prayer and meditation, at length attained to this mastery over himself.

As soon as he rose in the morning, it was, throughout his whole life, his daily practice to retire for an hour to private prayer and meditation; this, he often told his friends, gave him spirit and vigour in the business of the day, and this he therefore commended as the best rule of life; for nothing, he knew, could support the soul in all distresses but a confidence in the Supreme Being, nor can a steady and rational magnanimity flow from any other source than a consciousness of the divine favour.

He asserted on all occasions the divine authority and sacred efficacy of the holy Scriptures; and maintained that they alone taught the way of salvation, and that they only could give peace of mind. The excellency of the Christian religion was the frequent subject of his conversation. A strict obedience to the doctrine, and a diligent imitation of the example of our Blessed Saviour, he often declared to be the foundation of true tranquillity. He recommended to his friends a careful observation of the precept of Moses concerning the love of God and man. He

worshipped

worshipped God as he is in himself, without attempting to enquire into his nature. He desired only to think of God, what God knows of himself. There he stopped, lest, by indulging his own ideas, he should form a Deity from his own imagination, and sin by falling down before him. To the will of God he paid an absolute submission, without endeavouring to discover the reason of his determinations; and this he accounted the first and most inviolable duty of a Christian. When he heard of a criminal condemned to die, he used to think, who can tell whether this man is not better than I? or, if I am better, it is not to be ascribed to myself, but to the goodness of God.

Such were the sentiments of Boerhaave, whose words we have added in the note*. So far was this man from being made impious by philosophy, or vain by knowledge, or by virtue, that he ascribed

* "Doctrinam sacris literis Hebraicè et Græcè traditam, solam animæ salutarem et agnovit et sensit. Omni opportunitate profitebatur disciplinam, quam Jesus Christus ore et vita expressit, unice tranquillitatem dare menti. Semperque dixit amicis, pacem animi haud reperiundam nisi in magno Mosis præcepto de sincero amore Dei et hominis bene observato. Neque extra sacra monumenta uspiam inveniri, quod mentem serenet. Deum pius adoravit, qui est. Intelligere de Deo, unicè volebat id, quod Deus de se intelligit. Eo contentus ultra nihil requisivit, ne idololatria erraret. In voluntate Dei sic requiescebat, ut illius nullam omnino rationem indagandam putaret. Hanc unicè supremam omnium legem esse contendebat; deliberata constantia perfectissimè colendam. De aliis et seipso sentiebat: ut quoties criminis reos ad poenas letales damnatos audiret, semper cogitaret, sæpe diceret; 'Quis dixerat annon me sint meliores? 'Utique, si ipse melior, id non mihi auctori tribuendum esse 'palam aio, confiteor; sed ita largienti Deo." *Orig. Edit.*

all

all his abilities to the bounty, and all his goodness to the grace of God. May his example extend its influence to his admirers and followers! May those who study his writings imitate his life! and those who endeavour after his knowledge aspire likewise to his piety!

He married, September 17, 1710, Mary Drolenveaux, the only daughter of a burgo-master of Leyden, by whom he had Joanna Maria, who survives her father, and three other children who died in their infancy.

The works of this great writer are so generally known, and so highly esteemed, that, though it may not be improper to enumerate them in the order of time in which they were published, it is wholly unnecessary to give any other account of them.

He published in 1707, "Institutiones Medicæ," to which he added in 1708, "Aphorismi de cognoscendis et curandis morbis."

1710, "Index stirpium in horto academico."

1719, "De materia medica, et remediorum formulis liber;" and in 1727 a second edition.

1720, "Alter index stirpium," &c. adorned with plates, and containing twice the number of plants as the former.

1722, "Epistola ad cl. Ruischium, quâ sententiam Malpighianam de glandulis defendit."

1724, "Atrocis nec prius descripti morbi historia illustrissimi baronis Wassenariæ."

1725, "Opera anatomica et chirurgica Andreæ Vesalii," with the life of Vesalius.

1728, "Altera atrocis rarissimique morbi marchionis de Sancto Albano historia."

"Auctores

" Auctores de lue Aphrodisiaca, cum tractatu " præfixo."

1731, " Aretaei Cappadocis nova editio."

1732, " Elementa Chemiæ."

1734, " Observata de argento vivo, ad Reg. Soc. " et Acad. Scient."

These are the writings of the great Boerhaave, which have made all encomiums useless and vain, since no man can attentively peruse them without admiring the abilities, and reverencing the virtue of the author *.

* Gent. Mag. 1739, Vol. IX. p. 176. N.

BLAKE.

AT a time when a nation is engaged in a war with an enemy, whose insults, ravages, and barbarities, have long called for vengeance, an account of such English commanders as have merited the acknowledgments of posterity, by extending the powers and raising the honour of their country, seems to be no improper entertainment for our readers *. We shall therefore attempt a succinct narration of the life and actions of admiral Blake, in which we have nothing farther in view than to do justice to his bravery and conduct, without intending any parallel between his atchievements and those of our present admirals.

ROBERT BLAKE was born at Bridgewater, in Somersetshire, in August 1598, his father being a merchant of that place, who had acquired a considerable fortune by the Spanish trade. Of his earliest years we have no account, and therefore can amuse the reader with none of those prognosticks of his future actions, so often met with in memoirs.

In 1615 he entered into the university of Oxford, where he continued till 1623, though without being much countenanced or caressed by his superiors, for

* This Life was first printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for the year 1740. N.

he

he was more than once disappointed in his endeavours after academical preferments. It is observable that Mr. Wood (in his Athenæ Oxonienses) ascribes the repulse he met with at Wadham College, where he was competitor for a fellowship, either to want of learning, or of stature. With regard to the first objection, the same writer had before informed us, that he was an *early riser* and *studious*, though he sometimes relieved his attention by the amusements of fowling and fishing. As it is highly probable that he did not want capacity, we may therefore conclude, upon this confession of his diligence, that he could not fail of being learned, at least in the degree requisite to the enjoyment of a fellowship; and may safely ascribe his disappointment to his want of stature, it being the custom of Sir Henry Savil, then warden of that college, to pay much regard to the outward appearance of those who solicited preferment in that society. So much do the greatest events owe sometimes to accident or folly!

He afterwards retired to his native place where "he lived," says Clarendon, "without any appear-"ance of ambition to be a greater man than he was, "but inveighed with great freedom against the li-"cence of the times, and power of the court."

In 1640 he was chosen burgess for Bridgewater by the Puritan party, to whom he had recommended himself by the disapprobation of bishop Laud's violence and severity, and his non-compliance with those new ceremonies which he was then endeavouring to introduce.

When the civil war broke out, Blake, in conformity with his avowed principles, declared for the parliament;

liament; and, thinking a bare declaration for right not all the duty of a good man, raised a troop of dragoons for his party, and appeared in the field with so much bravery, that he was in a short time advanced, without meeting any of those obstructions which he had encountered in the university.

In 1645 he was governor of Taunton, when the Lord Goring came before it with an army of 10,000 men. The town was ill fortified, and unsupplied with almost every thing necessary for supporting a siege. The state of this garrison encouraged Colonel Windham, who was acquainted with Blake, to propose a capitulation; which was rejected by Blake with indignation and contempt: nor were either menaces or persuasions of any effect, for he maintained the place under all its disadvantages, till the siege was raised by the parliament's army.

He continued, on many other occasions, to give proofs of an insuperable courage, and a steadiness of resolution not to be shaken; and, as a proof of his firm adherence to the parliament, joined with the borough of Taunton in returning thanks for their resolution to make no more addresses to the king. Yet was he so far from approving the death of Charles I. that he made no scruple of declaring, that he would venture his life to save him, as willingly as he had done to serve the parliament.

In February 1648-9, he was made a commissioner of the navy, and appointed to serve on that element, for which he seems by nature to have been designed. He was soon afterwards sent in pursuit of prince Rupert, whom he shut up in the harbour of Kingsale in Ireland for several months, till want of provisions

and

and despair of relief, excited the prince to make a daring effort for his escape, by forcing through the parliament's fleet: this design he executed with his usual intrepidity, and succeeded in it, though with the loss of three ships. He was pursued by Blake to the coast of Portugal, where he was received into the Tagus, and treated with great distinction by the Portuguese.

Blake, coming to the mouth of that river, sent to the king a messenger, to inform him, that the fleet in his port belonging to the public enemies of the commonwealth of England, he demanded leave to fall upon it. This being refused, though the refusal was in very soft terms, and accompanied with declarations of esteem, and a present of provisions, so exasperated the admiral, that, without any hesitation, he fell upon the Portuguese fleet, then returning from Brasil, of which he took seventeen ships, and burnt three. It was to no purpose that the king of Portugal, alarmed at so unexpected a destruction, ordered prince Rupert to attack him, and retake the Brasil ships. Blake carried home his prizes without molestation, the prince not having force enough to pursue him, and well pleased with the opportunity of quitting a port where he could no longer be protected.

Blake soon supplied his fleet with provision, and received orders to make reprisals upon the French who had suffered their privateers to molest the English trade; an injury which, in those days, was always immediately resented, and if not repaired, certainly punished. Sailing with this commission, he took in his way a French man of war valued at

a mil-

a million. How this ship happened to be so rich, we are not informed; but as it was a cruiser, it is probable the rich lading was the accumulated plunder of many prizes. Then following the unfortunate Rupert, whose fleet by storms and battles was now reduced to five ships, into Carthagena, he demanded leave of the Spanish governor to attack him in the harbour, but received the same answer which had been returned before by the Portuguese: "That they had a right to protect all ships that "came into their dominions; that if the admiral "were forced in thither, he should find the same se-"curity; and that he required him not to violate the "peace of a neutral port." Blake withdrew upon this answer into the Mediterranean; and Rupert then leaving Carthagena entered the port of Malaga, where he burnt and sunk several English merchant ships. Blake, judging this to be an infringement of the neutrality professed by the Spaniards, now made no scruple to fall upon Rupert's fleet in the harbour of Malaga, and having destroyed three of his ships, obliged him to quit the sea, and take sanctuary at the Spanish court.

In February 1650-1, Blake still continuing to cruise in the Mediterranean, met a French ship of considerable force, and commanded the captain to come on board, there being no war declared between the two nations. The captain when he came, was asked by him, whether "he was willing to lay down "his sword, and yield?" which he gallantly refused, though in his enemy's power. Blake, scorning to take advantage of an artifice, and detesting the appearance of treachery, told him, "that he was at "liberty

"liberty to go back to his ship, and defend it as "long as he could." The captain willingly accepted his offer, and after a fight of two hours confessed himself conquered, kissed his sword, and surrendered it.

In 1652 broke out the memorable war between the two commonwealths of England and Holland; a war, in which the greatest admirals, that perhaps any age has produced, were engaged on each side, in which nothing less was contested than the dominion of the sea, and which was carried on with vigour, animosity, and resolution, proportioned to the importance of the dispute. The chief commanders of the Dutch fleets were Van Trump, De Ruyter, and De Witt, the most celebrated names of their own nation, and who had been perhaps more renowned, had they been opposed by any other enemies. The States of Holland, having carried on their trade without opposition, and almost without competition, not only during the unactive reign of James I. but during the commotions of England, had arrived to that height of naval power, and that affluence of wealth, that, with the arrogance which a long continued prosperity naturally produces, they began to invent new claims, and to treat other nations with insolence, which nothing can defend but superiority of force. They had for some time made uncommon preparations at a vast expence, and had equipped a large fleet, without any apparent danger threatening them, or any avowed design of attacking their neighbours. This unusual armament was not beheld by the English without some jealousy, and care was taken to fit out such a fleet as might secure the trade

trade from interruption, and the coasts from insults; of this Blake was constituted admiral for nine months. In this situation the two nations remained, keeping a watchful eye upon each other, without acting hostilities on either side, till the 18th of May 1652, when Van Trump appeared in the Downs with a fleet of forty-five men of War. Blake, who had then but twenty ships, upon the approach of the Dutch admiral saluted him with three single shots, to require that he should, by striking his flag, shew that respect to the English, which is due to every nation in their own dominions; to which the Dutchman answered with a broadside; and Blake, perceiving that he intended to dispute the point of honour, advanced with his own ship before the rest of his fleet, that, if it were possible, a general battle might be prevented. But the Dutch, instead of admitting him to treat, fired upon him from their whole fleet, without any regard to the customs of war, or the law of nations. Blake for some time stood alone against their whole force, till the rest of his squadron coming up, the fight was continued from between four and five in the afternoon till nine at night, when the Dutch retired with the loss of two ships, having not destroyed a single vessel, nor more than fifteen men, most of which were on board the admiral, who, as he wrote to the parliament, was himself engaged for four hours with the main body of the Dutch fleet, being the mark at which they aimed; and, as Whitlock relates, received above a thousand shot. Blake, in his letter, acknowledges the particular blessing and preservation of God, and ascribes his success to the justice of the cause, the Dutch having first attacked

him

him upon the English coast. It is indeed little less than miraculous that a thousand great shot should not do more execution; and those who will not admit the interposition of Providence, may draw at least this inference from it, that *the bravest man is not always in the greatest danger.*

In July he met the Dutch fishery fleet with a convoy of twelve men of war, all which he took, with 100 of their herring-busses. And in September, being stationed in the Downs with about sixty sail, he discovered the Dutch admirals De Witt and De Ruyter with near the same number, and advanced towards them; but the Dutch being obliged, by the nature of their coast, and shallowness of their rivers, to build their ships in such a manner that they require less depth of water than the English vessels, took advantage of the form of their shipping, and sheltered themselves behind a flat, called *Kentish Knock;* so that the English, finding some of their ships aground, were obliged to alter their course; but perceiving early the next morning that the Hollanders had forsaken their station, they pursued them with all the speed that the wind, which was weak and uncertain, allowed, but found themselves unable to reach them with the bulk of their fleet, and therefore detached some of the lightest frigates to chace them. These came so near as to fire upon them about three in the afternoon; but the Dutch, instead of tacking about, hoisted their sails, steered toward their own coast, and finding themselves the next day followed by the whole English fleet, retired into Goree. The sailors were eager to attack them in their own harbours; but a council of war being convened, it was judged imprudent

dent to hazard the fleet upon the shoals, or to engage in any important enterprize without a fresh supply of provisions.

That in this engagement the victory belonged to the English is beyond dispute, since, without the loss of one ship, and with no more than forty men killed they drove the enemy into their own ports, took the rear admiral and another vessel, and so discouraged the Dutch admirals, who had not agreed in their measures, that De Ruyter, who had declared against hazarding a battle, desired to resign his commission, and De Witt, who had insisted upon fighting, fell sick, as it was supposed, with vexation. But how great the loss of the Dutch was, is not certainly known; that two ships were taken they are too wise to deny, but affirm that those two were all that were destroyed. The English, on the other side, affirm that three of their vessels were disabled at the first encounter, that their numbers on the second day were visibly diminished, and that on the last day they saw three or four ships sink in their flight.

De Witt being now discharged by the Hollanders as unfortunate, and the chief command restored to Van Trump, great preparations were made for retrieving their reputation, and repairing their losses. Their endeavours were assisted by the English themselves, now made factious by success; the men who were intrusted with the civil administration being jealous of those whose military commands had procured so much honour, lest they who raised them should be eclipsed by them. Such is the general revolution of affairs in every state; danger and distress produce

unanimity and bravery, virtues which are seldom unattended with success; but success is the parent of pride, and pride of jealousy and faction; faction makes way for calamity, and happy is that nation whose calamities renew their unanimity. Such is the rotation of interests, that equally tend to hinder the total destruction of a people, and to obstruct an exorbitant increase of power.

Blake had weakened his fleet by many detachments, and lay with no more than forty sail in the Downs, very ill provided both with men and ammunition, and expecting new supplies from those whose animosity hindered them from providing them, and who chose rather to see the trade of their country distressed, than the sea-officers exalted by a new acquisition of honour and influence.

Van Trump, desirous of distinguishing himself at the resumption of his command by some remarkable action, had assembled eighty ships of war, and ten fireships, and steered towards the Downs, where Blake, with whose condition and strength he was probably acquainted, was then stationed. Blake, not able to restrain his natural ardour, or perhaps not fully informed of the superiority of his enemies, put out to encounter them, though his fleet was so weakly manned, that half of his ships were obliged to lie idle without engaging, for want of sailors. The force of the whole Dutch fleet was therefore sustained by about twenty-two ships. Two of the English frigates, named the Vanguard and the Victory, after having for a long time stood engaged amidst the whole Dutch fleet, broke through without much injury, nor did the English lose any ships

till

till the evening, when the Garland, carrying forty guns, was boarded at once by two great ships, which were opposed by the English till they had scarcely any men left to defend the decks; then retiring into the lower part of the vessel, they blew up their decks, which were now possessed by the enemy, and at length were overpowered and taken. The Bonaventure, a stout well-built merchant-ship, going to relieve the Garland, was attacked by a man of war, and, after a stout resistance, in which the captain, who defended her with the utmost bravery, was killed, was likewise carried off by the Dutch. Blake, in the Triumph, seeing the Garland in distress, pressed forward to relieve her, but in his way had his foremast shattered, and was himself boarded; but beating off the enemies, he disengaged himself, and retired into the Thames with the loss only of two ships of force, and four small frigates, but with his whole fleet much shattered. Nor was the victory gained at a cheap rate, notwithstanding the unusual disproportion of strength; for of the Dutch flag-ships one was blown up, and the other two disabled; a proof of the English bravery, which should have induced Van Trump to have spared the insolence of carrying a broom at his top-mast in his triumphant passage through the channel, which he intended as a declaration that he would sweep the seas of the English shipping; this, which he had little reason to think of accomplishing, he soon after perished in attempting.

There are sometimes observations and enquiries, which all historians seem to decline by agreement, of which this action may afford us an example: nothing

appears at the first view more to demand our curiosity, or afford matter for examination, than this wild encounter of twenty-two ships with a force, according to their accounts who favour the Dutch, three times superior. Nothing can justify a commander in fighting under such disadvantages, but the impossibility of retreating. But what hindered Blake from retiring as well before the fight as after it? To say he was ignorant of the strength of the Dutch fleet, is to impute to him a very criminal degree of negligence; and, at least, it must be confessed that, from the time he saw them, he could not but know that they were too powerful to be opposed by him, and even then there was time for retreat. To urge the ardour of his sailors, is to divest him of the authority of a commander, and to charge him with the most reproachful weakness that can enter into the character of a general. To mention the impetuosity of his own courage, is to make the blame of his temerity equal to the praise of his valour; which seems indeed to be the most gentle censure that the truth of history will allow. We must then admit, amidst our eulogies and applauses, that the great, the wise, and the valiant Blake was once betrayed to an inconsiderate and desperate enterprize, by the resistless ardour of his own spirit, and a noble jealousy of the honour of his country.

It was not long before he had an opportunity of revenging his loss, and restraining the insolence of the Dutch. On the 18th of February 1652-3, Blake being at the head of eighty sail, and assisted, at his own request, by colonels Monk and Dean, espied Van Trump with a fleet of above 100 men of war

as

as Clarendon relates, of 70 by their own publick accounts, and 300 merchant-ships under his convoy. The English, with their usual intrepidity, advanced towards them; and Blake in the Triumph, in which he always led his fleet, with twelve ships more, came to an engagement with the main body of the Dutch fleet, and by the disparity of their force was reduced to the last extremity, having received in his hull no fewer than 700 shots, when Lawson in the Fairfax came to his assistance. The rest of the English fleet now came in, and the fight was continued with the utmost degree of vigour and resolution, till the night gave the Dutch an opportunity of retiring, with the loss of one flag-ship, and six other men of war. The English had many vessels damaged, but none lost. On board Lawson's ship were killed 100 men, and as many on board Blake's, who lost his captain and secretary, and himself received a wound in the thigh.

Blake, having set ashore his wounded men, sailed in pursuit of Van Trump, who sent his convoy before, and himself retired fighting towards Bulloign. Blake ordered his light frigates to follow the merchants, still continued to harass Van Trump, and on the third day, the 20th of February, the two fleets came to another battle, in which Van Trump once more retired before the English, and making use of the peculiar form of his shipping, secured himself in the shoals. The accounts of this fight, as of all the others, are various; but the Dutch writers themselves confess that they lost eight men of war, and more than twenty merchant-ships; and it is probable that they suffered much more than they

they are willing to allow, for these repeated defeats provoked the common people to riots and insurrections, and obliged the States to ask, though ineffectually, for peace.

In April following, the form of government in England was changed, and the supreme authority assumed by Cromwell; upon which occasion Blake, with his associates, declared that, notwithstanding the change in the administration, they should still be ready to discharge their trust, and to defend the nation from insults, injuries, and encroachments. "It "is not," says Blake, "the business of a seaman to "mind state affairs, but to hinder foreigners from "fooling us." This was the principle from which he never deviated, and which he always endeavoured to inculcate in the fleet, as the surest foundation of unanimity and steadiness. "Disturb not "one another with domestic disputes, but remember "that we are English, and our enemies are foreigners. "Enemies! which, let what party soever prevail, it "is equally the interest of our country to humble "and restrain."

After the 30th of April 1653, Blake, Monk, and Dean, sailed out of the English harbours with 100 men of war, and, finding the Dutch with seventy sail on their own coasts, drove them to the Texel, and took fifty doggers. Then they sailed northward in pursuit of Van Trump, who, having a fleet of merchants under his convoy, durst not enter the channel, but steered towards the Sound, and, by great dexterity and address, escaped the three English admirals, and brought all his ships into their harbour; then,

knowing

knowing that Blake was still in the North, came before Dover, and fired upon that town, but was driven off by the castle.

Monk and Dean stationed themselves again at the mouth of the Texel, and blocked up the Dutch in their own ports with eighty sail; but hearing that Van Trump was at Goree with 120 men of war, they ordered all ships of force in the river and ports to repair to them.

On June 3d, the two fleets came to an engagement, in the beginning of which Dean was carried off by a cannon ball; yet the fight continued from about twelve to six in the afternoon, when the Dutch gave way, and retreated fighting.

On the 4th, in the afternoon, Blake came up with eighteen fresh ships, and procured the English a complete victory; nor could the Dutch any otherwise preserve their ships than by retiring once more into the flats and shallows, where the largest of the English vessels could not approach.

In this battle Van Trump boarded vice-admiral Pen; but was beaten off, and himself boarded, and reduced to blow up his decks, of which the English had gotten possession. He was then entered at once by Pen and another; nor could possibly have escaped, had not De Ruyter and De Witt arrived at that instant and rescued him.

However the Dutch may endeavour to extenuate their loss in this battle, by admitting no more than eight ships to have been taken or destroyed, it is evident that they must have received much greater damages, not only by the accounts of more impartial historians, but by the remonstrances and exclamations

of

of their admirals themselves; Van Trump declaring before the States, that "without a numerous reinforcement of large men of war, he could serve them no more;" and De Witt crying out before them, with the natural warmth of his character, "Why should I be silent before my lords and masters? The English are our masters, and by consequence masters of the sea."

In November 1654, Blake was sent by Cromwell into the Mediterranean with a powerful fleet, and may be said to have received the homage of all that part of the world, being equally courted by the haughty Spaniards, the surly Dutch, and the lawless Algerines.

In March 1656, having forced Algiers to submission, he entered the harbour of Tunis, and demanded reparation for the robberies practised upon the English by the pirates of that place, and insisted that the captives of his nation should be set at liberty. The governor having planted batteries along the shore, and drawn up his ships under the castles, sent Blake an haughty and insolent answer, "There are "our castles of Goletta, and Porto Ferino," said he, "upon which you may do your worst;" adding other menaces and insults, and mentioning in terms of ridicule the inequality of a fight between ships and castles. Blake had likewise demanded leave to take in water, which was refused him. Fired with this inhuman and insolent treatment, he curled his whiskers, as was his custom when he was angry, and, entering Porto Ferino with his great ships, discharged his shot so fast upon the batteries and castles, that in two hours the guns were dismounted, and the works forsaken,

saken, though he was at first exposed to the fire of sixty cannon. He then ordered his officers to send out their long boats well manned to seize nine of the piratical ships lying in the road, himself continuing to fire upon the castle. This was so bravely executed, that with the loss of only twenty-five men killed, and forty-eight wounded, all the ships were fired in the sight of Tunis. Thence sailing to Tripoly, he concluded a peace with that nation; then returning to Tunis, he found nothing but submission. And such indeed was his reputation, that he met with no farther opposition, but collected a kind of tribute from the princes of those countries, his business being to demand reparation for all the injuries offered to the English during the civil wars. He exacted from the duke of Tuscany 60,000*l.* and, as it is said, sent home sixteen ships laden with the effects, which he had received from several states.

The respect with which he obliged all foreigners to treat his countrymen, appears from a story related by bishop Burnet. When he lay before Malaga, in a time of peace with Spain, some of his sailors went ashore, and meeting a procession of the host, not only refused to pay any respect to it, but laughed at those that did. The people, being put by one of the priests upon resenting this indignity, fell upon them and beat them severely. When they returned to their ship, they complained of their ill treatment; upon which Blake sent to demand the priest who had procured it. The viceroy answered that, having no authority over the priests, he could not send him: to which Blake replied, "that he did not enquire into "the extent of the viceroy's authority, but that if "the

"the priest were not sent within three hours, he "would burn the town." The viceroy then sent the priest to him, who pleaded the provocation given by the seamen. Blake bravely and rationally answered, that if he had complained to him, he would have punished them severely, for he would not have his men affront the established religion of any place; but that he was angry that the Spaniards should assume that power, for he would have all the world know "that an Englishman was only to be punished "by an Englishman." So having used the priest civilly, he sent him back, being satisfied that he was in his power. This conduct so much pleased Cromwell, that he read the letter in council with great satisfaction, and said, "he hoped to make the name "of an Englishman as great as ever that of a Roman "had been."

In 1656, the Protector, having declared war against Spain, dispatched Blake with twenty-five men of war to infest their coasts, and intercept their shipping. In pursuance of these orders he cruised all winter about the Streights, and then lay at the mouth of the harbour of Cales, where he received intelligence that the Spanish plate-fleet lay at anchor in the bay of Santa-Cruz, in the isle of Teneriffe. On the 13th of April 1657, he departed from Cales, and on the 20th arrived at Santa-Cruz, where he found sixteen Spanish vessels. The bay was defended on the north side by a castle well mounted with cannon, and in other parts with seven forts with cannon proportioned to the bigness, all united by a line of communication manned with musqueteers. The Spanish admiral drew up his small ships under the cannon

of

of the castle, and stationed six great galleons with their broadsides to the sea: an advantageous and prudent disposition, but of little effect against the English commander; who determining to attack them, ordered Stayner to enter the bay with his squadron; then, posting some of his larger ships to play upon the fortifications, himself attacked the galleons, which, after a gallant resistance, were at length abandoned by the Spaniards, though the least of them was bigger than the biggest of Blake's ships. The forts and smaller vessels being now shattered and forsaken, the whole fleet was set on fire, the galleons by Blake, and the smaller vessels by Stayner, the English vessels being too much shattered in the fight to bring them away. Thus was the whole plate-fleet destroyed, "and the Spaniards," according to Rapin's remark, "sustained a great loss of ships, money, men, and merchandize, while the English "gained nothing but glory." As if he that increases the military reputation of a people did not increase their power, and he that weakens his enemy in effect strengthens himself.

"The whole action," says Clarendon, "was so "incredible, that all men, who knew the place, wondered that any sober man, with what courage soever endowed, would ever have undertaken it, and "they could hardly persuade themselves to believe what they had done: while the Spaniards "comforted themselves with the belief, that they "were devils and not men who had destroyed them "in such a manner. So much a strong resolution of "bold and courageous men can bring to pass, that "no resistance or advantage of ground can disappoint

"point them; and it can hardly be imagined "how small a loss the English sustained in this "unparalleled action, not one ship being left be- "hind, and the killed and wounded not exceeding "200 men; when the slaughter on board the Spa- "nish ships and on shore was incredible." The general cruised for some time afterwards with his victorious fleet at the mouth of Cales, to intercept the Spanish shipping; but finding his constitution broken by the fatigue of the last three years, determined to return home, and died before he came to land.

His body was embalmed, and having lain some time in state at Greenwich-house, was buried in Henry VII's chapel, with all the funeral solemnity due to the remains of a man so famed for his bravery, and so spotless in his integrity; nor is it without regret that I am obliged to relate the treatment his body met a year after the Restoration, when it was taken up by express command, and buried in a pit in St. Margaret's church-yard. Had he been guilty of the murder of Charles I. to insult his body had been a mean revenge; but as he was innocent, it was, at least, inhumanity, and, perhaps, ingratitude. "Let no man," says the oriental proverb, "pull a dead lion by the beard."

But that regard which was denied his body has been paid to his better remains, his name and his memory. Nor has any writer dared to deny him the praise of intrepidity, honesty, contempt of wealth, and love of his country. "He was the first man," says Clarendon, "that declined the old track, and "made it apparent that the sciences might be at- "tained

" tained in less time than was imagined. He was
" the first man that brought ships to contemn castles
" on shore, which had ever been thought very
" formidable, but were discovered by him to make
" a noise only, and to fright those who could rarely
" be hurt by them. He was the first that infused
" that proportion of courage into seamen, by mak-
" ing them see, by experience, what mighty things
" they could do if they were resolved, and taught
" them to fight in fire, as well as upon the water; and
" though he has been very well imitated and follow-
" ed, was the first that gave the example of that
" kind of naval courage, and bold and resolute
" atchievements."

To this attestation of his military excellence, it may be proper to subjoin an account of his moral character from the author of *Lives English and Foreign*. " He was jealous," says that writer, " of
" the liberty of the subject, and the glory of his
" nation; and as he made use of no mean artifices
" to raise himself to the highest command at sea, so
" he needed no interest but his merit to support him
" in it. He scorned nothing more than money,
" which, as fast as it came in, was laid out by him
" in the service of the state, and to shew that he
" was animated by that brave public spirit, which
" has since been reckoned rather romantick than
" heroick. And he was so disinterested, that though
" no man had more opportunities to enrich him-
" self than he, who had taken so many millions
" from the enemies of England, yet he threw it all
" into the publick treasury, and did not die 500*l.*
" richer than his father left him; which the author

" avers

" avers from his personal knowledge of his family " and their circumstances, having been bred up in " it, and often heard his brother give this account " of him. He was religious according to the pre- " tended purity of these times, but would frequently " allow himself to be merry with his officers, and by " his tenderness and generosity to the seamen had " so endeared himself to them, that when he died " they lamented his loss as that of a common " father."

Instead of more testimonies, his character may be properly concluded with one incident of his life, by which it appears how much the spirit of Blake was superior to all private views. His brother, in the last action with the Spaniards, having not done his duty, was at Blake's desire discarded, and the ship was given to another; yet was he not less regardful of him as a brother, for when he died he left him his estate, knowing him well qualified to adorn or enjoy a private fortune, though he had found him unfit to serve his country in a public character, and had therefore not suffered him to rob it.

SIR FRANCIS DRAKE *.

FRANCIS DRAKE was the son of a clergyman in Devonshire, who being inclined to the doctrine of the Protestants, at that time much opposed by Henry VIII. was obliged to fly from his place of residence into Kent for refuge, from the persecution raised against him, and those of the same opinion, by the law of the six articles.

How long he lived there, or how he was supported, was not known; nor have we any account of the first years of Sir Francis Drake's life, of any disposition to hazards and adventures which might have been discovered in his childhood, or of the education which qualified him for such wonderful attempts.

We are only informed, that he was put apprentice by his father to the master of a small vessel that traded to France and the Low Countries, under whom he probably learned the rudiments of navigation, and familiarised himself to the dangers and hardships of the sea.

But how few opportunities soever he might have in this part of his life for the exercise of his courage,

* This Life was first printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for 1740. N.

he

he gave so many proofs of diligence and fidelity, that his master dying unmarried left him his little vessel in reward of his services; a circumstance that deserves to be remembered, not only as it may illustrate the private character of this brave man, but as it may hint, to all those who may hereafter propose his conduct for their imitation, that Virtue is the surest foundation both of reputation and fortune, and that the first step to greatness is to be honest.

If it were not improper to dwell longer on an incident at the first view so inconsiderable, it might be added, that it deserves the reflection of those, who, when they are engaged in affairs not adequate to their abilities, pass them over with a contemptuous neglect, and while they amuse themselves with chimerical schemes, and plans of future undertakings, suffer every opportunity of smaller advantage to slip away as unworthy their regard. They may learn from the example of Drake, that diligence in employments of less consequence is the most successful introduction to greater enterprizes.

After having followed for some time his master's profession, he grew weary of so narrow a province, and, having sold his little vessel, ventured his effects in the new trade to the West-Indies, which, having not been long discovered, and very little frequented by the English till that time, were conceived so much to abound in wealth, that no voyage thither could fail of being recompensed by great advantages. Nothing was talked of among the mercantile or adventurous part of mankind, but the beauty and riches of the new world. Fresh discoveries were frequently made,

made, new countries and nations never heard of before were daily described, and it may easily be concluded that the relaters did not diminish the merit of their attempts, by suppressing or diminishing any circumstance that might produce wonder, or excite curiosity. Nor was their vanity only engaged in raising admirers, but their interest likewise in procuring adventurers, who were indeed easily gained by the hopes which naturally arise from new prospects, though through ignorance of the American seas, and by the malice of the Spaniards, who from the first discovery of those countries considered every other nation that attempted to follow them as invaders of their rights, the best concerted designs often miscarried.

Among those who suffered most from the Spanish injustice, was Captain John Hawkins, who, having been admitted by the viceroy to traffick in the bay of Mexico, was, contrary to the stipulation then made between them, and in violation of the peace between Spain and England, attacked without any declaration of hostilities, and obliged, after an obstinate resistance, to retire with the loss of four ships, and a great number of his men, who were either destroyed or carried into slavery.

In this voyage Drake had adventured almost all his fortune, which he in vain endeavoured to recover, both by his own private interest, and by obtaining letters from Queen Elizabeth; for the Spaniards, deaf to all remonstrances, either vindicated the injustice of the viceroy, or at least forbore to redress it.

Drake, thus oppressed and impoverished, retained at least his courage and his industry, that ardent spirit that prompted him to adventures, and that indefati-

gable patience that enabled him to surmount difficulties. He did not sit down idly to lament misfortunes which Heaven had put it in his power to remedy, or to repine at poverty while the wealth of his enemies was to be gained. But having made two voyages to America for the sake of gaining intelligence of the state of the Spanish settlements, and acquainted himself with the seas and coasts, he determined on a third expedition of more importance, by which the Spaniards should find how imprudently they always act who injure and insult a brave man.

On the 24th of May 1572, Francis Drake set sail from Plymouth in the Pascha of seventy tons, accompanied by the Swan of twenty-five tons, commanded by his brother John Drake, having in both the vessels seventy-three men and boys, with a year's provision, and such artillery and ammunition as was necessary for his undertaking, which, however incredible it may appear to such as consider rather his force than his fortitude, was no less than to make reprisals upon the most powerful nation in the world.

The wind continuing favourable, they entered June 29, between Guadalupe and Dominica, and on July 6th saw the highland of Santa Martha; then continuing their course, after having been becalmed for some time, they arrived at Port Pheasant, so named by Drake in a former voyage to the East of Nombre de Dios. Here he proposed to build his pinnaces, which he had brought in pieces ready framed from Plymouth, and was going ashore with a few men unarmed, but, discovering a smoke at a distance, ordered the other boat to follow him with a greater force.

Then

Then marching towards the fire, which was in the top of a high tree, he found a plate of lead nailed to another tree, with an inscription engraved upon it by one Garret an Englishman, who had left that place but five days before, and had taken this method of informing him that the Spaniards had been advertised of his intention to anchor at that place, and that it therefore would be prudent to make a very short stay there.

But Drake knowing how convenient this place was for his designs, and considering that the hazard and waste of time which could not be avoided in seeking another station, was equivalent to any other danger which was to be apprehended from the Spaniards, determined to follow his first resolution; only, for his greater security, he ordered a kind of palisade, or fortification, to be made, by felling large trees, and laying the trunks and branches one upon another by the side of the river.

On July 20, having built their pinnaces, and being joined by one Capt. Rause, who happened to touch at the same place with a bark of fifty men, they set sail towards Nombre de Dios, and, taking two frigates at the island of Pines, were informed by the Negroes which they found in them, that the inhabitants of that place were in expectation of some soldiers, which the governor of Panama had promised to defend them from the Symerons, or fugitive Negroes, who, having escaped from the tyranny of their masters in great numbers, had settled themselves under two kings, or leaders, on each side of the way between Nombre de Dios and Panama, and not only

asserted their natural right to liberty and independence, but endeavoured to revenge the cruelties they had suffered, and had lately put the inhabitants of Nombre de Dios into the utmost consternation.

These Negroes the captain set on shore on the main land, so that they might, by joining the Symerons, recover their liberty, or at least might not have it in their power to give the people of Nombre de Dios any speedy information of his intention to invade them.

Then selecting fifty-three men from his own company, and twenty from the crew of his new associate captain Rause, he embarked with them in his pinnaces, and set sail for Nombre de Dios.

On July the 28th, at night, he approached the town undiscovered, and dropt his anchors under the shore, intending, after his men were refreshed, to begin the attack; but finding that they were terrifying each other with formidable accounts of the strength of the place, and the multitude of the inhabitants, he determined to hinder the panick from spreading farther, by leading them immediately to action; and therefore ordering them to their oars, he landed without any opposition, there being only one gunner upon the bay, though it was secured with six brass cannons of the largest size ready-mounted. But the gunner, while they were throwing the cannons from their carriages, alarmed the town, as they soon discovered by the bell, the drums, and the noise of the people.

Drake, leaving twelve men to guard the pinnaces, marched round the town with no great opposition, the

the men being more hurt by treading on the weapons left on the ground by the flying enemy, than by the resistance which they encountered.

At length having taken some of the Spaniards, Drake commanded them to shew him the governor's house, where the mules that bring the silver from Panama were unloaded; there they found the door open, and entering the room where the silver was repositied, found it heaped up in bars in such quantities as almost exceed belief, the pile being, they conjectured, seventy feet in length, ten in breadth, and twelve in height, each bar weighing between thirty and forty-five pounds.

It is easy to imagine that, at the sight of this treasure, nothing was thought on by the English, but by what means they might best convey it to their boats; and doubtless it was not easy for Drake, who, considering their distance from the shore, and the numbers of their enemies, was afraid of being intercepted in his retreat, to hinder his men from encumbering themselves with so much silver as might have retarded their march, and obstructed the use of their weapons; however, by promising to lead them to the king's treasure-house, where there was gold and jewels to a far greater value, and where the treasure was not only more portable, but nearer the coast, he persuaded them to follow him, and rejoin the main body of his men then drawn up under the command of his brother in the market-place.

Here he found his little troop much discouraged by the imagination, that if they stayed any longer the enemy would gain possession of their pinnaces, and that they should then, without any means of safety,

safety, be left to stand alone against the whole power of that country. Drake, not indeed easily terrified, but sufficiently cautious, sent to the coast to enquire the truth, and see if the same terror had taken possession of the men whom he had left to guard his boats; but, finding no foundation for these dreadful apprehensions, he persisted in his first design, and led the troop forward to the treasure-house. In their way there fell a violent shower of rain, which wet some of their bow-strings, and extinguished many of their matches; a misfortune which might soon have been repaired, and which perhaps the enemy might suffer in common with them, but which however on this occasion very much embarrassed them, as the delay produced by it repressed that ardour which sometimes is only to be kept up by continued action, and gave time to the timorous and slothful to spread their insinuations, and propagate their cowardice. Some, whose fear was their predominant passion, were continually magnifying the numbers and courage of their enemies, and represented whole nations as ready to rush upon them; others, whose avarice mingled with their concern for their own safety, were more solicitous to preserve what they had already gained, than to acquire more; and others, brave in themselves, and resolute, began to doubt of success in an undertaking in which they were associated with such cowardly companions. So that scarcely any man appeared to proceed in their enterprize with that spirit and alacrity which could give Drake a prospect of success.

This he perceived, and with some emotion told them, that if, after having had the chief treasure of the

the world within their reach, they should go home and languish in poverty, they could blame nothing but their own cowardice; that he had performed his part, and was still desirous to lead them on to riches and to honour.

Then finding that either shame or conviction made them willing to follow him, he ordered the treasure-house to be forced, and commanding his brother, and Oxenham of Plymouth, a man known afterwards for his bold adventures in the same parts, to take charge of the treasure, he commanded the other body to follow him to the market-place, that he might be ready to oppose any scattered troops of the Spaniards, and hinder them from uniting into one body.

But as he stepped forward, his strength failed him on a sudden, and he fell down speechless. Then it was that his companions perceived a wound in his leg, which he had received in the first encounter, but hitherto concealed, lest his men, easily discouraged, should make their concern for his life a pretence for returning to their boats. Such had been his loss of blood, as was discovered upon nearer observation, that it had filled the prints of his footsteps, and it appeared scarce credible that after such effusion of blood, life should remain.

The bravest were now willing to retire: neither the desire of honour nor of riches was thought enough to prevail in any man over his regard for his leader. Drake, whom cordials had now restored to his speech, was the only man who could not be prevailed on to leave the enterprize unfinished. It

was to no purpose that they advised him to submit to go on board to have his wound dressed, and promised to return with him and complete their design; he well knew how impracticable it was to regain the opportunity when it was once lost, and could easily foresee that a respite, but of a few hours, would enable the Spaniards to recover from their consternation, to assemble their forces, refit their batteries, and remove their treasure. What he had undergone so much danger to obtain was now in his hands, and the thought of leaving it untouched was too mortifying to be patiently borne.

However, as there was little time for consultation, and the same danger attended their stay in that perplexity and confusion, as their return, they bound up his wound with his scarf, and partly by force, partly by entreaty, carried him to the boats, in which they all embarked by break of day.

Then taking with them, out of the harbour, a ship loaded with wines, they went to the Bastimentes, an island about a league from the town, where they staid two days to repose the wounded men, and to regale themselves with the fruits which grew in great plenty in the gardens of that island.

During their stay here, there came over from the main land a Spanish gentleman, sent by the governor, with instructions to enquire whether the captain was that Drake who had been before on their coast, whether the arrows with which many of their men were wounded were not poisoned, and whether they wanted provisions or other necessaries. The messenger likewise extolled their courage with the highest encomiums,

encomiums, and expressed his admiration of their daring undertaking. Drake, though he knew the civilities of an enemy are always to be suspected, and that the messenger, amidst all his professions of regard, was no other than a spy, yet knowing that he had nothing to apprehend, treated him with the highest honours that his condition admitted of. In answer to his enquiries, he assured him that he was the same Drake with whose character they were before acquainted, that he was a rigid observer of the laws of war, and never permitted his arrows to be poisoned: he then dismissed him with considerable presents, and told him that, though he had unfortunately failed in this attempt, he would never desist from his design, till he had shared with Spain the treasures of America.

They then resolved to return to the isle of Pines, where they had left their ships, and consult about the measures they were now to take; and having arrived August 1, at their former station, they dismissed captain Rause, who judging it unsafe to stay any longer on the coast, desired to be no longer engaged in their designs.

But Drake, not to be discouraged from his purpose by a single disappointment, after having enquired of a negro, whom he took on board at Nombre de Dios, the most wealthy settlements, and weakest parts of the coast, resolved to attack Carthagena; and setting sail without loss of time, came to anchor, August 13, between Charesha and St. Barnards, two islands at a little distance from the harbour of Carthagena; then passing with his boats round the island he entered the harbour, and in the mouth

mouth of it found a frigate with only an old man in it, who voluntarily informed them, that about an hour before a pinnace had passed by with sails and oars, and all the appearance of expedition and importance; that, as she passed, the crew on board her bid them take care of themselves; and that, as soon as she touched the shore, they heard the noise of cannon fired as a warning, and saw the shipping in the port drawn up under the guns of the castle.

The captain, who had himself heard the discharge of the artillery, was soon convinced that he was discovered, and that therefore nothing could be attempted with any probability of success. He therefore contented himself with taking a ship of Seville, of two hundred and forty tons, which the relater of this voyage mentions as a very large ship, and two small frigates, in which he found letters of advice from Nombre de Dios, intended to alarm that part of the coast.

Drake, now finding his pinnaces of great use, and not having a sufficient number of sailors for all his vessels, was desirous of destroying one of his ships, that his pinnaces might be better manned: this, necessary as it was, could not easily be done without disgusting his company, who having made several prosperous voyages in that vessel, would be unwilling to have it destroyed. Drake well knew that nothing but the love of their leaders could animate his followers to encounter such hardships as he was about to expose them to, and therefore rather chose to bring his designs to pass by artifice than authority. He sent for the carpenter of the Swan, took him into his cabin, and, having first engaged him to secrecy, ordered

ordered him in the middle of the night to go down into the well of the ship, and bore three holes through the bottom, laying something against them that might hinder the bubbling of the water from being heard. To this the carpenter, after some expostulation, consented, and the next night performed his promise.

In the morning, August 15, Drake going out with his pinnace a fishing, rowed up to the Swan, and having invited his brother to partake of his diversions, enquired, with a negligent air, why their bark was so deep in the water; upon which the steward going down, returned immediately with an account that the ship was leaky, and in danger of sinking in a little time. They had recourse immediately to the pump; but, having laboured till three in the afternoon, and gained very little upon the water, they willingly, according to Drake's advice, set the vessel on fire, and went on board the pinnaces.

Finding it now necessary to lie concealed for some time, till the Spaniards should forget their danger, and remit their vigilance, they set sail for the Sound of Darien, and without approaching the coast, that their course might not be observed, they arrived there in six days.

This being a convenient place for their reception, both on account of privacy, as it was out of the road of all trade, and as it was well supplied with wood, water, wild fowl, hogs, deer, and all kinds of provisions, he stayed here fifteen days to clean his vessels, and refresh his men, who worked interchangeably, on one day the one half, and on the next the other.

On

On the fifth day of September, Drake left his brother with the ship at Darien, and set out with two pinnaces towards the Rio Grande, which it reached in three days, and on the ninth were discovered by a Spaniard from the bank, who believing them to be his countrymen, made a signal to them to come on shore, with which they very readily complied; but he, soon finding his mistake, abandoned his plantation, where they found great plenty of provisions, with which, having laden their vessels, they departed. So great was the quantity of provisions which they amassed here and in other places, that in different parts of the coast they built four magazines or storehouses, which they filled with necessaries for the prosecution of their voyage. These they placed at such a distance from each other, that the enemy, if he should surprise one, might yet not discover the rest.

In the mean time, his brother, Captain John Drake, went, according to the instructions that had been left him, in search of the Symerons or fugitive negroes, from whose assistance alone they had now any prospect of a successful voyage; and touching upon the main land, by means of the negro whom they had taken from Nombre de Dios, engaged two of them to come on board his pinnace, leaving two of their own men as hostages for their returning. These men, having assured Drake of the affection of their nation, appointed an interview between him and their leaders. So leaving Port Plenty, in the isle of Pines, so named by the English from the great stores of provisions which they had amassed at that place, they came by the direction of the Symerons, into a secret bay among beautiful islands covered with trees, which concealed

concealed their ship from observation, and where the channel was so narrow and rocky, that it was impossible to enter it by night; so that there was no danger of a sudden attack.

Here they met, and entered into engagements, which common enemies and common dangers preserved from violation. But the first conversation informed the English, that their expectations were not immediately to be gratified; for upon their enquiries, after the most probable means of gaining gold and silver, the Symerons told them, that, had they known sooner the chief end of their expedition, they could easily have gratified them; but that during the rainy season, which was now begun, and which continues six months, they could not recover the treasure, which they had taken from the Spaniards, out of the rivers in which they had concealed it.

Drake, therefore, proposing to wait in this place till the rains were past, built, with the assistance of the Symerons, a fort of earth and timber, and, leaving part of his company with the Symerons, set out with three pinnaces towards Carthagena, being of a spirit too active to lie still patiently, even in a state of plenty and security, and with the most probable expectations of immense riches.

On the 16th of October, he anchored within sight of Carthagena without landing; and on the 17th, going out to sea, took a Spanish bark, with which they entered the harbour, where they were accosted by a Spanish gentleman, whom they had some time before taken and set at liberty, who coming to them in a boat, as he pretended, without the knowledge of the governor,

governor, made them great promises of refreshment and professions of esteem; but Drake, having waited till the next morning without receiving the provisions he had been prevailed upon to expect, found that all this pretended kindness was no more than a stratagem to amuse him, while the governor was raising forces for his destruction.

October 20, they took two frigates coming out of Carthagena without lading. Why the Spaniards, knowing Drake to lie at the mouth of the harbour, sent out their vessels on purpose to be taken, does not appear. Perhaps they thought that, in order to keep possession of his prizes, he would divide his company, and by that division be more easily destroyed.

In a few hours afterwards they sent out two frigates well manned, which Drake soon forced to retire, and having sunk one of his prizes, and burnt the other in their sight, leaped afterwards ashore, single, in defiance of their troops, which hovered at a distance in the woods and on the hills, without ever venturing to approach within reach of the shot from the pinnaces.

To leap upon an enemy's coast in sight of a superior force, only to shew how little they were feared, was an act that would in these times meet with little applause, nor can the general be seriously commended, or rationally vindicated, who exposes his person to destruction, and by consequence his expedition to miscarriage, only for the pleasure of an idle insult, an insignificant bravado. All that can be urged in his defence is, that perhaps it might contribute to heighten the esteem of his followers, as few men, especially of that class, are philosophical enough

enough to state the exact limits of prudence and bravery, or not to be dazzled with an intrepidity how improperly soever exerted. It may be added, that perhaps the Spaniards, whose notions of courage are sufficiently romantic, might look upon him as a more formidable enemy, and yield more easily to a hero of whose fortitude they had so high an idea.

However, finding the whole country advertised of his attempts and in arms to oppose him, he thought it not proper to stay longer where there was no probability of success, and where he might in time be overpowered by multitudes, and therefore determined to go forwards to Rio de Heha.

This resolution, when it was known by his followers, threw them into astonishment; and the company of one of his pinnaces remonstrated to him, that, though they placed the highest confidence in his conduct, they could not think of undertaking such a voyage without provisions, having only a gammon of bacon, and a small quantity of bread, for seventeen men. Drake answered them, that there was on boasd his vessel even a greater scarcity; but yet, if they would adventure to share his fortune, he did not doubt of extricating them from all their difficulties.

Such was the heroic spirit of Drake, that he never suffered himself to be diverted from his designs by any difficulties, nor ever thought of relieving his exigencies, but at the expence of his enemies.

Resolution and success reciprocally produce each other. He had not sailed more than three leagues, before they discovered a large ship, which they attacked

attacked with all the intrepidity that necessity inspires, and happily found it laden with excellent provisions.

But finding his crew growing faint and sickly with their manner of living in the pinnaces, which was less commodious than on board the ships, he determined to go back to the Symerons, with whom he left his brother and part of his force, and attempt by their conduct to make his way over, and invade the Spaniards in the inland parts, where they would probably never dream of an enemy.

When they arrived at Port Diego, so named from the negro who had procured them their intercourse with the Symerons, they found Captain John Drake and one of his company dead, being killed, in attempting, almost unarmed, to board a frigate well provided with all things necessary for its defence. The captain was unwilling to attack it, and represented to them the madness of their proposal; but, being overborne by their clamours and importunities, to avoid the imputation of cowardice, complied to his destruction. So dangerous is it for the chief commander to be absent.

Nor was this their only misfortune, for in a very short time many of them were attacked by the calenture, a malignant fever, very frequent in the hot climates, which carried away, among several others, Joseph Drake, another brother of the commander.

While Drake was employed in taking care of the sick men, the Symerons, who ranged the country for intelligence, brought him an account, that the Spanish fleet was arrived at Nombre de Dios, the truth of which

which was confirmed by a pinnace, which he sent out to make observations.

This, therefore, was the time for their journey, when the treasures of the American mines were to be transported from Panama, over land, to Nombre de Dios. He therefore, by the direction of the Symerons, furnished himself with all things necessary, and on February 3, set out from Port Diego.

Having lost already twenty-eight of his company, and being under the necessity of leaving some to guard his ship, he took with him only eighteen English, and thirty Symerons, who not only served as guides to shew the way, but as purveyors to procure provisions.

They carried not only arrows for war, but for hunting and fowling; the heads of which are proportioned in size to the game which they are pursuing: for oxen, stags, or wild boars, they have arrows, or javelins, with heads weighing a pound and half, which they discharge near hand, and which scarcely ever fail of being mortal. The second sort are about half as heavy as the other, and are generally shot from their bows; these are intended for smaller beasts. With the third sort, of which the heads are an ounce in weight, they kill birds. As this nation is in a state that does not set them above continual cares for the immediate necessaries of life, he that can temper iron best is among them most esteemed, and, perhaps, it would be happy for every nation, if honours and applauses were as justly distributed, and he were most distinguished whose abilities were most useful to society. How many

chimerical titles to precedence, how many false pretences to respect, would this rule bring to the ground!

Every day, by sun-rising, they began to march, and, having travelled till ten, rested near some river till twelve, then travelling again till four, they reposed all night in houses, which the Symerons had either left standing in their former marches, or very readily erected for them, by setting up three or four posts in the ground, and laying poles from one to another in form of a roof, which they thatched with palmetto boughs and plantane leaves. In the valleys, where they were sheltered from the winds, they left three or four feet below open; but on the hills, where they were more exposed to the chill blasts of the night, they thatched them close to the ground, leaving only a door for entrance, and a vent in the middle of the room for the smoke of three fires, which they made in every house.

In their march they met not only with plenty of fruits upon the banks of the rivers, but with wild swine in great abundance, of which the Symerons, without difficulty, killed, for the most part, as much as was wanted. One day, however, they found an otter, and were about to dress it; at which Drake expressing his wonder, was asked by Pedro, the chief Symeron, "Are you a man of war and in want, and "yet doubt whether this be meat that hath blood in "it?" For which Drake in private rebuked him, says the relator; whether justly or not, it is not very important to determine. There seems to be in Drake's scruple somewhat of superstition, perhaps not easily

easily to be justified; and the negro's answer was, at least, martial, and will, I believe, be generally acknowledged to be rational.

On the third day of their march, Feb. 6, they came to a town of the Symerons, situated on the side of a hill, and encompassed with a ditch and a mud wall, to secure it from a sudden surprize: here they lived with great neatness and plenty, and some observation of religion, paying great reverence to the cross; a practice, which Drake prevailed upon them to change for the use of the Lord's prayer. Here they importuned Drake to stay for a few days, promising to double his strength; but he either thinking greater numbers unnecessary, or fearing that, if any difference should arise, he should be overborne by the number of Symerons, or that they would demand to share the plunder that should be taken in common, or for some other reason that might easily occur, refused any addition to his troop, endeavouring to express his refusal in such terms as might heighten their opinion of his bravery.

He then proceeded on his journey through cool shades, and lofty woods, which sheltered them so effectually from the sun, that their march was less toilsome than if they had travelled in England during the heat of the summer. Four of the Symerons, that were acquainted with the way, went about a mile before the troop, and scattered branches to direct them; then followed twelve Symerons, after whom came the English, with the two leaders, and the other Symerons closed the rear.

On February 11, they arrived at the top of a very high hill, on the summit of which grew a tree of

wonderful greatness, in which they had cut steps for the more easy ascent to the top, where there was a kind of tower, to which they invited Drake, and from thence shewed him not only the North Sea, from whence they came, but the great South Sea, on which no English vessel had ever sailed. This prospect exciting his natural curiosity and ardour for adventures and discoveries, he lifted up his hands to God, and implored his blessing upon the resolution, which he then formed, of sailing in an English ship on that sea.

Then continuing their march, they came, after two days, into an open, level country, where their passage was somewhat incommoded with the grass, which is of a peculiar kind, consisting of a stalk like that of wheat, and a blade, on which the oxen and other cattle feed, till it grows too high for them to reach; then the inhabitants set it on fire, and in three days it springs up again; this they are obliged to do thrice a year, so great is the fertility of the soil.

At length, being within view of Panama, they left all frequented roads for fear of being discovered, and posted themselves in a grove near the way between Panama and Nombre de Dios; then they sent a Symeron in the habit of a negro of Panama, to enquire on what night the recoes, or drivers of mules, by which the treasure is carried, were to set forth. The messenger was so well qualified for his undertaking, and so industrious in the prosecution of it, that he soon returned with an account that the treasurer of Lima, intending to return to Europe, would pass that night, with eight mules laden with gold, and one with jewels.

Having

Having received this information, they immediately marched towards Venta Cruz, the first town on the way to Nombre de Dios, sending, for security, two Symerons before, who, as they went, perceived, by the scent of a match, that some Spaniard was before them, and going silently forwards, surprised a soldier asleep upon the ground. They immediately bound him, and brought him to Drake, who, upon enquiry, found that their spy had not deceived them in his intelligence. The soldier, having informed himself of the captain's name, conceived such a confidence in his well-known clemency, that, after having made an ample discovery of the treasure that was now at hand, he petitioned not only that he would command the Symerons to spare his life, but that, when the treasure should fall into his hands, he would allow him as much as might maintain him and his mistress, since they were about to gain more than their whole company could carry away.

Drake then ordered his men to lie down in the long grass, about fifty paces from the road, half on one side, with himself, and half on the other, with Oxenham and the captain of the Symerons, so much behind, that one company might seize the foremost recoe, and the other the hindermost; for the mules of these recoes, or drivers, being tied together, travel on a line, and are all guided by leading the first.

When they had lain about an hour in this place, they began to hear the bells of the mules on each hand; upon which orders were given, that the droves which came from Venta Cruz should pass unmolested

lested, because they carried nothing of great value, and those only be intercepted which were travelling thither, and that none of them should rise up till the signal should be given. But one Robert Pike, heated with strong liquor, left his company, and prevailed upon one of the Symerons to creep with him to the way-side, that they might signalize themselves by seizing the first mule, and hearing the trampling of a horse, as he lay, could not be restrained by the Symeron from rising up to observe who was passing by. This he did so imprudently, that he was discovered by the passenger, for by Drake's order the English had put their shirts on over their coats, that the night and tumult might not hinder them from knowing one another.

The gentleman was immediately observed by Drake to change his trot into a gallop; but the reason of it not appearing, it was imputed to his fear of the robbers that usually infest that road, and the English still continued to expect the treasure.

In a short time one of the recoes, that were passing towards Venta Cruz, came up, and was eagerly seized by the English, who expected nothing less than half the revenue of the Indies; nor is it easy to imagine their mortification and perplexity when they found only two mules laden with silver, the rest having no other burthen than provisions.

The driver was brought immediately to the captain, and informed him that the horseman, whom he had observed pass by with so much precipitation, had informed the treasurer of what he had observed, and advised him to send back the mules that carried

his

his gold and jewels, and suffer only the rest to proceed, that he might by that cheap experiment discover whether there was any ambush on the way.

That Drake was not less disgusted than his followers at the disappointment, cannot be doubted; but there was now no time to be spent in complaints. The whole country was alarmed, and all the force of the Spaniards was summoned to overwhelm him. He had no fortress to retire to, every man was his enemy, and every retreat better known to the Spaniards than to himself.

This was an occasion that demanded all the qualities of an hero, an intrepidity never to be shaken, and a judgment never to be perplexed. He immediately considered all the circumstances of his present situation, and found that it afforded him only the choice of marching back by the same way through which he came, or of forcing his passage to Venta Cruz.

To march back, was to confess the superiority of his enemies, and to animate them to the pursuit; the woods would afford opportunities of ambush, and his followers must often disperse themselves in search of provisions, who would become an easy prey, dispirited by their disappointment, and fatigued by their march. On the way to Venta Cruz he should have nothing to fear but from open attacks, and expected enemies.

Determining therefore to pass forward to Venta Cruz, he asked Pedro, the leader of the Symerons, whether he was resolved to follow him; and having received from him the strongest assurances that nothing should

should separate them, commanded his men to refresh themselves, and prepare to set forward.

When they came within a mile of the town, they dismissed the mules which they had made use for their more easy and speedy passage, and continued their march along a road cut through thick woods, in which a company of soldiers, who were quartered in the place to defend it against the Symerons, had posted themselves, together with a convent of friars headed by one of their brethren, whose zeal against the northern heresy had incited him to hazard his person, and assume the province of a general.

Drake, who was advertised by two Symerons, whom he sent before, of the approach of the Spaniards, commanded his followers to receive the first volley without firing.

In a short time he heard himself summoned by the Spanish captain to yield, with a promise of protection and kind treatment; to which he answered with defiance, contempt, and the discharge of his pistol.

Immediately, the Spaniards poured in their shot, by which only one man was killed, and Drake, with some others, slightly wounded; upon which the signal was given by Drake's whistle to fall upon them. The English, after discharging their arrows and shot, pressed furiously forward, and drove the Spaniards before them, which the Symerons, whom the terror of the shot had driven to some distance, observed, and recalling their courage, animated each other with songs in their own language, and rushed forward with such impetuosity,

impetuosity, that they overtook them near the town, and, supported by the English, dispersed them with the loss of only one man, who, after he had received his wound, had strength and resolution left to kill his assailant.

They pursued the enemy into the town, in which they met with some plunder, which was given to the Symerons, and treated the inhabitants with great clemency, Drake himself going to the Spanish ladies to assure them that no injuries should be offered them; so inseparable is humanity from true courage.

Having thus broken the spirits, and scattered the forces of the Spaniards, he pursued his march to his ship, without any apprehension of danger, yet with great speed, being very solicitous about the state of the crew; so that he allowed his men, harassed as they were, but little time for sleep or refreshment, but by kind exhortations, gentle authority, and a cheerful participation of all their hardships, prevailed upon them to bear, without murmurs, not only the toil of travelling, but on some days the pain of hunger.

In this march he owed much of his expedition to the assistance of the Symerons, who being accustomed to the climate, and naturally robust, not only brought him intelligence, and shewed the way, but carried necessaries, provided victuals, and built lodgings, and, when any of the English fainted in the way, two of them would carry him between them for two miles together; nor was their valour less than their industry, after they had learned, from their English

English companions, to despise the fire-arms of the Spaniards.

When they were within five leagues of the ships, they found a town built in their absence by the Symerons, at which Drake consented to halt, sending a Symeron to the ship with his gold tooth-pick as a token, which, though the master knew it, was not sufficient to gain the messenger credit, till upon examination he found that the captain having ordered him to regard no messenger without his handwriting, had engraven his name upon it with the point of his knife. He then sent the pinnace up the river, which they met, and afterwards sent to the town for those whose weariness had made them unable to march farther. On February 23, the whole company was re-united; and Drake, whose good or ill success never prevailed over his piety, celebrated their meeting with thanks to God.

Drake, not yet discouraged, now turned his thoughts to new prospects, and without languishing in melancholy reflections upon his past miscarriages, employed himself in forming schemes for repairing them. Eager of action, and acquainted with man's nature, he never suffered idleness to infect his followers with cowardice, but kept them from sinking under any disappointment, by diverting their attention to some new enterprize.

Upon consultation with his own men and the Symerons, he found them divided in their opinions: some declaring, that, before they engaged in any new attempt, it was necessary to increase their stores of provisions; and others urging, that the ships in which the treasure was conveyed, should be immediately

ately attacked. The Symerons proposed a third plan, and advised him to undertake another march over land to the house of one Pezoro near Veragua, whose slaves brought him every day more than two hundred pounds sterling from the mines, which he heaped together in a strong stone house, which might by the help of the English be easily forced.

Drake, being unwilling to fatigue his followers with another journey, determined to comply with both the other opinions; and manning his two pinnaces, the Bear and the Minion, he sent John Oxenham in the Bear towards Tolon, to seize upon provisions; and went himself in the Minion to the Cabezas, to intercept the treasure that was to be transported from Veragua and that coast to the fleet at Nombre de Dios, first dismissing with presents those Symerons that desired to return to their wives, and ordering those that chose to remain to be entertained in the ship.

Drake took at the Cabezas a frigate of Nicaragua, the pilot of which informed him that there was, in the harbour of Veragua, a ship freighted with more than a million of gold, to which he offered to conduct him (being well acquainted with the soundings) if he might be allowed his share of the prize; so much was his avarice superior to his honesty.

Drake, after some deliberation, complying with the pilot's importunities, sailed towards the harbour, but had no sooner entered the mouth of it than he heard the report of artillery, which was answered by others at a greater distance; upon which the pilot told him that they were discovered, this being the signal appointed by the governor to alarm the coast.

Drake

Drake now thought it convenient to return to the ship, that he might enquire the success of the other pinnace, which he found, with a frigate that she had taken, with twenty-eight fat hogs, two hundred hens, and great store of maize, or Indian corn. The vessel itself was so strong and well built, that he fitted it out for war, determining to attack the fleet at Nombre de Dios.

On March the 21st he set sail with the new frigate and the Bear towards the Cabezas, at which he arrived in about two days, and found there Tetu, a Frenchman, with a ship of war, who, after having received from him a supply of water, and other necessaries, intreated that he might join with him in his attempt; which Drake consenting to, admitted him to accompany him with twenty of his men, stipulating to allow them an equal share of whatever booty they should gain. Yet were they not without some suspicions of danger from this new ally, he having eighty men, and they being now reduced to thirty-one.

Then manning the frigate and two pinnaces, they set sail for the Cabezas, where they left the frigate, which was too large for the shallows over which they were to pass, and proceeded to Rio Francisco. Here they landed, and, having ordered the pinnaces to return to the same place on the 4th day following, travelled through the woods towards Nombre de Dios, with such silence and regularity as surprised the French, who did not imagine the Symerons so discreet or obedient as they appeared, and were therefore in perpetual anxiety about the fidelity of their guides, and the probability of their return. Nor did the Symerons

merons treat them with that submission and regard which they paid to the English, whose bravery and conduct they had already tried.

At length, after a laborious march of more than seven leagues, they began to hear the hammers of the carpenters in the bay, it being the custom in that hot season to work in the night, and in a short time they perceived the approach of the recoes, or droves of mules, from Panama. They now no longer doubted that their labours would be rewarded, and every man imagined himself secure from poverty and labour for the remaining part of his life. They, therefore, when the mules came up, rushed out and seized them, with an alacrity proportioned to their expectations. The three droves consisted of one hundred and nine mules, each of which carried three hundred pounds weight of silver. It was to little purpose that the soldiers ordered to guard the treasure, attempted resistance. After a short combat, in which the French captain, and one of the Symerons, were wounded, it appeared with how much greater ardour men are animated by interest than fidelity.

As it was possible for them to carry away but a small part of this treasure, after having wearied themselves with hiding it in holes and shallow waters, they determined to return by the same way, and, without being pursued, entered the woods, where the French captain, being disabled by his wound, was obliged to stay, two of his company continuing with him.

When they had gone forward about two leagues, the Frenchmen missed another of their company, who upon enquiry was known to be intoxicated with wine, and

and supposed to have lost himself in the woods, by neglecting to observe the guides.

But common prudence not allowing them to hazard the whole company by too much solicitude for a single life, they travelled on towards Rio Francisco, at which they arrived April the 3d; but, looking out for their pinnaces, were surprised with the sight of seven Spanish shallops, and immediately concluded that some intelligence of their motions had been carried to Nombre de Dios, and that these vessels had been fitted out to pursue them, which might undoubtedly have overpowered the pinnaces and their feeble crew. Nor did their suspicion stop here; but immediately it occurred to them, that their men had been compelled by torture to discover where their frigate and ship were stationed, which being weakly manned, and without the presence of the chief commander, would fall into their hands, almost without resistance, and all possibility of escaping be entirely cut off.

These reflections sunk the whole company into despair; and every one, instead of endeavouring to break through the difficulties that surrounded him, resigned up himself to his ill fortune; when Drake, whose intrepidity was never to be shaken, and whose reason was never to be surprised or embarrassed, represented to them that, though the Spaniards should have made themselves masters of their pinnaces, they might yet be hindered from discovering the ships. He put them in mind that the pinnaces could not be taken, the men examined, their examinations compared, the resolutions formed, their vessels sent out, and their ships taken in an instant. Some time must necessarily

necessarily be spent before the last blow could be struck; and, if that time were not negligently lost, it might be possible for some of them to reach the ships before the enemy, and direct them to change their station.

They were animated with this discourse, by which they discovered that their leader was not without hope; but when they came to look more nearly into their situation, they were unable to conceive upon what it was founded. To pass by land was impossible, as the way lay over high mountains, through thick woods and deep rivers; and they had not a single boat in their power, so that a passage by water seemed equally impracticable. But Drake, whose penetration immediately discovered all the circumstances and inconveniences of every scheme, soon determined upon the only means of success which their condition afforded them; and ordering his men to make a raft, out of the trees that were then floating on the river, offered himself to put off to sea upon it, and cheerfully asked who would accompany him. John Owen, John Smith, and two Frenchmen, who were willing to share his fortune, embarked with him on the raft, which was fitted out with a sail made of a bisket-sack, and an oar to direct its course instead of a rudder.

Then, having comforted the rest with assurances of his regard for them, and resolution to leave nothing unattempted for their deliverance, he put off, and after having, with much difficulty, sailed three leagues, descried two pinnaces hasting towards him, which, upon a nearer approach, he discovered to be his own, and perceiving that they anchored behind a point

point that jutted out into the sea, he put to shore, and, crossing the land on foot, was received by his company with that satisfaction which is only known to those that have been acquainted with dangers and distresses.

The same night they rowed to Rio Francisco, where they took in the rest, with what treasure they had been able to carry with them through the woods; then sailing back with the utmost expedition, they returned to their frigate, and soon after to their ship, where Drake divided the gold and silver equally between the French and the English.

Here they spent about fourteen days in fitting out their frigate more completely, and then, dismissing the Spaniards with their ship, lay a few days among the Cabezas; while twelve English and sixteen Symerons travelled once more into the country, as well to recover the French captain, whom they had left wounded, as to bring away the treasure which they had hid in the sands. Drake, whom his company would not suffer to hazard his person in another land expedition, went with them to Rio Francisco, where he found one of the Frenchmen who had stayed to attend their captain, and was informed by him, upon his enquiries after his fortune, that, half an hour after their separation, the Spaniards came upon them, and easily seized upon the wounded captain; but that his companion might have escaped with him, had he not preferred money to life; for seeing him throw down a box of jewels that retarded him, he could not forbear taking it up, and with that, and the gold which he had already, was so loaded that he could not escape. With regard to the bars of gold and silver, which

which they had concealed in the ground, he informed them that two thousand men had been employed in digging for them.

The men, however, either mistrusting the informer's veracity, or confident that what they had hidden could not be found, pursued their journey; but upon their arrival at the place, found the ground turned up for two miles round, and were able to recover no more than thirteen bars of silver, and a small quantity of gold. They discovered afterwards that the Frenchman who was left in the woods, falling afterwards into the hands of the Spaniards, was tortured by them till he confessed where Drake had concealed his plunder. So fatal to Drake's expedition was the drunkenness of his followers.

Then dismissing the French, they passed by Carthagena with their colours flying, and soon after took a frigate laden with provisions and honey, which they valued as a great restorative, and then sailed away to the Cabezas.

Here they stayed about a week to clean their vessels, and fit them for a long voyage, determining to set sail for England; and, that the faithful Symerons might not go away unrewarded, broke up their pinnaces, and gave them the iron, the most valuable present in the world to a nation whose only employments were war and hunting, and amongst whom show and luxury had no place.

Pedro, their captain, being desired by Drake to go through the ship, and to choose what he most desired, fixed his eye upon a scymeter set with diamonds, which the French captain had presented to Drake; and being unwilling to ask for so valuable a present,

offered for it four large quoits, or thick plates of gold, which he had hitherto concealed; but Drake, desirous to shew him that fidelity is seldom without a recompence, gave it him with the highest professions of satisfaction and esteem. Pedro, receiving it with the utmost gratitude, informed him, that by bestowing it he had conferred greatness and honour upon him; for by presenting it to his king, he doubted not of obtaining the highest rank amongst the Symerons. He then persisted in his resolution of leaving the gold, which was generously thrown by Drake into the common stock; for he said, that those, at whose expences he had been sent out, ought to share in all the gain of the expedition, whatever pretence cavil and chicanery might supply for the appropriation of any part of it. Thus was Drake's character consistent with itself; he was equally superior to avarice and fear, and through whatever danger he might go in quest of gold, he thought it not valuable enough to be obtained by artifice or dishonesty.

They now forsook the coast of America, which for many months they had kept in perpetual alarms, having taken more than two hundred ships of all sizes between Carthagena and Nombre de Dios, of which they never destroyed any, unless they were fitted out against them, nor ever detained the prisoners longer than was necessary for their own security or concealment, providing for them in the same manner as for themselves, and protecting them from the malice of the Symerons; a behaviour, which humanity dictates, and which, perhaps, even policy cannot disapprove. He must certainly meet with obstinate opposition, who makes it equally dangerous

to

to yield as to resist, and who leaves his enemies no hopes but from victory.

What riches they acquired is not particularly related; but it is not to be doubted, that the plunder of so many vessels, together with the silver which they seized at Nombre de Dios, must amount to a very large sum, though the part that was allotted to Drake was not sufficient to lull him in effeminacy, or to repress his natural inclination to adventures.

They arrived at Plymouth on the 9th of August, 1573, on Sunday in the afternoon; and so much were the people delighted with the news of their arrival, that they left the preacher, and ran in crowds to the quay with shouts and congratulations.

Drake having, in his former expedition, had a view of the South Sea, and formed a resolution to sail upon it, did not suffer himself to be diverted from his design by the prospect of any difficulties that might obstruct the attempt, nor any dangers that might attend the execution; obstacles which brave men often find it much more easy to overcome, than secret envy and domestick treachery.

Drake's reputation was now sufficiently advanced to incite detraction and opposition; and it is easy to imagine that a man by nature superior to mean artifices, and bred, from his earliest years, to the labour and hardships of a sea life, was very little acquainted with policy and intrigue, very little versed in the methods of application to the powerful and great, and unable to obviate the practices of those whom his merit had made his enemies.

Nor are such the only opponents of great enterprises: there are some men, of narrow views and

grovelling conceptions, who, without the instigation of personal malice, treat every new attempt as wild and chimerical, and look upon every endeavour to depart from the beaten track as the rash effort of a warm imagination, or the glittering speculation of an exalted mind, that may please and dazzle for a time, but can produce no real or lasting advantage.

These men value themselves upon a perpetual scepticism, upon believing nothing but their own senses, upon calling for demonstration where it cannot possibly be obtained, and sometimes upon holding out against it when it is laid before them; upon inventing arguments against the success of any new undertaking, and, where arguments cannot be found, upon treating it with contempt and ridicule.

Such have been the most formidable enemies of the great benefactors to mankind, and to these we can hardly doubt but that much of the opposition which Drake met with is to be attributed; for their notions and discourse are so agreeable to the lazy, the envious, and the timorous, that they seldom fail of becoming popular, and directing the opinions of mankind.

Whatsoever were his obstacles, and whatsoever the motives that produced them, it was not till the year 1577, that he was able to assemble a force proportioned to his design, and to obtain a commission from the queen, by which he was constituted captain general of a fleet consisting of five vessels, of which the Pelican, admiral, of an hundred tons, was commanded by himself; the Elizabeth, vice-admiral, of eighty tons, by John Winter; the Marigold, of thirty tons by John Thomas; the Swan, fifty tons,

by

by John Chester; the Christopher, of fifteen tons, by Thomas Moche, the same, as it seems, who was carpenter in the former voyage, and destroyed one of the ships by Drake's direction.

These ships, equipped partly by himself, and partly by other private adventurers, he manned with 164 stout sailors, and furnished with such provisions as he judged necessary for the long voyage in which he was engaged. Nor did he confine his concern to naval stores, or military preparations; but carried with him whatever he thought might contribute to raise in those nations, with which he should have any intercourse, the highest ideas of the politeness and magnificence of his native country. He therefore not only procured a complete service of silver for his own table, and furnished the cook-room with many vessels of the same metal, but engaged several musicians to accompany him; rightly judging that nothing would more excite the admiration of any savage and uncivilized people.

Having been driven back by a tempest in their first attempt, and obliged to return to Plymouth, to repair the damages which they had suffered, they set sail again from thence on the 13th of December 1577, and on the 25th had sight of Cape Cantire in Barbary, from whence they coasted on southward to the island of Mogadore, which Drake had appointed for the first place of rendezvous, and on the 27th brought the whole fleet to anchor in a harbour on the main land.

They were soon after their arrival discovered by the Moors that inhabited those coasts, who sent two of the principal men amongst them on board Drake's ship,

ship, receiving at the same time two of his company as hostages. These men he not only treated in the most splendid manner, but presented with such things as they appeared most to admire; it being with him an established maxim, to endeavour to secure in every country a kind reception to such Englishmen as might come after him, by treating the inhabitants with kindness and generosity; a conduct at once just and politick, to the neglect of which may be attributed many of the injuries suffered by our sailors in distant countries, which are generally ascribed, rather to the effects of wickedness and folly of our own commanders, than the barbarity of the natives, who seldom fall upon any unless they have been first plundered or insulted; and, in revenging the ravages of one crew upon another of the same nation, are guilty of nothing but what is countenanced by the example of the Europeans themselves.

But this friendly intercourse was in appearance soon broken; for, on the next day observing the Moors making signals from the land, they sent out their boat, as before, to fetch them to the ship, and one John Fry leaped ashore, intending to become a hostage as on the former day, when immediately he was seized by the Moors; and the crew, observing great numbers to start up from behind the rock with weapons in their hands, found it madness to attempt his rescue, and therefore provided for their own security by returning to the ship.

Fry was immediately carried to the king, who, being then in continual expectation of an invasion from Portugal, suspected that these ships were sent only to observe the coast, and discover a proper harbour

harbour for the main fleet; but being informed who they were, and whither they were bound, not only dismissed his captive, but made large offers of friendship and assistance, which Drake, however, did not stay to receive, but being disgusted at this breach of the laws of commerce, and afraid of farther violence, after having spent some days in searching for his man, in which he met with no resistance, left the coast on December 31, some time before Fry's return, who, being obliged by this accident to somewhat a longer residence among the Moors, was afterwards sent home in a merchant's ship.

On January 16, they arrived at Cape Blanc, having in their passage taken several Spanish vessels. Here while Drake was employing his men in catching fish, of which this coast affords great plenty, and various kinds, the inhabitants came down to the seaside with their alisorges, or leather-bottles, to traffick for water, which they were willing to purchase with ambergrise and other gums. But Drake, compassionating the misery of their condition, gave them water whenever they asked for it, and left them their commodities to traffick with, when they should be again reduced to the same distress, without finding the same generosity to relieve them.

Here having discharged some Spanish ships which they had taken, they set sail towards the isles of Cape Verd, and on January 28 came to anchor before Mayo, hoping to furnish themselves with fresh water; but having landed, they found the town by the water's side entirely deserted, and, marching farther up the country, saw the vallies extremely fruitful,

and

and abounding with ripe figs, cocoas, and plantains, but could by no means prevail upon the inhabitants to converse or traffick with them: however, they were suffered by them to range the country without molestation, but found no water, except at such a distance from the sea that the labour of conveying it to the ships was greater than it was at that time necessary for them to undergo. Salt, had they wanted it, might have been obtained with less trouble, being left by the sea upon the sand, and hardened by the sun during the ebb, in such quantities, that the chief traffick of their island is carried on with it.

January 31, they passed by St. Jago, an island at that time divided between the natives and the Portuguese, who, first entering these islands under the show of traffick, by degrees established themselves, claimed a superiority over the original inhabitants, and harassed them with such cruelty, that they obliged them either to fly to the woods and mountains, and perish with hunger, or to take up arms against their oppressors, and, under the insuperable disadvantages with which they contended, to die almost without a battle in defence of their natural rights and ancient possessions.

Such treatment had the natives of St. Jago received, which had driven them into the rocky parts of the island, from whence they made incursions into the plantations of the Portuguese, sometimes with loss, but generally with that success which desperation naturally procures; so that the Portuguese were in continual alarms, and lived with the natural consequences of guilt, terror and anxiety.

They

They were wealthy, but not happy, and possessed the island, but not enjoyed it.

They then sailed on within sight of Fogo, an island so called from a mountain, about the middle of it, continually burning, and like the rest, inhabited by the Portuguese; two leagues to the south of which lies Brava, which has received its name from its fertility, abounding, though uninhabited, with all kinds of fruits, and watered with great numbers of springs and brooks, which would easily invite the possessors of the adjacent islands to settle in it, but that it affords neither harbour nor anchorage. Drake, after having sent out his boats with plummets, was not able to find any ground about it; and it is reported, that many experiments have been made with the same success; however, he took in water sufficient, and on the 2d of February set sail for the Straits of Magellan.

On February 17, they passed the equator, and continued their voyage, with sometimes calms, and sometimes contrary winds, but without any memorable accident, to March 28, when one of their vessels, with twenty-eight men, and the greatest part of their fresh water on board, was, to their great discouragement, separated from them; but their perplexity lasted not long, for on the next day they discovered and rejoined their associates.

In their long course, which gave them opportunities of observing several animals, both in the air and water, at that time very little known, nothing entertained or surprized them more than the Flying Fish, which is near of the same size with a herring, and has fins of the length of his whole body, by the help

help of which, when he is pursued by the bonito, or great mackarel, as soon as he finds himself upon the point of being taken, he springs up into the air, and flies forward as long as his wings continue wet, moisture being, as it seems, necessary to make them pliant and moveable; and when they become dry and stiff, he falls down into the water, unless some bark or ship intercept him, and dips them again for a second flight. This unhappy animal is not only pursued by fishes in his natural element, but attacked in the air, where he hopes for security, by the don, or sparkite, a great bird that preys upon fish; and their species must surely be destroyed, were not their increase so great, that the young fry, in one part of the year, covers the sea.

There is another fish, named the cuttil, of which whole shoals will sometimes rise at once out of the water, and of which a great multitude fell into their ship.

At length, having sailed without sight of land for sixty-three days, they arrived, April 5, at the coast of Brasil, where, on the 7th, the Christopher was separated again from them by a storm; after which they sailed near the land to the southward, and on the 14th anchored under a cape, which they afterwards called Cape Joy, because in two days the vessel which they had lost returned to them.

Having spent a fortnight in the river of Plata, to refresh his men, after their long voyage, and then standing out to sea, he was again surprized by a sudden storm, in which they lost sight of the Swan. This accident determined Drake to contract the number of his fleet, that he might not only avoid the

the inconvenience of such frequent separations, but ease the labour of his men, by having more hands in each vessel.

For this purpose he sailed along the coast in quest of a commodious harbour, and, on May 13, discovered a bay, which seemed not improper for their purpose, but which they durst not enter till it was examined; an employment in which Drake never trusted any, whatever might be his confidence in his followers on other occasions. He well knew how fatal one moment's inattention might be, and how easily almost every man suffers himself to be surprized by indolence and security. He knew the same credulity, that might prevail upon him to trust another, might induce another to commit the same office to a third; and it must be, at length, that some of them would be deceived. He therefore, as at other times, ordered the boat to be hoisted out, and, taking the line into his hand, went on sounding the passage till he was three leagues from his ship; when, on a sudden, the weather changed, the skies blackened, the winds whistled, and all the usual forerunners of a storm began to threaten them; nothing was now desired but to return to the ship, but the thickness of the fog intercepting it from their sight, made the attempt little other than desperate. By so many unforeseen accidents is prudence itself liable to be embarrassed! So difficult is it sometimes for the quickest sagacity, and most enlightened experience, to judge what measures ought to be taken! To trust another to sound an unknown coast, appeared to Drake folly and presumption; to be absent from his fleet, though but for an hour, proved nothing

nothing less than to hazard the success of all their labours, hardships, and dangers.

In this perplexity, which Drake was not more sensible of than those whom he had left in the ships, nothing was to be omitted, however dangerous, that might contribute to extricate them from it, as they could venture nothing of equal value with the life of their general. Captain Thomas therefore, having the lightest vessel, steered boldly into the bay, and taking the general aboard, dropped anchor, and lay out of danger, while the rest that were in the open sea suffered much from the tempest, and the Mary, a Portuguese prize, was driven away before the wind; the others, as soon as the tempest was over, discovering by the fires which were made on shore where Drake was, repaired to him.

Here going on shore they met with no inhabitants, though there were several houses or huts standing, in which they found a good quantity of dried fowls, and among them a great number of ostriches, of which the thighs were as large as those of a sheep. These birds are too heavy and unwieldy to rise from the ground, but with the help of their wings run so swiftly, that the English could never come near enough to shoot at them. The Indians, commonly, by holding a large plume of feathers before them, and walking gently forward, drive the ostriches into some narrow neck, or point of land, then spreading a strong net from one side to the other, to hinder them from returning back to the open fields, set their dogs upon them, thus confined between the net and the water, and when they are thrown on their backs, rush in and take them.

Not

Not finding this harbour convenient, or well stored with wood and water, they left it on the 15th of May, and on the 18th entered another much safer, and more commodious, which they no sooner arrived at, than Drake, whose restless application never remitted, sent Winter to the southward, in quest of those ships which were absent, and immediately after sailed himself to the northward, and, happily meeting with the Swan, conducted it to the rest of the fleet; after which, in pursuance of his former resolution, he ordered it to be broken up, reserving the iron work for a future supply. The other vessel which they lost in the late storm could not be discovered.

While they were thus employed upon an island about a mile from the main land, to which, at low water, there was a passage on foot, they were discovered by the natives, who appeared upon a hill at a distance, dancing and holding up their hands, as beckoning the English to them; which Drake observing, sent out a boat, with knives, bells, and bugles, and such things as, by their usefulness or novelty, he imagined would be agreeable. As soon as the English landed, they observed two men running towards them, as deputed by the company, who came within a little distance, and then standing still could not be prevailed upon to come nearer. The English therefore tied their presents to a pole, which they fixed in the ground, and then retiring, saw the Indians advance, who, taking what they found upon the pole, left in return, such feathers as they wear upon their heads, with a small bone about six inches in length, carved round the top, and burnished.

Drake,

Drake, observing their inclination to friendship and traffick, advanced with some of his company towards the hill, upon sight of whom the Indians ranged themselves in a line from east to west, and one of them running from one end of the rank to the other, backwards and forwards, bowed himself towards the rising and setting of the sun, holding his hands over his head, and frequently stopping in the middle of the rank, leaping up towards the moon, which then shone directly over their heads; thus calling the sun and moon, the deities they worship, to witness the sincerity of their professions of peace and friendship. While this ceremony was performed, Drake and his company ascended the hill, to the apparent terror of the Indians, whose apprehensions when the English perceived, they peaceably retired; which gave the natives so much encouragement, that they came forward immediately, and exchanged their arrows, feathers, and bones, for such trifles as were offered them.

Thus they traded for some time; but by frequent intercourse finding that no violence was intended, they became familiar, and mingled with the English without the least distrust.

They go quite naked, except a skin of some animal, which they throw over their shoulders when they lie in the open air. They knit up their hair, which is very long, with a roll of ostrich feathers, and usually carry their arrows wrapped up in it, that they may not encumber them, they being made with reeds, headed with flint, and therefore not heavy. Their bows are about an ell long.

Their

Their chief ornament is paint, which they use of several kinds, delineating generally upon their bodies the figures of the sun and moon, in honour of their deities.

It is observable, that most nations, amongst whom the use of cloaths is unknown, paint their bodies. Such was the practice of the first inhabitants of our own country. From this custom did our earliest enemies, the Picts, owe their denomination. As it is not probable that caprice or fancy should be uniform, there must be, doubtless, some reason for a practice so general and prevailing in distant parts of the world, which have no communication with each other. The original end of painting their bodies was, probably, to exclude the cold; an end, which, if we believe some relations, is so effectually produced by it, that the men thus painted never shiver at the most piercing blasts. But doubtless any people so hardened by continual severities, would, even without paint, be less sensible of the cold than the civilized inhabitants of the same climate. However, this practice may contribute, in some degree, to defend them from the injuries of winter, and, in those climates where little evaporates by the pores, may be used with no great inconvenience; but in hot countries, where perspiration in greater degree is necessary, the natives only use unction to preserve them from the other extreme of weather: so well do either reason or experience supply the place of science in savage countries.

They had no canoes like the other Indians, nor any method of crossing the water, which was probably the reason why the birds in the adjacent islands were

were so tame, that they might be taken with the hand, having never been before frighted or molested. The great plenty of fowls and seals, which crowded the shallows in such numbers that they killed at their first arrival two hundred of them in an hour, contributed much to the refreshment of the English, who named the place Seal Bay, from that animal.

These seals seem to be the chief food of the natives, for the English often found raw pieces of their flesh half eaten, and left, as they supposed, after a full meal by the Indians, whom they never knew to make use of fire, or any art, in dressing or preparing their victuals.

Nor were their other customs less wild or uncouth than their way of feeding; one of them having received a cap off the general's head, and being extremely pleased as well with the honour as the gift, to express his gratitude, and confirm the alliance between them, retired to a little distance, and thrusting an arrow into his leg, let the blood run upon the ground, testifying, as it is probable, that he valued Drake's friendship above life.

Having staid fifteen days among these friendly savages in 47 deg. 30 min. S. Lat. on June 3, they set sail towards the South Sea, and six days afterwards stopped at another little bay to break up the Christopher. Then passing on, they cast anchor in another bay, not more than 20 leagues distant from the Straits of Magellan.

It was now time seriously to deliberate in what manner they should act with regard to the Portuguese prize, which, having been separated from them by the

the storm, had not yet rejoined them. To return in search of it was sufficiently mortifying; to proceed without it, was not only to deprive themselves of a considerable part of their force, but to expose their friends and companions, whom common hardships and dangers had endeared to them, to certain death or captivity. This consideration prevailed; and therefore on the 18th, after prayers to God, with which Drake never forgot to begin an enterprize, he put to sea, and the next day, near Port Julian, discovered their associates, whose ship was now grown leaky, having suffered much, both in the first storm by which they were dispersed, and afterwards in fruitless attempts to regain the fleet.

Drake, therefore, being desirous to relieve their fatigues, entered Port Julian, and, as it was his custom always to attend in person when any important business was in hand, went ashore with some of the chief of his company, to seek for water, where he was immediately accosted by two natives, of whom Magellan left a very terrible account, having described them as a nation of giants and monsters; nor is his narrative entirely without foundation, for they are of the largest size, though not taller than some Englishmen; their strength is proportioned to their bulk, and their voice loud, boisterous, and terrible. What were their manners before the arrival of the Spaniards, it is not possible to discover; but the slaughter made of their countrymen, perhaps without provocation, by these cruel intruders, and the general massacre with which that part of the world had been depopulated, might have raised in them a suspicion of all strangers, and by conse-

quence made them inhospitable, treacherous, and bloody.

The two who associated themselves with the English appeared much pleased with their new guests, received willingly what was given them, and very exactly observed every thing that passed, seeming more particularly delighted with seeing Oliver, the master-gunner, shoot an English arrow. They shot themselves likewise in emulation, but their arrows always fell to the ground far short of his.

Soon after this friendly contest came another, who observing the familiarity of his countrymen with the strangers, appeared much displeased, and, as the Englishmen perceived, endeavoured to dissuade them from such an intercourse. What effect his arguments had was soon after apparent, for another of Drake's companions, being desirous to show the third Indian a specimen of the English valour and dexterity, attempted likewise to shoot an arrow, but drawing it with his full force, burst the bow-string; upon which the Indians, who were unacquainted with their other weapons, imagined him disarmed, followed the company, as they were walking negligently down towards their boat, and let fly their arrows, aiming particularly at Winter, who had the bow in his hand. He, finding himself wounded in the shoulder, endeavoured to refit his bow, and turning about was pierced with a second arrow in the breast. Oliver, the gunner, immediately presented his piece at the insidious assailants, which failing to take fire gave them time to level another flight of arrows, by which he was killed; nor, perhaps, had any of them escaped, surprized and perplexed as they were, had not Drake, with his usual presence

presence of mind, animated their courage, and directed their motions, ordering them, by perpetually changing their places, to elude, as much as they could, the aim of their enemies, and to defend their bodies with their targets; and instructing them, by his own example, to pick up, and break the arrows as they fell; which they did with so much diligence, that the Indians were soon in danger of being disarmed. Then Drake himself taking the gun, which Oliver had so unsuccessfully attempted to make use of, discharged it at the Indian that first began the fray and had killed the gunner, aiming it so happily, that the hail shot, with which it was loaded, tore open his belly, and forced him to such terrible outcries, that the Indians, though their numbers increased, and many of their countrymen shewed themselves from different parts of the adjoining wood, were too much terrified to renew the assault, and suffered Drake, without molestation, to withdraw his wounded friend, who, being hurt in his lungs, languished two days, and then dying, was interred with his companion, with the usual ceremony of a military funeral.

They stayed here two months afterwards, without receiving any other injuries from the natives, who, finding the danger to which they exposed themselves by open hostilities, and not being able any more to surprize the vigilance of Drake, preferred their safety to revenge.

But Drake had other enemies to conquer or escape, far more formidable than these Barbarians, and insidious practices to obviate, more artful and dangerous than the ambushes of the Indians; for in this place

was laid open a design formed by one of the gentlemen of the fleet, not only to defeat the voyage, but to murder the general.

This transaction is related in so obscure and confused a manner, that it is difficult to form any judgment upon it. The writer, who gives the largest account of it, has suppressed the name of the criminal, which we learn, from a more succinct narrative, published in a collection of travels near that time, to have been Thomas Doughtie. What were his inducements to attempt the destruction of his leader, and the ruin of the expedition, or what were his views if his design had succeeded, what measures he had hitherto taken, whom he had endeavoured to corrupt, with what arts, or what success, we are no where told.

The plot, as the narrative assures us, was laid before their departure from England, and discovered, in its whole extent, to Drake himself in his garden at Plymouth, who, nevertheless, not only entertained the person so accused as one of his company, but, this writer very particularly relates, treated him with remarkable kindness and regard, setting him always at his own table, and lodging him in the same cabin with himself. Nor did he ever discover the least suspicion of his intentions, till they arrived at this place, but appeared, by the authority with which he invested him, to consider him, as one to whom, in his absence, he could most securely intrust the direction of his affairs. At length, in this remote corner of the world, he found out a design formed against his life, called together all his officers, laid before them the evidence on which he grounded the accusation, and summoned

summoned the criminal, who, full of all the horrors of guilt, and confounded at so clear a detection of his whole scheme, immediately confessed his crimes, and acknowledged himself unworthy of longer life: upon which the whole assembly, consisting of thirty persons, after having considered the affair with the attention which it required, and heard all that could be urged in extenuation of his offence, unanimously signed the sentence by which he was condemned to suffer death. Drake, however, unwilling, as it seemed, to proceed to extreme severities, offered him his choice, either of being executed on the island, or set ashore on the main land, or being sent to England to be tried before the council; of which, after a day's consideration, he chose the first, alledging the improbability of persuading any to leave the expedition for the sake of transporting a criminal to England, and the danger of his future state among savages and infidels. His choice, I believe, few will approve: to be set ashore on the main land, was indeed only to be executed in a different manner; for what mercy could be expected from the natives so incensed, but the most cruel and lingering death? But why he should not rather have requested to be sent to England, it is not easy to conceive. In so long a voyage he might have found a thousand opportunities of escaping, perhaps with the connivance of his keepers, whose resentment must probably in time have given way to compassion, or at least by their negligence, as it is easy to believe they would in times of ease and refreshment have remitted their vigilance: at least he would have gained longer life; and to make death desirable seems not one of the effects of guilt.

However,

However, he was, as it is related, obstinately deaf to all persuasions, and adhering to his first choice, after having received the communion, and dined cheerfully with the general, was executed in the afternoon with many proofs of remorse, but none of fear.

How far it is probable that Drake, after having been acquainted with this man's designs, should admit him into his fleet, and afterwards caress, respect, and trust him; or that Doughtie, who is represented as a man of eminent abilities, should engage in so long and hazardous a voyage with no other view than that of defeating it; is left to the determination of the reader. What designs he could have formed with any hope of success, or to what actions worthy of death he could have proceeded without accomplices, for none are mentioned, is equally difficult to imagine. Nor, on the other hand, though the obscurity of the account, and the remote place chosen for the discovery of this wicked project, seem to give some reason for suspicion, does there appear any temptation, from either hope, fear, or interest, that might induce Drake, or any commander in his state, to put to death an innocent man upon false pretences.

After the execution of this man, the whole company, either convinced of the justice of the proceeding, or awed by the severity, applied themselves, without any murmurs, or appearance of discontent, to the prosecution of the voyage; and, having broken up another vessel, and reduced the number of their ships to three, they left the port, and on August the 20th entered the Straits of Magellan, in which they struggled

struggled with contrary winds, and the various dangers to which the intricacy of that winding passage exposed them, till night, and then entered a more open sea, in which they discovered an island with a burning mountain. On the 24th they fell in with three more islands, to which Drake gave names, and, landing to take possession of them in the name of his Sovereign, found in the largest so prodigious a number of birds, that they killed three thousand of them in one day. This bird, of which they knew not the name, was somewhat less than a wild goose, without feathers, and covered with a kind of down, unable to fly or rise from the ground, but capable of running and swimming with amazing celerity; they feed on the sea, and come to land only to rest at night or lay their eggs, which they deposit in holes like those of coneys.

From these islands to the South-sea, the strait becomes very crooked and narrow, so that sometimes, by the interposition of headlands, the passage seems shut up, and the voyage entirely stopped. To double these capes is very difficult, on account of the frequent alterations to be made in the course. There are, indeed, as Magellan observes, many harbours, but in most of them no bottom is to be found.

The land on both sides rises into innumerable mountains: the tops of them are encircled with clouds and vapours, which being congealed fall down in snow, and increase their height by hardening into ice, which is never dissolved; but the valleys are, nevertheless, green, fruitful, and pleasant.

Here

Here Drake, finding the strait in appearance shut up, went in his boat to make farther discoveries, and, having found a passage towards the north, was returning to his ships; but curiosity soon prevailed upon him to stop, for the sake of observing a canoe or boat, with several natives of the country in it. He could not at a distance forbear admiring the form of this little vessel, which seemed inclining to a semicircle, the stern and prow standing up, and the body sinking inward; but much greater was his wonder, when, upon a nearer inspection, he found it made only of the barks of trees sewed together with thongs of seal-skin, so artificially that scarcely any water entered the seams. The people were well shaped and painted, like those which have been already described. On the land they had a hut built with poles and covered with skins, in which they had water-vessels and other utensils, made likewise of the barks of trees.

Among these people they had an opportunity of remarking, what is frequently observable in savage countries, how natural sagacity, and unwearied industry, may supply the want of such manufactures, or natural productions, as appear to us absolutely necessary for the support of life. The inhabitants of these islands are wholly strangers to iron and its use, but instead of it make use of the shell of a muscle of prodigious size, found upon their coasts; this they grind upon a stone to an edge, which is so firm and solid, that neither wood nor stone is able to resist it.

September 6, they entered the great South-sea, on which no English vessel had ever been navigated before,

fore, and proposed to have directed their course towards the line, that their men, who had suffered by the severity of the climate, might recover their strength in a warmer latitude. But their designs were scarce formed before they were frustrated; for on Sept. 7, after an eclipse of the moon, a storm arose, so violent, that it left them little hopes of surviving it; nor was its fury so dreadful as its continuance, for it lasted with little intermission till October 28, fifty-two days, during which time they were tossed incessantly from one part of the ocean to another, without any power of spreading their sails, or lying upon their anchors, amidst shelving shores, scattered rocks, and unknown islands, the tempest continually roaring, and the waves dashing over them.

In this storm, on the 30th of September, the Marigold, commanded by captain Thomas, was separated from them. On the 7th of October, having entered a harbour, where they hoped for some intermission of their fatigues, they were in a few hours forced out to sea by a violent gust, which broke the cable, at which time they lost sight of the Elizabeth, the vice-admiral, whose crew, as was afterwards discovered, wearied with labour, and discouraged by the prospect of future dangers, recovered the Straits on the next day, and, returning by the same passage through which they came, sailed along the coast of Brasil, and on the 2d of June, in the year following, arrived at England.

From this bay, they were driven southward to fifty-five degrees, where among some islands they stayed two days, to the great refreshment of the crew;

crew; but, being again forced into the main sea, they were tossed about with perpetual expectation of perishing, till, soon after, they again came to anchor near the same place, where they found the natives, whom the continuance of the storm had probably reduced to equal distress, rowing from one island to another, and providing the necessaries of life.

It is, perhaps, a just observation, that, with regard to outward circumstances, happiness and misery are equally diffused through all states of human life. In civilized countries, where regular policies have secured the necessaries of life, ambition, avarice, and luxury, find the mind at leisure for their reception, and soon engage it in new pursuits; pursuits that are to be carried on by incessant labour, and whether vain or successful, produce anxiety and contention. Among savage nations, imaginary wants find indeed no place; but their strength is exhausted by necessary toils, and their passions agitated not by contests about superiority, affluence, or precedence, but by perpetual care for the present day, and by fear of perishing for want of food.

But for such reflections as these they had no time; for, having spent three days in supplying themselves with wood and water, they were by a new storm driven to the latitude of fifty-six degrees, where they beheld the extremities of the American coast, and the confluence of the Atlantic and southern ocean.

Here they arrived on the 28th of October, and at last were blessed with the sight of a calm sea, having for almost two months endured such a storm as no traveller has given an account of, and such as in that

that part of the world, though accustomed to hurricanes, they were before unacquainted with.

On the 30th of October they steered away towards the place appointed for the rendezvous of the fleet, which was in thirty degrees, and on the next day discovered two islands so well stocked with fowls, that they victualled their ships with them, and then sailed forwards along the coast of Peru till they came to thirty-seven degrees, where finding neither of their ships, nor any convenient port, they came to anchor, November the 25th, at Mucho, an island inhabited by such Indians as the cruelty of the Spanish conquerors had driven from the continent, to whom they applied for water and provisions, offering them in return such things as they imagined most likely to please them. The Indians seemed willing to traffick, and having presented them with fruits, and two fat sheep, would have shewed them a place whither they should come for water.

The next morning, according to agreement, the English landed with their water-vessels, and sent two men forward towards the place appointed, who, about the middle of the way, were suddenly attacked by the Indians and immediately slain. Nor were the rest of the company out of danger; for behind the rocks was lodged an ambush of five hundred men, who, starting up from their retreat, discharged their arrows into the boat with such dexterity, that every one of the crew was wounded by them, the sea being then high, and hindering them from either retiring or making use of their weapons. Drake himself received an arrow under his eye, which pierced him almost to the brain, and another in his head. The

danger

danger of these wounds was much increased by the absence of their surgeon, who was in the vice-admiral, so that they had none to assist them but a boy, whose age did not admit of much experience or skill; yet so much were they favoured by Providence, that they all recovered.

No reason could be assigned for which the Indians should attack them with so furious a spirit of malignity, but that they mistook them for Spaniards, whose cruelties might very reasonably incite them to revenge, whom they had driven by incessant persecution from their country, wasting immense tracks of land by massacre and devastation.

On the afternoon of the same day, they set sail, and on the 30th of November dropped anchor in Philips bay, where their boat having been sent out to discover the country, returned with an Indian in his canoe, whom they had intercepted. He was of a graceful stature, dressed in a white coat or gown, reaching almost to his knees, very mild, humble, and docile, such as perhaps were all the Indians, till the Spaniards taught them revenge, treachery, and cruelty.

This Indian, having been kindly treated, was dismissed with presents, and informed, as far as the English could make him understand, what they chiefly wanted, and what they were willing to give in return; Drake ordering his boat to attend him in his canoe, and to set him safe on the land.

When he was ashore, he directed them to wait till his return, and, meeting some of his countrymen, gave them such an account of his reception, that, within a few hours, several of them repaired with him to the boat

boat with fowls, eggs, and a hog, and with them one of their captains, who willingly came into the boat, and desired to be conveyed by the English to their ship.

By this man Drake was informed, that no supplies were to be expected here; but that southward, in a place to which he offered to be his pilot, there was great plenty. This proposal was accepted, and on the 5th of December, under the direction of the good-natured Indian, they came to anchor in the harbour called, by the Spaniards, Valperizo, near the town of St. James of Chiuli, where they met not only with sufficient stores of provision, and with store-houses full of the wines of Chili, but with a ship called the Captain of Morial, richly laden, having, together with large quantities of the same wines, some of the fine gold of Baldivia, and a great cross of gold set with emeralds.

Having spent three days in storing their ships with all kinds of provision in the utmost plenty, they departed, and landed their Indian pilot where they first received him, after having rewarded him much above his expectations or desires.

They had now little other anxiety than for their friends who had been separated from them, and whom they now determined to seek; but considering that, by entering every creek and harbour with their ship, they exposed themselves to unnecessary dangers, and that their boat would not contain such a number as might defend themselves against the Spaniards, they determined to station their ship at some place, where they might commodiously build a pinnace, which, being of light burden, might easily sail where

the

the ship was in danger of being stranded, and at the same time might carry a sufficient force to resist the enemy, and afford better accommodation than could be expected in the boat.

To this end, on the 19th of December, they entered a bay near Cippo, a town inhabited by Spaniards, who, discovering them, immediately issued out, to the number of an hundred horsemen, with about two hundred naked Indians running by their sides. The English, observing their approach, retired to their boat without any loss, except of one man, whom no persuasions or entreaties could move to retire with the rest, and who, therefore, was shot by the Spaniards, who, exulting at the victory, commanded the Indians to draw the dead carcase from the rock on which he fell, and in the sight of the English beheaded it, then cut off the right hand, and tore out the heart, which they carried away, having first commanded the Indians to shoot their arrows all over the body. The arrows of the Indians were made of green wood for the immediate service of the day; the Spaniards, with the fear that always harasses oppressors, forbidding them to have any weapons, when they do not want their present assistance.

Leaving this place, they soon found a harbour more secure and convenient, where they built their pinnace, in which Drake went to seek his companions, but, finding the wind contrary, he was obliged to return in two days.

Leaving this place soon after, they sailed along the coast in search of fresh water, and, landing at Turapaca, they found a Spaniard asleep, with silver bars lying by him to the value of three thousand ducats; not

not all the insults which they had received from his countrymen could provoke them to offer any violence to his person, and therefore they carried away his treasure, without doing him any farther harm.

Landing in another place, they found a Spaniard driving eight Peruvian sheep, which are the beasts of burthen in that country, each laden with an hundred pounds weight of silver, which they seized likewise, and drove to their boats.

Further along the coast lay some Indian towns from which the inhabitants repaired to the ship, on floats made of seal-skins, blown full of wind, two of which they fasten together, and, sitting between them, row with great swiftness, and carry considerable burthens. They very readily traded for glass and such trifles, with which the old and the young seemed equally delighted.

Arriving at Mormorena on the 26th of January, Drake invited the Spaniards to traffick with him, which they agreed to, and supplied him with necessaries, selling to him, among other provisions, some of those sheep which have been mentioned, whose bulk is equal to that of a cow, and whose strength is such that one of them can carry three tall men upon his back; their necks are like a camel's, and their heads like those of our sheep. They are the most useful animals of this country, not only affording excellent fleeces and wholesome flesh, but serving as carriages over rocks and mountains where no other beast can travel, for their foot is of a peculiar form, which enables them to tread firm in the most steep and slippery places.

On

On all this coast, the whole soil is so impregnated with silver, that five ounces may be separated from an hundred pound weight of common earth.

Still coasting, in hopes of meeting their friends, they anchored on the 7th of February before Aria, where they took two barks with about eight hundred pound weight of silver, and, pursuing their course, seized another vessel laden with linens.

On the 15th of February 1578, they arrived at Lima, and entered the harbour without resistance, though thirty ships were stationed there, of which seventeen were equipped for their voyage, and many of them are represented in the narrative as vessels of considerable force; so that their security seems to have consisted, not in their strength, but in their reputation, which had so intimidated the Spaniards, that the sight of their own superiority could not rouse them to opposition. Instances of such panick terrors are to be met with in other relations; but as they are, for the most part, quickly dissipated by reason and reflection, a wise commander will rarely found his hopes of success on them; and, perhaps, on this occasion, the Spaniards scarcely deserve a severer censure for their cowardice, than Drake for his temerity.

In one of these ships they found fifteen hundred bars of silver; in another a chest of money; and very rich lading in many of the rest, of which the Spaniards tamely suffered them to carry the most valuable part away, and would have permitted them no less peaceably to burn their ships; but Drake never made war with a spirit of cruelty or revenge,

or

or carried hostilities further than was necessary for his own advantage or defence.

They set sail the next morning towards Panama, in quest of the Caca Fuego, a very rich ship, which had sailed fourteen days before, bound thither from Lima, which they overtook on the first of March, near Cape Francisco, and, boarding it, found not only a quantity of jewels, and twelve chests of ryals of plate, but eighty pounds weight of gold, and twenty-six tons of uncoined silver, with pieces of wrought plate to a great value. In unlading this prize they spent six days, and then, dismissing the Spaniards, stood off to sea.

Being now sufficiently enriched, and having lost all hopes of finding their associates, and perhaps beginning to be infected with that desire of ease and pleasure which is the natural consequence of wealth obtained by dangers and fatigues, they began to consult about their return home, and, in pursuance of Drake's advice, resolved first to find out some convenient harbour, where they might supply themselves with wood and water, and then endeavour to discover a passage from the South-sea into the Atlantic ocean; a discovery which would not only enable them to return home with less danger, and in a shorter time, but would much facilitate the navigation in those parts of the world.

For this purpose they had recourse to a port in the island of Caines, where they met with fish, wood, and fresh water, and in their course took a ship laden with silk and linen, which was the last that they met with on the coast of America.

But being desirous of storing themselves for a long course, they touched, April the 15th, at Guatulco, a Spanish island, where they supplied themselves with provisions, and seized a bushel of ryals of silver.

From Guatulco, which lies in 15 deg. 40 min. they stood out to sea, and, without approaching any land, sailed forward, till on the night following, the 3d of June, being then in the latitude of 38 degrees, they were suddenly benumbed with such cold blasts, that they were scarcely able to handle the ropes. This cold increased upon them, as they proceeded, to such a degree, that the sailors were discouraged from mounting upon the deck; nor were the effects of the climate to be imputed to the warmth of the regions to which they had been lately accustomed, for the ropes were stiff with frost, and the meat could scarcely be conveyed warm to the table.

On June 17th they came to anchor in 38 deg. 30 min. when they saw the land naked, and the trees without leaves, and in a short time had opportunities of observing that the natives of that country were not less sensible of the cold than themselves; for the next day came a man rowing in his canoe towards the ship, and at a distance from it made a long oration, with very extraordinary gesticulations, and great appearance of vehemence, and a little time afterwards made a second visit in the same manner, and then returning a third time, he presented them, after his harangue was finished, with a kind of crown of black feathers, such as their kings wear upon their heads, and a basket of rushes filled with a particular herb, both which he fastened to a short stick, and threw into

into the boat; nor could he be prevailed upon to receive any thing in return, though pushed towards him upon a board; only he took up a hat which was flung into the water.

Three days afterwards, their ship, having received some damage at sea, was brought nearer to land, that the lading might be taken out. In order to which, the English, who had now learned not too negligently to commit their lives to the mercy of savage nations, raised a kind of fortification with stones, and built their tents within it. All this was not beheld by the inhabitants without the utmost astonishment, which incited them to come down in crowds to the coast, with no other view, as it appeared, than to worship the new divinities that had condescended to touch upon their country.

Drake was far from countenancing their errors, or taking advantage of their weakness to injure or molest them; and therefore, having directed them to lay aside their bows and arrows, he presented them with linen, and other necessaries, of which he shewed them the use. They then returned to their habitations, about three quarters of a mile from the English camp, where they made such loud and violent outcries, that they were heard by the English, who found that they still persisted in their first notions, and were paying them their kind of melancholy adoration.

Two days afterwards they perceived the approach of a far more numerous company, who stopped at the top of a hill which overlooked the English settlement, while one of them made a long oration, at the end of which all the assembly bowed their bodies, and pro-

nounced the syllable *Oh* with a solemn tone, as by way of confirmation of what had been said by the orator. Then the men, laying down their bows, and leaving the women and children on the top of the hill, came down towards the tents, and seemed transported in the highest degree at the kindness of the general, who received their gifts, and admitted them to his presence. The women at a distance appeared seized with a kind of frenzy, such as that of old among the Pagans in some of their religious ceremonies, and in honour, as it seemed, of their guests, tore their cheeks and bosoms with their nails, and threw themselves upon the stones with their naked bodies till they were covered with blood.

These cruel rites, and mistaken honours, were by no means agreeable to Drake, whose predominant sentiments were notions of piety, and, therefore, not to make that criminal in himself by his concurrence, which, perhaps, ignorance might make guiltless in them, he ordered his whole company to fall upon their knees, and, with their eyes lifted up to heaven, that the savages might observe that their worship was addressed to a Being residing there, they all joined in praying that this harmless and deluded people might be brought to the knowledge of the true religion, and the doctrines of our blessed Saviour; after which they sung psalms, a performance so pleasing to their wild audience, that in all their visits they generally first accosted them with a request that they would sing. They then returned all the presents which they had received, and retired.

Three days after this, on June 25, 1579, our general received two ambassadors from the Hioh, or king

king of the country, who, intending to visit the camp, required that some token might be sent him of friendship and peace; this request was readily complied with, and soon after came the king, attended by a guard of about an hundred tall men, and preceded by an officer of state, who carried a sceptre made of black wood, adorned with chains of a kind of bone or horn, which are marks of the highest honour among them, and having two crowns, made as before, with feathers fastened to it, with a bag of the same herb which was presented to Drake at his first arrival.

Behind him was the king himself, dressed in a coat of coney-skins, with a cawl woven with feathers upon his head, an ornament so much in estimation there, that none but the domestics of the king are allowed to wear it; his attendants followed him, adorned nearly in the same manner; and after them came the common people, with baskets plaited so artificially that they held water, in which, by way of sacrifice, they brought roots and fish.

Drake, not lulled into security, ranged his men in order of battle, and waited their approach, who coming nearer stood still while the sceptre-bearer made an oration, at the conclusion of which they again came forward to the foot of the hill, and then the sceptre-bearer began a song, which he accompanied with a dance, in both which the men joined, but the women danced without singing.

Drake now, distrusting them no longer, admitted them into his fortification, where they continued their song and dance a short time; and then both the king, and some others of the company, made long harangues, in which it appeared, by the rest of their behaviour,

behaviour, that they entreated him to accept of their country, and to take the government of it into his own hands; for the king, with the apparent concurrence of the rest, placed the crown upon his head, graced him with the chains and other signs of authority, and saluted him by the title of Hioh.

The kingdom thus offered, though of no farther value to him than as it furnished him with present necessaries, Drake thought it not prudent to refuse; and therefore took possession of it in the name of Queen Elizabeth, not without ardent wishes that this acquisition might have been of use to his native country, and that so mild and innocent a people might have been united to the church of Christ.

The kingdom being thus consigned, and the grand affair at an end, the common people left their king and his domesticks with Drake, and dispersed themselves over the camp; and when they saw any one that pleased them by his appearance more than the rest, they tore their flesh, and vented their outcries as before, in token of reverence and admiration.

They then proceeded to show them their wounds and diseases, in hopes of a miraculous and instantaneous cure; to which the English, to benefit and undeceive them at the same time, applied such remedies as they used on the like occasions.

They were now grown confident and familiar, and came down to the camp every day repeating their ceremonies and sacrifices, till they were more fully informed how disagreeable they were to those whose favour they were so studious of obtaining: they then visited them without adoration indeed, but with a curiosity

curiosity so ardent, that it left them no leisure to provide the necessaries of life, with which the English were therefore obliged to supply them.

They had then sufficient opportunity to remark the customs and dispositions of these new allies, whom they found tractable and benevolent, strong of body, far beyond the English, yet unfurnished with weapons, either for assault or defence, their bows being too weak for any thing but sport. Their dexterity in taking fish was such, that, if they saw them so near the shore that they could come to them without swimming, they never missed them.

The same curiosity that had brought them in such crowds to the shore, now induced Drake, and some of his company, to travel up into the country, which they found, at some distance from the coast, very fruitful, filled with large deer, and abounding with a peculiar kind of coneys, smaller than ours, with tails like that of a rat, and paws such as those of a mole; they have bags under their chin, in which they carry provisions to their young.

The houses of the inhabitants are round holes dug in the ground, from the brink of which they raise rafters, or piles shelving towards the middle, where they all meet, and are crammed together; they lie upon rushes, with the fire in the midst, and let the smoke fly out at the door.

The men are generally naked; but the women make a kind of petticoat of bulrushes, which they comb like hemp, and throw the skin of a deer over their shoulders. They are very modest, tractable, and obedient to their husbands.

Such

Such is the condition of this people; and not very different is, perhaps, the state of the greatest part of mankind. Whether more enlightened nations ought to look upon them with pity, as less happy than themselves, some sceptics have made, very unnecessarily, a difficulty of determining. More, they say, is lost by the perplexities than gained by the instruction of science; we enlarge our vices with our knowledge, and multiply our wants with our attainments, and the happiness of life is better secured by the ignorance of vice than by the knowledge of virtue.

The fallacy by which such reasoners have imposed upon themselves, seems to arise from the comparison which they make, not between two men equally inclined to apply the means of happiness in their power to the end for which Providence conferred them, but furnished in unequal proportions with the means of happiness, which is the true state of savage and polished nations, but between two men, of which he to whom Providence has been most bountiful destroys the blessings by negligence or obstinate misuse; while the other, steady, diligent, and virtuous, employs his abilities and conveniencies to their proper end. The question is not, Whether a good Indian or bad Englishman be most happy? but, Which state is most desirable, supposing virtue and reason the same in both?

Nor is this the only mistake which is generally admitted in this controversy, for these reasoners frequently confound innocence with the mere incapacity of guilt. He that never saw, or heard, or thought of strong liquors, cannot be proposed as a pattern of sobriety.

This

This land was named, by Drake, Albion, from its white cliffs, in which it bore some resemblance to his native country; and the whole history of the resignation of it to the English was engraven on a piece of brass, then nailed on a post, and fixed up before their departure, which being now discovered by the people to be near at hand, they could not forbear perpetual lamentations. When the English on the 23d of July weighed anchor, they saw them climbing to the tops of hills, that they might keep them in sight, and observed fires lighted up in many parts of the country, on which, as they supposed, sacrifices were offered.

Near this harbour they touched at some islands, where they found great numbers of seals; and, despairing now to find any passage through the northern parts, he, after a general consultation, determined to steer away to the Moluccas, and setting sail July 25th, he sailed for sixty-eight days without sight of land; and on September 30th arrived within view of some islands, situate about eight degrees northward from the line, from whence the inhabitants resorted to them in canoes, hollowed out of the solid trunk of a tree, and raised at both ends so high above the water, that they seemed almost a semicircle; they were burnished in such a manner that they shone like ebony, and were kept steady by a piece of timber, fixed on each side of them, with strong canes, that were fastened at one end to the boat, and at the other to the end of the timber.

The first company that came brought fruits, potatoes, and other things of no great value, with an appearance of traffick, and exchanged their lading for other

other commodities, with great shew of honesty and friendship; but having, as they imagined, laid all suspicion asleep, they soon sent another fleet of canoes, of which the crews behaved with all the insolence of tyrants, and all the rapacity of thieves; for, whatever was suffered to come into their hands, they seemed to consider as their own, and would neither pay for it nor restore it; and at length, finding the English resolved to admit them no longer, they discharged a shower of stones from their boats, which insult Drake prudently and generously returned by ordering a piece of ordnance to be fired without hurting them, at which they were so terrified, that they leaped into the water, and hid themselves under the canoes.

Having for some time but little wind, they did not arrive at the Moluccas till the 3d of November, and then, designing to touch at Tidore, they were visited, as they sailed by a little island belonging to the king of Ternate, by the viceroy of the place, who informed them, that it would be more advantageous for them to have recourse to his master for supplies and assistance than to the king of Ternab, who was in some degree dependant on the Portuguese, and that he would himself carry the news of their arrival, and prepare their reception.

Drake was by the arguments of the viceroy prevailed upon to alter his resolution, and, on November 5, cast anchor before Ternate; and scarce was he arrived, before the viceroy, with others of the chief nobles, came out in three large boats, rowed by forty men on each side, to conduct the

ship

ship into a safe harbour; and soon after the king himself, having received a velvet cloak by a messenger from Drake, as a token of peace, came with such a retinue and dignity of appearance as was not expected in those remote parts of the world. He was received with discharges of cannons and every kind of musick, with which he was so much delighted, that, desiring the musicians to come down into the boat, he was towed along in it at the stern of the ship.

The king was of a graceful stature, and regal carriage, of a mild aspect, and low voice; his attendants were dressed in white cotton or callicoe, of whom some, whose age gave them a venerable appearance, seemed his counsellors, and the rest officers or nobles; his guards were not ignorant of fire-arms, but had not many among them, being equipped for the most part with bows and darts.

The king, having spent some time in admiring the multitude of new objects that presented themselves, retired as soon as the ship was brought to anchor, and promised to return on the day following; and in the mean time the inhabitants, having leave to traffick, brought down provisions in great abundance.

At the time when the king was expected, his brother came aboard, to request of Drake that he would come to the castle, proposing to stay himself as a hostage for his return. Drake refused to go, but sent some gentlemen, detaining the king's brother in the mean time.

These gentlemen were received by another of the king's brothers, who conducted them to the council-

council-house near the castle, in which they were directed to walk: there they found threescore old men, privy counsellors to the king, and on each side of the door without stood four old men of foreign countries, who served as interpreters in commerce.

In a short time the king came from the castle, dressed in cloth of gold, with his hair woven into gold rings, a chain of gold upon his neck, and on his hands rings very artificially set with diamonds and jewels of great value; over his head was borne a rich canopy; and by his chair of state on which he sat down when he had entered the house, stood a page with a fan set with sapphires, to moderate the excess of the heat. Here he received the compliments of the English, and then honourably dismissed them.

The castle, which they had some opportunity of observing, seemed of no great force; it was built by the Portuguese, who, attempting to reduce this kingdom into an absolute subjection, murdered the king, and intended to pursue their scheme by the destruction of all his sons; but the general abhorrence, which cruelty and perfidy naturally excite, armed all the nation against them, and procured their total expulsion from all the dominions of Ternate, which from that time increasing in power, continued to make new conquests, and to deprive them of other acquisitions.

While they lay before Ternate, a gentleman came on board attended by his interpreter. He was dressed somewhat in the European manner, and soon distinguished himself from the natives of Ternate,

nate, or any other country that they had seen, by civility and apprehension. Such a visitant may easily be imagined to excite their curiosity, which he gratified by informing them that he was a native of China, of the family of the king then reigning; and that being accused of a capital crime, of which, though he was innocent, he had not evidence to clear himself, he had petitioned the king that he might not be exposed to a trial, but that his cause might be referred to Divine Providence, and that he might be allowed to leave his country, with a prohibition against returning, unless Heaven, in attestation of his innocence, should enable him to bring back to the king some intelligence that might be to the honour and advantage of the empire of China. In search of such information he had now spent three years, and had left Tidore for the sake of conversing with the English general, from whom he hoped to receive such accounts as would enable him to return with honour and safety.

Drake willingly recounted all his adventures and observations, to which the Chinese exile listened with the utmost attention and delight, and, having fixed them in his mind, thanked God for the knowledge he had gained. He then proposed to the English general to conduct him to China, recounting, by way of invitation, the wealth, extent, and felicity of that empire; but Drake could not be induced to prolong his voyage.

He therefore set sail on the 9th of November in quest of some convenient harbour, in a desert island, to refit his ship, not being willing, as it seems, to trust the generosity of the king of Ternate. Five days

days afterwards he found a very commodious harbour in an island overgrown with wood, where he repaired his vessel and refreshed his men without danger or interruption.

Leaving this place the 12th of December, they sailed towards the Celebes; but, having a wind not very favourable, they were detained among a multitude of islands, mingled with dangerous shallows, till January 9, 1580. When they thought themselves clear, and were sailing forwards with a strong gale, they were at the beginning of the night surprised in their course by a sudden shock, of which the cause was easily discovered, for they were thrown upon a shoal, and by the speed of their course fixed too fast for any hope of escaping. Here even the intrepidity of Drake was shaken, and his dexterity baffled; but his piety, however, remained still the same, and what he could not now promise himself from his own ability, he hoped from the assistance of Providence. The pump was plied, and the ship found free from new leaks.

The next attempt was to discover towards the sea some place where they might fix their boat, and from thence drag the ship into deep water; but upon examination it appeared that the rock, on which they had struck, rose perpendicularly from the water, and that there was no anchorage, nor any bottom to be found a boat's length from the ship. But this discovery, with its consequences, was by Drake wisely concealed from the common sailors, lest they should abandon themselves to despair, for which there was, indeed, cause; there being no prospect left but that they must there sink with the ship, which must

must undoubtedly be soon dashed to pieces, or perish in attempting to reach the shore in their boat, or be cut in pieces by barbarians if they should arrive at land.

In the midst of this perplexity and distress, Drake directed that the sacrament should be administered, and his men fortified with all the consolation which religion affords; then persuaded them to lighten the vessel by throwing into the sea part of their lading, which was cheerfully complied with, but without effect. At length, when their hopes had forsaken them, and no new struggles could be made, they were on a sudden relieved by a remission of the wind, which, having hitherto blown strongly against the side of the ship which lay towards the sea, held it upright against the rock; but when the blast slackened (being then low water) the ship lying higher with that part which rested on the rock than with the other, and being borne up no longer by the wind, reeled into the deep water, to the surprise and joy of Drake and his companions.

This was the greatest and most inextricable distress which they had ever suffered, and made such an impression upon their minds, that for some time afterwards they durst not adventure to spread their sails, but went slowly forward with the utmost circumspection.

They thus continued their course without any observable occurrence, till on the 11th of March they came to an anchor before the island of Java, and, sending to the king a present of cloth and silks, received from him, in return, a large quantity

tity of provisions; and the day following Drake went himself on shore, and entertained the king with his musick, and obtained leave to store his ship with provisions.

The island is governed by a great number of petty kings, or raias, subordinate to one chief; of these princes three came on board together a few days after their arrival; and, having upon their return recounted the wonders which they had seen, and the civility with which they had been treated, incited others to satisfy their curiosity in the same manner; and raia Donan, the chief king, came himself to view the ship, with the warlike armaments and instruments of navigation.

This intercourse of civilities somewhat retarded the business for which they came; but at length they not only victualled their ship, but cleansed the bottom, which, in the long course, was overgrown with a kind of shell-fish that impeded her passage.

Leaving Java on March 26, they sailed homewards by the Cape of Good Hope, which they saw on June the 5th; on the 15th of August passed the Tropic; and on the 26th of September arrived at Plymouth, where they found that, by passing through so many different climates, they had lost a day in their account of time, it being Sunday by their journal, but Monday by the general computation.

In this hazardous voyage they had spent two years, ten months, and some odd days; but were recompensed for their toils by great riches, and the universal

universal applause of their countrymen. Drake afterwards brought his ship up to Deptford, where queen Elizabeth visited him on board his ship, and conferred the honour of knighthood upon him; an honour in that illustrious reign not made cheap by prostitution, nor even bestowed without uncommon merit.

It is not necessary to give an account equally particular of the remaining part of his life, as he was no longer a private man, but engaged in publick affairs, and associated in his expeditions with other generals, whose attempts, and the success of them, are related in the histories of those times.

In 1585, on the 12th of September, Sir Francis Drake set sail from Plymouth with a fleet of five and twenty ships and pinnaces, of which himself was admiral, Captain Martin Forbisher vice-admiral, and Captain Francis Knollis rear-admiral: they were fitted out to cruize upon the Spaniards; and having touched at the isle of Bayonne, and plundered Vigo, put to sea again, and on the 16th of November arrived before St. Jago, which they entered without resistance, and rested there fourteen days, visiting in the mean time San Domingo, a town within the land, which they found likewise deserted; and, carrying off what they pleased of the produce of the island, they at their departure destroyed the town and villages, in revenge of the murder of one of their boys, whose body they found mangled in a most inhuman manner.

From this island they pursued their voyage to the West-Indies, determining to attack St. Domingo, in Hispaniola, as the richest place in that part of the

world: they therefore landed a thousand men, and with small loss entered the town, of which they kept possession for a month without interruption or alarm; during which time a remarkable accident happened, which deserves to be related.

Drake, having some intention of treating with the Spaniards, sent to them a negro-boy with a flag of truce, which one of the Spaniards so little regarded, that he stabbed him through the body with a lance. The boy, notwithstanding his wound, came back to the general, related the treatment which he had found, and died in his sight. Drake was so incensed at this outrage, that he ordered two friars, then his prisoners, to be conveyed with a guard to the place where the crime was committed, and hanged up in the sight of the Spaniards, declaring that two Spanish prisoners should undergo the same death every day, till the offender should be delivered up by them: they were too well acquainted with the character of Drake not to bring him on the day following, when, to impress the shame of such actions more effectually upon them, he compelled them to execute him with their own hands. Of this town, at their departure, they demolished part, and admitted the rest to be ransomed for five and twenty thousand ducats.

From thence they sailed to Carthagena, where the enemy having received intelligence of the fate of St. Domingo, had strengthened their fortifications, and prepared to defend themselves with great obstinacy; but the English, landing in the night, came upon them by a way which they did not suspect, and being

being better armed, partly by surprize, and partly by superiority of order and valour, became masters of the place, where they stayed without fear or danger six weeks, and at their departure received an hundred and ten thousand ducats, for the ransom of the town.

They afterwards took St. Augustin, and touching at Virginia, took on board the governor, Mr. Lane, with the English that had been left there the year before by Sir Walter Raleigh, and arrived at Portsmouth on July 28, 1586, having lost in the voyage seven hundred and fifty men. The gain of this expedition amounted to sixty thousand pounds, of which forty were the share of the adventurers who fitted out the ships, and the rest, distributed among the several crews, amounted to six pounds each man. So cheaply is life sometimes hazarded.

The transactions against the Armada, 1588, are in themselves far more memorable, but less necessary to be recited in this succinct narrative; only let it be remembered, that the post of vice-admiral of England, to which Sir Francis Drake was then raised, is a sufficient proof, that no obscurity of birth, or meanness of fortune, is unsurmountable to bravery and diligence.

In 1595 Sir Francis Drake and Sir John Hawkins were sent with a fleet to the West Indies, which expedition was only memorable for the destruction of Nombre de Dios, and the death of the two commanders, of whom Sir Francis Drake died January 9, 1597, and was thrown into the sea in a leaden coffin, with all the pomp of naval obsequies. It is reported

by some that the ill success of this voyage hastened his death. Upon what this conjecture is grounded does not appear; and we may be allowed to hope, for the honour of so great a man, that it is without foundation; and that he, whom no series of success could ever betray to vanity or negligence, could have supported a change of fortune without impatience or dejection.

BARRETIER*.

HAVING not been able to procure materials for a complete life of Mr. Barretier, and being nevertheless willing to gratify the curiosity justly raised in the publick by his uncommon attainments, we think the following extracts of letters, written by his father, proper to be inserted in our collection, as they contain many remarkable passages, and exhibit a general view of his genius and learning.

JOHN PHILIP BARRETIER was born at Schwabach, January 19, 1720-21. His father was a Calvinist minister of that place, who took upon himself the care of his education. What arts of instruction he used, or by what method he regulated the studies of his son, we are not able to inform the publick; but take this opportunity of intreating those, who have received more complete intelligence, not to deny mankind so great a benefit as the improvement of education. If Mr. Le Fevre thought the method in which he taught his children, worthy to be communicated to the learned world, how justly may Mr. Barretier claim the universal attention of mankind

* This article was first printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for 1740. N.

to

to a scheme of education that has produced such a stupendous progress! The authors, who have endeavoured to teach certain and unfailing rules for obtaining a long life, however they have failed in their attempts, are universally confessed to have, at least, the merit of a great and noble design, and to have deserved gratitude and honour. How much more then is due to Mr. Barretier, who has succeeded in what they have only attempted? for to prolong life, and improve it, are nearly the same. If to have all that riches can purchase, is to be rich; if to do all that can be done in a long time, is to live long; he is equally a benefactor to mankind, who teaches them to protract the duration, or shorten the business of life.

That there are few things more worthy our curiosity than this method, by which the father assisted the genius of the son, every man will be convinced, that considers the early proficiency at which it enabled him to arrive; such a proficiency as no one has yet reached at the same age, and to which it is therefore probable that every advantageous circumstance concurred.

At the age of nine years, he not only was master of five languages, an attainment in itself almost incredible, but understood, says his father, the holy writers, better in their original tongues, than in his own. If he means by this assertion, that he knew the sense of many passages in the original, which were obscure in the translation, the account, however wonderful, may be admitted; but if he intends to tell his correspondent, that his son was better acquainted with the two languages of the Bible, than

with

with his own, he must be allowed to speak hyperbolically, or to admit that his son had somewhat neglected the study of his native language; or we must own, that the fondness of a parent has transported him into some natural exaggerations.

Part of this letter I am tempted to suppress, being unwilling to demand the belief of others to that which appears incredible to myself; but as my incredulity may, perhaps, be the product rather of prejudice than reason, as envy may beget a disinclination to admit so immense a superiority, and as an account is not to be immediately censured as false, merely because it is wonderful, I shall proceed to give the rest of his father's relation, from his letter of the 3d of March 1729-30. He speaks, continues he, German, Latin, and French, equally well. He can, by laying before him a translation, read any of the books of the Old or New Testament in its original language, without hesitation or perplexity. He is no stranger to biblical criticism or philosophy, nor unacquainted with ancient and modern geography, and is qualified to support a conversation with learned men, who frequently visit and correspond with him.

In his eleventh year, he not only published a learned letter in Latin, but translated the travels of Rabbi Benjamin from the Hebrew into French, which he illustrated with notes, and accompanied with dissertations; a work in which his father, as he himself declares, could give him little assistance, as he did not understand the rabbinical dialect.

The reason, for which his father engaged him in this work, was only to prevail upon him to write a fairer hand than he had hitherto accustomed himself

to

to do, by giving him hopes, that, if he should translate some little author, and offer a fair copy of his version to some bookseller, he might, in return for it, have other books which he wanted and could not afford to purchase.

Incited by this expectation, he fixed upon the "Travels of Rabbi Benjamin," as most proper for his purpose, being a book neither bulky nor common, and in one month completed his translation, applying only one or two hours a day to that particular task. In another month, he drew up the principal notes; and, in the third, wrote some dissertations upon particular passages which seemed to require a larger examination.

These notes contain so many curious remarks and enquiries, out of the common road of learning, and afford so many instances of penetration, judgment, and accuracy, that the reader finds in every page some reason to persuade him that they cannot possibly be the work of a child, but of a man long accustomed to these studies, enlightened by reflection, and dextrous by long practice in the use of books. Yet, that it is the performance of a boy thus young, is not only proved by the testimony of his father, but by the concurrent evidence of Mr. Le Maitre, his associate in the church of Schwabach, who not only asserts his claim to this work, but affirms that he heard him at six years of age explain the Hebrew text as if it had been his native language; so that the fact is not to be doubted without a degree of incredulity, which it will not be very easy to defend.

This copy was however far from being written with the neatness which his father desired; nor did the

the booksellers, to whom it was offered, make proposals very agreeable to the expectations of the young translator; but after having examined the performance in their manner, and determined to print it upon conditions not very advantageous, returned it to be transcribed, that the printers might not be embarrassed with a copy so difficult to read.

Barretier was now advanced to the latter end of his twelfth year, and had made great advances in his studies, notwithstanding an obstinate tumour in his left hand, which gave him great pain, and obliged him to a tedious and troublesome method of cure; and reading over his performance, was so far from contenting himself with barely transcribing it, that he altered the greatest part of the notes, new-modelled the dissertations, and augmented the book to twice its former bulk.

The few touches which his father bestowed upon the revisal of the book, though they are minutely set down by him in the preface, are so inconsiderable that it is not necessary to mention them; and it may be much more agreeable, as well as useful, to exhibit the short account which he there gives of the method by which he enabled his son to shew so early how easy an attainment is the knowledge of the languages, a knowledge which some men spend their lives in cultivating, to the neglect of more valuable studies, and which they seem to regard as the highest perfection of human nature.

What applauses are due to an old age, wasted in a scrupulous attention to particular accents and etymologies, may appear, says his father, by seeing how little time is required to arrive at such an eminence

nence in these studies as many even of these venerable doctors have not attained, for want of rational methods and regular application.

This censure is doubtless just upon those who spend too much of their lives upon useless niceties, or who appear to labour without making any progress; but as the knowledge of language is necessary, and a minute accuracy sometimes requisite, they are by no means to be blamed, who, in compliance with the particular bent of their own minds, make the difficulties of dead languages their chief study, and arrive at excellence proportionate to their application, since it was to the labour of such men that his son was indebted for his own learning.

The first languages which Barretier learned were the French, German, and Latin, which he was taught not in the common way by a multitude of definitions, rules, and exceptions, which fatigue the attention and burthen the memory, without any use proportionate to the time which they require, and the disgust which they create. The method by which he was instructed was easy and expeditious, and therefore pleasing. He learned them all in the same manner, and almost at the same time, by conversing in them indifferently with his father.

The other languages of which he was master, he learned by a method yet more uncommon. The only book which he made use of was the Bible, which his father laid before him in the language that he then proposed to learn, accompanied with a translation, being taught by degrees the inflections of nouns and verbs. This method, says his father, made

made the Latin more familiar to him in his fourth year than any other language.

When he was near the end of his sixth year, he entered upon the study of the Old Testament in its original language, beginning with the book of Genesis, to which his father confined him for six months; after which he read cursorily over the rest of the historical books, in which he found very little difficulty, and then applied himself to the study of the poetical writers, and the prophets, which he read over so often, with so close an attention and so happy a memory, that he could not only translate them without a moment's hesitation into Latin or French, but turn with the same facility the translations into the original language in his tenth year.

Growing at length weary of being confined to a book which he could almost entirely repeat, he deviated by stealth into other studies, and, as his translation of Benjamin is a sufficient evidence, he read a multitude of writers of various kinds. In his twelfth year he applied more particularly to the study of the fathers, and councils of the six first centuries, and began to make a regular collection of their canons. He read every author in the original, having discovered so much negligence or ignorance in most translations, that he paid no regard to their authority.

Thus he continued his studies, neither drawn aside by pleasures nor discouraged by difficulties. The greatest obstacle to his improvement was want of books, with which his narrow fortune could not liberally supply him; so that he was obliged to borrow the greatest part of those which his studies required, and to return them when he had read them, without being

being able to consult them occasionally, or to recur to them when his memory should fail him.

It is observable, that neither his diligence, unintermitted as it was, nor his want of books, a want of which he was in the highest degree sensible, ever produced in him that asperity, which a long and recluse life, without any circumstance of disquiet, frequently creates. He was always gay, lively, and facetious, a temper which contributed much to recommend his learning, and which some students much superior in age would consult their ease, their reputation, and their interest, by copying from him.

In the year 1735 he published *Anti-Artemonius, sive Initium Evangelii S. Joannis, adversus Artemonium vindicatum*, and attained such a degree of reputation, that not only the publick, but princes, who are commonly the last by whom merit is distinguished, began to interest themselves in his success, for the same year the king of Prussia, who had heard of his early advances in literature on account of a scheme for discovering the longitude, which had been sent to the Royal Society of Berlin, and which was transmitted afterwards by him to Paris and London, engaged to take care of his fortune, having received further proofs of his abilities at his own court.

Mr. Barretier, being promoted to the cure of the church of Stetin, was obliged to travel with his son thither from Schwabach, through Leipsic and Berlin, a journey very agreeable to his son, as it would furnish him with new opportunities of improving his knowledge, and extending his acquaintance among men of letters. For this purpose they staid some time

time at Leipsic, and then travelled to Hall, where young Barretier so distinguished himself in his conversation with the professors of the university, that they offered him his degree of doctor in philosophy, a dignity correspondent to that of master of arts among us. Barretier drew up that night some positions in philosophy, and the mathematicks, which he sent immediately to the press, and defended the next day in a crowded auditory, with so much wit, spirit, presence of thought, and strength of reason, that the whole university was delighted and amazed; he was then admitted to his degree, and attended by the whole concourse to his lodgings, with compliments and acclamations.

His *Theses* or philosophical positions, which he printed in compliance with the practice of that university, ran through several editions in a few weeks, and no testimony of regard was wanting that could contribute to animate him in his progress.

When they arrived at Berlin, the king ordered him to be brought into his presence, and was so much pleased with his conversation, that he sent for him almost every day during his stay at Berlin; and diverted himself with engaging him in conversations upon a multitude of subjects, and in disputes with learned men; on all which occasions he acquitted himself so happily, that the king formed the highest ideas of his capacity, and future eminence. And thinking, perhaps with reason, that active life was the noblest sphere of a great genius, he recommended to him the study of modern history, the customs of nations, and those parts of learning, that are of use in publick transactions and civil employments, declaring

ing that such abilities properly cultivated might exalt him, in ten years, to be the greatest minister of state in Europe. Barretier, whether we attribute it to his moderation or inexperience, was not dazzled by the prospect of such high promotion, but answered, that he was too much pleased with science and quiet, to leave them for such inextricable studies, or such harassing fatigues. A resolution so unpleasing to the king, that his father attributes to it the delay of those favours which they had hopes of receiving, the king having, as he observes, determined to employ him in the ministry.

It is not impossible that paternal affection might suggest to Mr. Barretier some false conceptions of the king's design; for he infers from the introduction of his son to the young princes, and the caresses which he received from them, that the king intended him for their preceptor; a scheme, says he, which some other resolution happily destroyed.

Whatever was originally intended, and by whatever means these intentions were frustrated; Barretier, after having been treated with the highest regard by the whole royal family, was dismissed with a present of two hundred crowns; and his father, instead of being fixed at Stetin, was made pastor of the French church at Hall; a place more commodious for study, to which they retired; Barretier being first admitted into the Royal Society at Berlin, and recommended by the king to the university at Hall.

At Hall he continued his studies with his usual application and success, and, either by his own reflections or the persuasions of his father, was prevailed upon to give up his own inclinations to those

of

of the king, and direct his enquiries to those subjects that had been recommended by him.

He continued to add new acquisitions to his learning, and to encrease his reputation by new performances, till, in the beginning of his nineteenth year, his health began to decline, and his indisposition, which, being not alarming or violent, was perhaps not at first sufficiently regarded, increased by slow degrees for eighteen months, during which he spent days among his books, and neither neglected his studies, nor left his gaiety, till his distemper, ten days before his death, deprived him of the use of his limbs: he then prepared himself for his end, without fear or emotion, and on the 5th of October 1740, resigned his soul into the hands of his Saviour, with confidence and tranquillity.

MORIN*.

LEWIS MORIN was born at Mans, on the 11th of July 1635, of parents eminent for their piety. He was the eldest of sixteen children, a family to which their estate bore no proportion, and which, in persons less resigned to Providence, would have caused great uneasiness and anxiety.

His parents omitted nothing in his education, which religion requires, and which their fortune could supply. Botany was the study that appeared to have taken possession of his inclination, as soon as the bent of his genius could be discovered. A countryman, who supplied the apothecaries of the place, was his first master, and was paid by him for his instructions with the little money that he could procure, or that which was given him to buy something to eat after dinner. Thus abstinence and generosity discovered themselves with his passion for botany, and the gratification of a desire indifferent in itself was procured by the exercise of two virtues.

He was soon master of all his instructor's knowledge, and was obliged to enlarge his acquaintance

* Translated from an eloge by Fontenelle, and first printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for 1741.

with

with plants, by observing them himself in the neighbourhood of Mans. Having finished his grammatical studies, he was sent to learn philosophy at Paris, whither he travelled on foot like a student in botany, and was careful not to lose such an opportunity of improvement.

When his course of philosophy was completed, he was determined, by his love of botany, to the profession of physick, and from that time engaged in a course of life, which was never exceeded either by the ostentation of a philosopher, or the severity of an anchoret; for he confined himself to bread and water, and at most allowed himself no indulgence beyond fruits. By this method, he preserved a constant freedom and serenity of spirits, always equally proper for study; for his soul had no pretences to complain of being overwhelmed with matter.

This regimen, extraordinary as it was, had many advantages; for it preserved his health, an advantage which very few sufficiently regard; it gave him an authority to preach diet and abstinence to his patients; and it made him rich without the assistance of fortune; rich, not for himself, but for the poor, who were the only persons benefited by that artificial affluence, which, of all others, is most difficult to acquire. It is easy to imagine, that, while he practised in the midst of Paris the severe temperance of a hermit, Paris differed no otherwise, with regard to him, from a hermitage, than as it supplied him with books and the conversation of learned men.

In 1662 he was admitted doctor of physick. About that time Dr. Fagon, Dr. Longuet, and Dr. Galois, all eminent for their skill in botany, were employed

in drawing up a catalogue of the plants in the Royal Garden, which was published in 1665, under the name of Dr. Vallot, then first physician: during the prosecution of this work, Dr. Morin was often consulted, and from those conversations it was that Dr. Fagon conceived a particular esteem of him, which he always continued to retain.

After having practised physick some years, he was admitted Expectant at the Hotel Dieu, where he was regularly to have been made Pensionary physician upon the first vacancy; but mere unassisted merit advances slowly, if, what is not very common, it advances at all. Morin had no acquaintance with the arts necessary to carry on schemes of preferment; the moderation of his desires preserved him from the necessity of studying them, and the privacy of his life debarred him from any opportunity.

At last, however, justice was done him in spite of artifice and partiality; but his advancement added nothing to his condition, except the power of more extensive charity; for all the money which he received as a salary, he put into the chest of the hospital, always, as he imagined, without being observed. Not content with serving the poor for nothing, he paid them for being served.

His reputation rose so high in Paris, that Madamoiselle de Guise was desirous to make him her physician; but it was not without difficulty that he was prevailed upon by his friend, Dr. Dodart, to accept the place. He was by this new advancement laid under the necessity of keeping a chariot, an equipage very unsuitable to his temper; but while he complied with those exterior appearances which the

the publick had a right to demand from him, he remitted nothing of his former austerity in the more private and essential parts of his life, which he had always the power of regulating according to his own disposition.

In two years and a half the princess fell sick, and was despaired of by Morin, who was a great master of prognosticks. At the time when she thought herself in no danger, he pronounced her death inevitable; a declaration to the highest degree disagreeable, but which was made more easy to him than to any other by his piety and artless simplicity. Nor did his sincerity produce any ill consequences to himself; for the princess, affected by his zeal, taking a ring from her finger, gave it him as the last pledge of her affection, and rewarded him still more to his satisfaction, by preparing for death with a true Christian piety. She left him by will an yearly pension of two thousand livres, which was always regularly paid him.

No sooner was the princess dead, but he freed himself from the incumbrance of his chariot, and retired to St. Victor without a servant; having, however, augmented his daily allowance with a little rice boiled in water.

Dodart, who had undertaken the charge of being ambitious on his account, procured him, at the restoration of the academy in 1699, to be nominated associate botanist; not knowing, what he would doubtless have been pleased with the knowledge of, that he introduced into that assembly the man that was to succeed him in his place of Pensionary.

Dr. Morin was not one who had upon his hands the labour of adapting himself to the duties of his condition, but always found himself naturally adapted to them. He had, therefore, no difficulty in being constant at the assemblies of the academy, notwithstanding the distance of places, while he had strength enough to support the journey. But his regimen was not equally effectual to produce vigour as to prevent distempers; and being 64 years old at his admission, he could not continue his assiduity more than a year after the death of Dodart, whom he succeeded in 1707.

When Mr. Tournefort went to pursue his botanical enquiries in the Levant, he desired Dr. Morin to supply his place of Demonstrator of the Plants in the Royal Garden, and rewarded him for the trouble, by inscribing to him a new plant which he brought from the east, by the name of *Morina Orientalis*, as he named others the *Dodarto*, the *Fagonne*, the *Bignonne*, the *Phelipee*. These are compliments proper to be made by the botanists, not only to those of their own rank, but to the greatest persons; for a plant is a monument of a more durable nature than a medal or an obelisk; and yet, as a proof that even these vehicles are not always sufficient to transmit to futurity the name conjoined with them, the *Nicotiana* is now scarcely known by any other name than that of tobacco.

Dr. Morin, advancing far in age, was now forced to take a servant, and, what was yet a more essential alteration, prevailed upon himself to take an ounce of wine a day, which he measured with the same exact-

ness

ness as a medicine bordering upon poison. He quitted at the same time all his practice in the city, and confined it to the poor of his neighbourhood, and his visits to the Hotel Dieu; but his weakness increasing, he was forced to increase his quantity of wine, which yet he always continued to adjust by weight *.

At 78 his legs could carry him no longer, and he scarcely left his bed; but his intellects continued unimpaired, except in the last six months of his life. He expired, or, to use a more proper term, went out, on the first of March 1714, at the age of 80 years, without any distemper, and merely for want of strength, having enjoyed by the benefit of his regimen a long and healthy life, and a gentle and easy death.

This extraordinary regimen was but part of the daily regulation of his life, of which all the offices were carried on with a regularity and exactness nearly approaching to that of the planetary motions.

He went to bed at seven, and rose at two, throughout the year. He spent in the morning three hours at his devotions, and went to the Hotel Dieu in the summer between five and six, and in the winter between six and seven, hearing mass for the

* The practice of Dr. Morin is forbidden, I believe, by every writer that has left rules for the preservation of health, and is directly opposite to that of Cornaro, who by his regimen repaired a broken constitution, and protracted his life, without any painful infirmities, or any decay of his intellectual abilities, to more than a hundred years; it is generally agreed, that as men advance in years, they ought to take lighter sustenance, and in less quantities; and reason seems easily to discover that as the concoctive powers grow weaker, they ought to labour less. *Orig. Edit.*

most

most part at Notre Dame. After his return he read the holy Scripture, dined at eleven, and when it was fair weather walked till two in the royal garden, where he examined the new plants, and gratified his earliest and strongest passion. For the remaining part of the day, if he had no poor to visit, he shut himself up, and read books of literature or physick, but chiefly physick, as the duty of his profession required. This likewise was the time he received visits, if any were paid him. He often used this expression, "Those that come to see me, do me honour; "and those that stay away, do me a favour." It is easy to conceive that a man of this temper was not crowded with salutations: there was only now and then an Antony that would pay Paul a visit.

Among his papers was found a Greek and Latin index to Hippocrates, more copious and exact than that of Pini, which he had finished only a year before his death. Such a work required the assiduity and patience of an hermit *.

There is likewise a journal of the weather, kept without interruption, for more than forty years, in which he has accurately set down the state of the barometer and thermometer, the dryness and moisture of the air, the variations of the wind in the course of the day, the rain, the thunders, and even the sudden storms, in a very commodious and concise method, which exhibits, in a little room, a great

* This is an instance of the disposition generally found in writers of lives, to exalt every common occurrence and action into wonder. Are not indexes daily written by men who neither receive nor expect any loud applauses for their labours? *Orig. Edit.*

train

train of different observations. What numbers of such remarks had escaped a man less uniform in his life, and whose attention had been extended to common objects!

All the estate which he left is a collection of medals, another of herbs, and a library rated at two thousand crowns: which make it evident that he spent much more upon his mind than upon his body.

BURMAN*

PETER BURMAN was born at Utrecht, on the 26th day of June 1668. The family from which he descended has for several generations produced men of great eminence for piety and learning; and his father, who was professor of divinity in the university, and pastor of the city of Utrecht, was equally celebrated for the strictness of his life, the efficacy and orthodoxy of his sermons, and the learning and perspicuity of his academical lectures.

From the assistance and instruction which such a father would doubtless have been encouraged by the genius of this son not to have omitted, he was unhappily cut off at eleven years of age, being at that time by his father's death thrown entirely under the care of his mother, by whose diligence, piety, and prudence, his education was so regulated, that he had scarcely any reason, but filial tenderness, to regret the loss of his father.

He was about this time sent to the public school of Utrecht to be instructed in the learned languages; and it will convey no common idea of his capacity and industry to relate, that he had passed through the

* First printed in the Gentleman's Magazine for 1742. N.

classes,

classes, and was admitted into the university in his thirteenth year.

This account of the rapidity of his progress in the first part of his studies is so stupendous, that though it is attested by his friend, Dr. Osterdyke, of whom it cannot be reasonably suspected that he is himself deceived, or that he can desire to deceive others, it must be allowed far to exceed the limits of probability, if it be considered, with regard to the methods of education practised in our country, where it is not uncommon for the highest genius, and most comprehensive capacity, to be entangled for ten years, in those thorny paths of literature, which Burman is represented to have passed in less than two; and we must doubtless confess the most skilful of our masters much excelled by the address of the Dutch teachers, or the abilities of our greatest scholars far surpassed by those of Burman.

But, to reduce this narrative to credibility, it is necessary that admiration should give place to inquiry, and that it be discovered what proficiency in literature is expected from a student, requesting to be admitted into a Dutch university. It is to be observed that in the universities of foreign countries, they have professors of philology, or humanity, whose employment is to instruct the younger classes in grammar, rhetorick, and languages; nor do they engage in the study of philosophy, till they have passed through a course of philological lectures and exercises, to which, in some places, two years are commonly allotted.

The English scheme of education, which with regard to academical studies is more rigorous, and sets literary

literary honours at a higher price than that of any other country, exacts from the youth, who are initiated in our colleges, a degree of philological knowledge sufficient to qualify them for lectures in philosophy, which are read to them in Latin, and to enable them to proceed in other studies without assistance; so that it may be conjectured, that Burman, at his entrance into the university, had no such skill in languages, nor such ability of composition, as are frequently to be met with in the higher classes of an English school; nor was perhaps more than moderately skilled in Latin, and taught the first rudiments of Greek.

In the university he was committed to the care of the learned Grævius, whose regard for his father inclined him to superintend his studies with more than common attention, which was soon confirmed and increased by his discoveries of the genius of his pupil, and his observation of his diligence.

One of the qualities which contributed eminently to qualify Grævius for an instructor of youth, was the sagacity by which he readily discovered the predominant faculty of each pupil, and the peculiar designation by which nature had allotted him to any species of literature, and by which he was soon able to determine, that Burman was remarkably adapted to classical studies, and predict the great advances that he would make, by industriously pursuing the direction of his genius.

Animated by the encouragement of a tutor so celebrated, he continued the vigour of his application, and, for several years, not only attended the lectures of Grævius, but made use of every other opportunity

nity of improvement, with such diligence as might justly be expected to produce an uncommon proficiency.

Having thus attained a sufficient degree of classical knowledge to qualify him for inquiries into other sciences, he applied himself to the study of the law, and published a dissertation, "de Vicesimâ Hæredi-"tatum," which he publickly defended, under the professor Van Muyden, with such learning and eloquence as procured him great applause.

Imagining, then, that the conversation of other men of learning might be of use towards his farther improvement, and rightly judging that notions formed in any single seminary are for the greatest part contracted and partial; he went to Leyden, where he studied philosophy for a year, under M. de Volder, whose celebrity was so great, that the schools assigned to the sciences, which it was his province to teach, were not sufficient, though very spacious, to contain the audience that crowded his lectures from all parts of Europe.

Yet he did not suffer himself to be engrossed by philosophical disquisitions, to the neglect of those studies in which he was more early engaged, and to which he was perhaps by nature better adapted; for he attended at the same time Ryckius's explanations of Tacitus, and James Gronovius's lectures on the Greek writers, and has often been heard to acknowledge, at an advanced age, the assistance which he received from them.

Having thus passed a year at Leyden with great advantage, he returned to Utrecht, and once more applied himself to philological studies, by the assist-

ance

ance of Grævius, whose early hopes of his genius were now raised to a full confidence of that excellence at which he afterwards arrived.

At Utrecht, in March 1688, in the twentieth year of his age, he was advanced to the degree of doctor of laws; on which occasion he published a learned dissertation, "de Transactionibus," and defended it with his usual eloquence, learning, and success.

The attainment of this honour was far from having upon Burman that effect which has been too often observed to be produced in others, who, having in their own opinion no higher object of ambition, have elapsed into idleness and security, and spent the rest of their lives in a lazy enjoyment of their academical dignities. Burman aspired to farther improvements, and, not satisfied with the opportunities of literary conversation which Utrecht afforded, travelled into Switzerland and Germany, where he gained an increase both of fame and learning.

At his return from this excursion, he engaged in the practice of the law, and pleaded several causes with such reputation, as might be hoped by a man who had joined to his knowledge of the law, the embellishments of polite literature, and the strict ratiocination of true philosophy, and who was able to employ on every occasion the graces of eloquence and the power of argumentation.

While Burman was hastening to high reputation in the courts of justice, and to those riches and honours which always follow it, he was summoned in 1691, by the magistrates of Utrecht, to undertake the charge of collector of the tenths, an office in that

place

place of great honour, and which he accepted therefore as a proof of their confidence and esteem.

While he was engaged in this employment, he married Eve Clotterboke, a young lady of a good family, and uncommon genius and beauty, by whom he had ten children, of which eight died young; and only two sons, Francis and Caspar, lived to console their mother for their father's death.

Neither publick business, nor domestic cares, detained Burman from the prosecution of his literary enquiries; by which he so much endeared himself to Grævius, that he was recommended by him to the regard of the university of Utrecht, and accordingly, in 1696, was chosen professor of eloquence and history, to which was added, after some time, the professorship of the Greek language, and afterwards that of politicks; so various did they conceive his abilities, and so extensive his knowledge.

At his entrance upon this new province, he pronounced an oration upon eloquence and poetry.

Having now more frequent opportunities of displaying his learning, he arose, in a short time, to a high reputation, of which the great number of his auditors was a sufficient proof, and which the proficiency of his pupils shewed not to be accidental or undeserved.

In 1714 he formed a resolution of visiting Paris, not only for the sake of conferring in person, upon questions of literature, with the learned men of that place, and of gratifying his curiosity with a more familiar knowledge of those writers whose works he admired, but with a view more important, of visiting the

the libraries, and making those enquiries which might be of advantage to his darling study.

The vacation of the university allowed him to stay at Paris but six weeks, which he employed with so much dexterity and industry, that he had searched the principal libraries, collated a great number of manuscripts and printed copies, and brought back a great treasure of curious observations.

In this visit to Paris he contracted an acquaintance, among other learned men, with the celebrated father Montfaucon; with whom he conversed, at his first interview, with no other character but that of a traveller; but, their discourse turning upon ancient learning, the stranger soon gave such proofs of his attainments, that Montfaucon declared him a very uncommon traveller, and confessed his curiosity to know his name; which he no sooner heard, than he rose from his seat, and, embracing him with the utmost ardour, expressed his satisfaction at having seen the man whose productions of various kinds he had so often praised; and, as a real proof of his regard, offered not only to procure him an immediate admission to all the libraries of Paris, but to those in remoter provinces, which are not generally open to strangers, and undertook to ease the expences of his journey by procuring him entertainment in all the monasteries of his order.

This favour Burman was hindered from accepting, by the necessity of returning to Utrecht at the usual time of beginning a new course of lectures, to which there was always so great a concourse of students, as much increased the dignity and fame of the university in which he taught.

He

He had already extended, to distant parts, his reputation for knowledge of ancient history by a treatise "de Vectigalibus Populi Romani," on the revenues of the Romans; and for his skill in Greek learning, and in ancient coins, by a tract called "Jupiter Fulgurator;" and after his return from Paris, he published "Phædrus," first with the notes of various commentators, and afterwards with his own. He printed many poems, made many orations upon different subjects, and procured an impression of the epistles of Gudius and Sanavius.

While he was thus employed, the professorships of history, eloquence, and the Greek language, became vacant at Leyden, by the death of Perizonius, which Burman's reputation incited the curators of the university to offer him upon very generous terms, and which, after some struggles with his fondness for his native place, his friends, and his colleagues, he was prevailed on to accept, finding the solicitations from Leyden warm and urgent, and his friends at Utrecht, though unwilling to be deprived of him, yet not zealous enough for the honour and advantage of their university, to endeavour to detain him by great liberality.

At his entrance upon this new professorship, which was conferred upon him in 1715, he pronounced an oration upon the duty and office of a professor of polite literature; "De publici humanioris Disciplinæ "professoris proprio officio et munere;" and shewed, by the usefulness and perspicuity of his lectures, that he was not confined to speculative notions on that subject, having a very happy method of accommodating

modating his instructions to the different abilities and attainments of his pupils.

Nor did he suffer the publick duties of this station to hinder him from promoting learning by labours of a different kind; for, besides many poems and orations which he recited on different occasions, he wrote several prefaces to the works of others, and published many useful editions of the best Latin writers, with large collections of notes from various commentators.

He was twice rector, or chief governor of the university, and discharged that important office with equal equity and ability, and gained by his conduct in every station so much esteem, that when the professorship of history of the United Provinces became vacant, it was conferred on him, as an addition to his honours and revenues, which he might justly claim; and afterwards, as a proof of the continuance of their regard, and a testimony that his reputation was still increasing, they made him chief librarian, an office which was the more acceptable to him, as it united his business with his pleasure, and gave him an opportunity at the same time of superintending the library, and carrying on his studies.

Such was the course of his life, till, in his old age, leaving off his practice of walking and other exercises, he began to be afflicted with the scurvy, which discovered itself by very tormenting symptoms of various kinds; sometimes disturbing his head with vertigos, sometimes causing faintness in his limbs, and sometimes attacking his legs with anguish so excruciating, that all his vigour was destroyed, and the power of walking

walking entirely taken away, till at length his left foot became motionless. The violence of his pain produced irregular fevers, deprived him of rest, and entirely debilitated his whole frame.

This tormenting disease he bore, though not without some degree of impatience, yet without any unbecoming or irrational despondency, and applied himself in the intermission of his pains to seek for comfort in the duties of religion.

While he lay in this state of misery he received an account of the promotion of two of his grandsons, and a catalogue of the king of France's library, presented to him by the command of the king himself, and expressed some satisfaction on all these occasions; but soon diverted his thoughts to the more important consideration of his eternal state, into which he passed on the 31st of March 1741, in the 73d year of his age.

He was a man of moderate stature, of great strength and activity, which he preserved by temperate diet, without medical exactness, and by allotting proportions of his time to relaxation and amusement, not suffering his studies to exhaust his strength, but relieving them by frequent intermissions; a practice consistent with the most exemplary diligence, and which he that omits will find at last, that time may be lost, like money, by unseasonable avarice.

In his hours of relaxation he was gay, and sometimes gave way so far to his temper, naturally satirical, that he drew upon himself the ill-will of those who had been unfortunately the subjects of his mirth; but enemies so provoked he thought it beneath him to regard or to pacify; for he was fiery,

but not malicious, disdained dissimulation, and in his gay or serious hours preserved a settled detestation of falsehood. So that he was an open and undisguised friend or enemy, entirely unacquainted with the artifices of flatterers, but so judicious in the choice of friends, and so constant in his affection to them, that those with whom he had contracted familiarity in his youth, had for the greatest part his confidence in his old age.

His abilities, which would probably have enabled him to have excelled in any kind of learning, were chiefly employed, as his station required, on polite literature, in which he arrived at very uncommon knowledge, which, however, appears rather from judicious compilations than original productions. His style is lively and masculine, but not without harshness and constraint, nor, perhaps, always polished to that purity which some writers have attained. He was at least instrumental to the instruction of mankind, by the publication of many valuable performances, which lay neglected by the greatest part of the learned world; and, if reputation be estimated by usefulness, he may claim a higher degree in the ranks of learning than some others of happier elocution, or more vigorous imagination.

The malice or suspicion of those who either did not know, or did not love him, had given rise to some doubts about his religion, which he took an opportunity of removing on his death-bed by a voluntary declaration of his faith, his hope of everlasting salvation from the revealed promises of God, and his confidence in the merits of our Redeemer, of the sincerity of which declaration his whole behaviour in

his

his long illness was an incontestable proof; and he concluded his life, which had been illustrious for many virtues, by exhibiting an example of true piety.

Of his works we have not been able to procure a complete catalogue: he published,

"Quintilianus," 2 vols. 4to.
"Valerius Flaccus,"
"Ovidius," 3 vols. 4to.
"Poetæ Latini Minores," 2 vols. 4to.
} Cum notis variorum.
"Buchanani Opera," 2 vols. 4to.

SYDENHAM*.

THOMAS SYDENHAM was born in the year 1624, at Winford Eagle in Dorsetshire, where his father, William Sydenham, Esq. had a large fortune. Under whose care he was educated, or in what manner he passed his childhood, whether he made any early discoveries of a genius peculiarly adapted to the study of nature, or gave any presages of his future eminence in medicine, no information is to be obtained. We must therefore repress that curiosity which would naturally incline us to watch the first attempts of so vigorous a mind, to pursue it in its childish enquiries, and see it struggling with rustick prejudices, breaking on trifling occasions the shackles of credulity, and giving proofs, in its casual excursions, that it was formed to shake off the yoke of prescription, and dispel the phantoms of hypothesis.

That the strength of Sydenham's understanding, the accuracy of his discernment, and ardour of his curiosity, might have been remarked from his infancy by a diligent observer, there is no reason to

* Originally prefixed to the New Translation of Dr. Sydenham's Works, by John Swan, M. D. of Newcastle in Staffordshire, 1742. H.

doubt.

doubt. For there is no instance of any man, whose history has been minutely related, that did not in every part of life discover the same proportion of intellectual vigour; but it has been the lot of the greatest part of those who have excelled in science, to be known only by their own writings, and to have left behind them no remembrance of their domestick life, or private transactions, or only such memorials of particular passages as are, on certain occasions, necessarily recorded in public registers.

From these it is discovered, that at the age of eighteen, in 1642, he commenced a commoner of Magdalen-Hall in Oxford, where it is not probable that he continued long; for he informs us himself, that he was withheld from the university by the commencement of the war; nor is it known in what state of life he engaged, or where he resided during that long series of publick commotion. It is indeed reported that he had a commission in the king's army, but no particular account is given of his military conduct; nor are we told what rank he obtained when he entered into the army, or when, or on what occasion, he retired from it.

It is, however, certain, that if ever he took upon him the profession of arms, he spent but few years in the camp; for in 1648 he obtained at Oxford the degree of batchelor of physick, for which, as some medicinal knowledge is necessary, it may be imagined that he spent some time in qualifying himself.

His application to the study of physick was, as he himself relates, produced by an accidental acquaintance with Dr. Cox, a physician eminent at that time

time in London, who in some sickness prescribed to his brother, and, attending him frequently on that occasion, enquired of him what profession he designed to follow. The young man answering that he was undetermined, the Doctor recommended physick to him, on what account, or with what arguments, it is not related; but his persuasions were so effectual, that Sydenham determined to follow his advice, and retired to Oxford for leisure and opportunity to pursue his studies.

It is evident that this conversation must have happened before his promotion to any degree in physick, because he himself fixes it in the interval of his absence from the university, a circumstance which will enable us to confute many false reports relating to Dr. Sydenham, which have been confidently inculcated, and implicitly believed.

It is the general opinion that he was made a physician by accident and necessity, and Sir Richard Blackmore reports in plain terms [*Preface to his Treatise on the Small Pox*], that he engaged in practice without any preparatory study, or previous knowledge, of the medicinal sciences; and affirms, that, when he was consulted by him what books he should read to qualify him for the same profession, he recommended Don Quixote.

That he recommended Don Quixote to Blackmore, we are not allowed to doubt; but the relater is hindered by that self-love which dazzles all mankind from discovering that he might intend a satire very different from a general censure of all the ancient and modern writers on medicine, since he might perhaps mean, either seriously or in jest, to insinuate that

Blackmore

Blackmore was not adapted by nature to the study of physick, and that, whether he should read Cervantes or Hippocrates, he would be equally unqualified for practice, and equally unsuccessful in it.

Whatsoever was his meaning, nothing is more evident, than that it was a transient sally of an imagination warmed with gaiety, or the negligent effusion of a mind intent upon some other employment, and in haste to dismiss a troublesome intruder; for it is certain that Sydenham did not think it impossible to write usefully on medicine, because he has himself written upon it; and it is not probable that he carried his vanity so far, as to imagine that no man had ever acquired the same qualifications besides himself. He could not but know that he rather restored than invented most of his principles, and therefore could not but acknowledge the value of those writers whose doctrines he adopted and enforced.

That he engaged in the practice of physick without any acquaintance with the theory, or knowledge of the opinions or precepts of former writers, is undoubtedly false; for he declares, that after he had, in pursuance of his conversation with Dr. Cox, determined upon the profession of physick, he *applied himself in earnest to it,* and *spent several years in the university* [aliquot annos in academica palæstra], before he began to practise in London.

Nor was he satisfied with the opportunities of knowledge which Oxford afforded, but travelled to Montpellier, as Desault relates [*Dissertation on Consumptions*], in quest of farther information; Montpellier being at that time the most celebrated school of physick: so far was Sydenham from any contempt

contempt of academical institutions, and so far from thinking it reasonable to learn physick by experiments alone, which must necessarily be made at the hazard of life.

What can be demanded beyond this by the most zealous advocate for regular education? What can be expected from the most cautious and most industrious student, than that he should dedicate *several years* to the rudiments of his art, and travel for further instructions from one university to another?

It is likewise a common opinion, that Sydenham was thirty years old before he formed his resolution of studying physick, for which I can discover no other foundation than one expression in his dedication to Dr. Mapletoft, which seems to have given rise to it by a gross misinterpretation; for he only observes, that from his conversation with Dr. Cox to the publication of that treatise *thirty years* had intervened.

Whatever may have produced this notion, or how long soever it may have prevailed, it is now proved beyond controversy to be false, since it appears that Sydenham, having been for some time absent from the university, returned to it in order to pursue his physical enquiries before he was twenty-four years old; for in 1648 he was admitted to the degree of batchelor of physick.

That such reports should be confidently spread, even among the contemporaries of the author to whom they relate, and obtain in a few years such credit as to require a regular confutation; that it should be imagined that the greatest physician of the age arrived at so high a degree of skill, without any assistance from his predecessors; and that a man

man eminent for integrity practised medicine by chance, and grew wise only by murder; is not to be considered without astonishment.

But if it be, on the other part, remembered, how much this opinion favours the laziness of some, and the pride of others; how readily some men confide in natural sagacity, and how willingly most would spare themselves the labour of accurate reading and tedious enquiry; it will be easily discovered how much the interest of multitudes was engaged in the production and continuance of this opinion, and how cheaply those, of whom it was known that they practised physick before they studied it, might satisfy themselves and others with the example of the illustrious Sydenham.

It is therefore in an uncommon degree useful to publish a true account of this memorable man, that pride, temerity, and idleness may be deprived of that patronage which they have enjoyed too long; that life may be secured from the dangerous experiments of the ignorant and presumptuous; and that those, who shall hereafter assume the important province of superintending the health of others, may learn from this great master of the art, that the only means of arriving at eminence and success are labour and study.

From these false reports it is probable that another arose, to which, though it cannot be with equal certainty confuted, it does not appear that entire credit ought to be given. The acquisition of a Latin style did not seem consistent with the manner of life imputed to him; nor was it probable, that he, who had so diligently cultivated the ornamental parts of general

general literature, would have neglected the essential studies of his own profession. Those therefore who were determined, at whatever price, to retain him in their own party, and represent him equally ignorant and daring with themselves, denied him the credit of writing his own works in the language in which they were published, and asserted, but without proof, that they were composed by him in English, and translated into Latin by Dr. Mapletoft.

Whether Dr. Mapletoft lived and was familiar with him during the whole time in which these several treatises were printed, treatises written on particular occasions, and printed at periods considerably distant from each other, we have had no opportunity of enquiring, and therefore cannot demonstrate the falsehood of this report: but if it be considered how unlikely it is that any man should engage in a work so laborious and so little necessary, only to advance the reputation of another, or that he should have leisure to continue the same office upon all following occasions; if it be remembered how seldom such literary combinations are formed, and how soon they are for the greatest part dissolved; there will appear no reason for not allowing Dr. Sydenham the laurel of eloquence as well as physick *.

It

* Since the foregoing was written, we have seen Mr. Ward's Lives of the Professors of Gresham College; who, in the life of Dr. Mapletoft, says, that in 1676 Dr. Sydenham published his *Observationes medicæ circa morborum acutorum historiam et curationem*, which he dedicated to Dr. Mapletoft, who at the desire of the author had translated them into Latin; and that the other pieces of that excellent physician were translated into that language

It is observable, that his *Processus Integri*, published after his death, discovers alone more skill in the Latin language than is commonly ascribed to him; and it surely will not be suspected, that the officiousness of his friends was continued after his death, or that he procured the book to be translated only that, by leaving it behind him, he might secure his claim to his other writings.

It is asserted by Sir Hans Sloane, that Dr. Sydenham, with whom he was familiarly acquainted, was particularly versed in the writings of the great Roman orator and philosopher; and there is evidently such a luxuriance in his style, as may discover the author which gave him most pleasure, and most engaged his imitation.

About the same time that he became batchelor of physick, he obtained, by the interest of a relation, a fellowship of All Souls college, having submitted by the subscription required to the authority of the visitors appointed by the parliament, upon what principles, or how consistently with his former conduct, it is now impossible to discover.

When he thought himself qualified for practice, he fixed his residence in Westminster, became doctor of physick at Cambridge, received a licence from the college of physicians, and lived in the first degree of reputation, and the greatest affluence of practice, for many years, without any other enemies

guage by Mr. Gilbert Havers of Trinity College Cambridge, a student in physick and friend of Dr. Mapletoft. But as Mr. Ward, like others, neglects to bring any proof of his assertion, the question cannot fairly be decided by his authority. *Orig. Edit.*

than

than those which he raised by the superior merit of his conduct, the brighter lustre of his abilities, or his improvements of his science, and his contempt of pernicious methods supported only by authority in opposition to sound reason and indubitable experience. These men are indebted to him for concealing their names, when he records their malice, since they have thereby escaped the contempt and detestation of posterity.

It is a melancholy reflection, that they who have obtained the highest reputation, by preserving or restoring the health of others, have often been hurried away before the natural decline of life, or have passed many of their years under the torments of those distempers which they profess to relieve. In this number was Sydenham, whose health began to fail in the 52d year of his age, by the frequent attacks of the gout, to which he was subject for a great part of his life, and which was afterwards accompanied with the stone in the kidneys, and, its natural consequence, bloody-urine.

These were distempers which even the art of Sydenham could only palliate, without hope of a perfect cure, but which, if he has not been able by his precepts to instruct us to remove, he has, at least, by his example, taught us to bear; for he never betrayed any indecent impatience, or unmanly dejection, under his torments, but supported himself by the reflections of philosophy, and the consolations of religion, and in every interval of ease applied himself to the assistance of others with his usual assiduity.

After a life thus usefully employed, he died at his house in Pall-mall, on the 29th of December 1689,

and

and was buried in the aile, near the south door, of the church of St. James in Westminster.

What was his character, as a physician, appears from the treatises which he has left, which it is not necessary to epitomise or transcribe; and from them it may likewise be collected, that his skill in physick was not his highest excellence; that his whole character was amiable; that his chief view was the benefit of mankind, and the chief motive of his actions the will of God, whom he mentions with reverence, well becoming the most enlightened and most penetrating mind. He was benevolent, candid, and communicative, sincere, and religious; qualities, which it were happy if they could copy from him, who emulate his knowledge, and imitate his methods.

CHEYNEL*.

THERE is always this advantage in contending with illustrious adversaries, that the combatant is equally immortalized by conquest or defeat. He that dies by the sword of a hero will always be mentioned when the acts of his enemy are mentioned. The man, of whose life the following account is offered to the publick, was indeed eminent among his own party, and had qualities, which, employed in a good cause, would have given him some claim to distinction; but no one is now so much blinded with bigotry, as to imagine him equal either to Hammond or Chillingworth; nor would his memory, perhaps, have been preserved, had he not, by being conjoined with illustrious names, become the object of publick curiosity.

FRANCIS CHEYNEL was born in 1608 at Oxford †, where his father Dr. John Cheynel, who had been fellow of Corpus Christi College, practised physick with great reputation. He was educated in one of the grammar schools of his native city, and in the beginning of the year 1623 became a member of the university.

* First printed in The Student, 1751. H.

† Vide Wood's Ath. Ox. *Orig. Edit.*

It

It is probable that he lost his father when he was very young; for it appears, that before 1629 his mother had married Dr. Abbot, bishop of Salisbury, whom she had likewise buried. From this marriage he received great advantage; for his mother being now allied to Dr. Brent, then warden of Merton college, exerted her interest so vigorously, that he was admitted there a probationer, and afterwards obtained a fellowship *.

Having taken the degree of master of arts, he was admitted to orders according to the rites of the church of England, and held a curacy near Oxford, together with his fellowship. He continued in his college till he was qualified by his years of residence for the degree of batchelor of divinity, which he attempted to take in 1641, but was denied his grace †, for disputing concerning predestination, contrary to the king's injunctions.

This refusal of his degree he mentions in his dedication to his account of Mr. Chillingworth: "Do not conceive that I snatch up my pen in an "angry mood, that I might vent my dangerous wit, "and ease my overburdened spleen; no, no, I have "almost forgotten the visitation of Merton college, "and the denial of my grace, the plundering of my "house, and little library: I know when, and where, "and of whom, to demand satisfaction for all these "injuries and indignities. I have learnt *centum plagas Spartana nobilitate concoquere.* I have not "learnt how to plunder others of goods, or living, "and make myself amends by force of arms. I will

* Vide Wood's Ath. Ox. *Orig. Edit.*

† Vide Wood's Hist. Univ. Ox. *Orig. Edit.*

"not

" not take a living which belonged to any civil, stu-
" dious, learned delinquent; unless it be the much
" neglected *commendam* of some lordly prelate, con-
" demned by the known laws of the land, and the
" highest court of the kingdom, for some offence of
" the first magnitude."

It is observable, that he declares himself to have almost forgot his injuries and indignities, though he recounts them with an appearance of acrimony, which is no proof that the impression is much weakened; and insinuates his design of demanding, at a proper time, satisfaction for them.

These vexations were the consequence, rather, of the abuse of learning, than the want of it; no one that reads his works can doubt that he was turbulent, obstinate, and petulant, and ready to instruct his superiors, when he most needed instruction from them. Whatever he believed (and the warmth of his imagination naturally made him precipitate in forming his opinions) he thought himself obliged to profess; and what he professed he was ready to defend, without that modesty which is always prudent, and generally necessary, and which, though it was not agreeable to Mr. Cheynel's temper, and therefore readily condemned by him, is a very useful associate to truth, and often introduces her by degrees, where she never could have forced her way by argument or declamation.

A temper of this kind is generally inconvenient and offensive in any society, but in a place of education is least to be tolerated; for, as authority is necessary to instruction, whoever endeavours to destroy subordination, by weakening that reverence which is claimed

claimed by those to whom the guardianship of youth is committed by their country, defeats at once the institution; and may be justly driven from a society by which he thinks himself too wise to be governed, and in which he is too young to teach, and too opinionative to learn.

This may be readily supposed to have been the case of Cheynel; and I know not how those can be blamed for censuring his conduct, or punishing his disobedience, who had a right to govern him, and who might certainly act with equal sincerity, and with greater knowledge.

With regard to the visitation of Merton college, the account is equally obscure. Visitors are well known to be generally called to regulate the affairs of colleges, when the members disagree with their head, or with one another; and the temper that Dr. Cheynel discovers will easily incline his readers to suspect that he could not long live in any place without finding some occasion for debate; nor debate any question without carrying his opposition to such a length as might make a moderator necessary. Whether this was his conduct at Merton, or whether an appeal to the visitor's authority was made by him, or his adversaries, or any other member of the college, is not to be known; it appears only, that there was a visitation, that he suffered by it, and resented his punishment.

He was afterwards presented to a living of great value, near Banbury, where he had some dispute with archbishop Laud. Of this dispute I have found no particular account. Calamy only says, he had a ruffle with bishop Laud, while at his height.

Had Cheynel been equal to his adversary in greatness and learning, it had not been easy to have found either a more proper opposite; for they were both, to the last degree, zealous, active, and pertinacious, and would have afforded mankind a spectacle of resolution and boldness not often to be seen. But the amusement of beholding the struggle would hardly have been without danger, as they were too fiery not to have communicated their heat, though it should have produced a conflagration of their country.

About the year 1641, when the whole nation was engaged in the controversy about the rights of the church, and necessity of episcopacy, he declared himself a Presbyterian, and an enemy to bishops, liturgies, ceremonies, and was considered as one of the most learned and acute of his party; for, having spent much of his life in a college, it cannot be doubted that he had a considerable knowledge of books, which the vehemence of his temper enabled him often to display, when a more timorous man would have been silent, though in learning not his inferior.

When the war broke out, Mr. Cheynel, in consequence of his principles, declared himself for the Parliament; and as he appears to have held it as a first principle, that all great and noble spirits abhor neutrality, there is no doubt but that he exerted himself to gain proselytes, and to promote the interest of that party which he had thought it his duty to espouse. These endeavours were so much regarded by the parliament, that, having taken the covenant, he was nominated one of the assembly of divines, who were

to

to meet at Westminster for the settlement of the new discipline.

This distinction drew necessarily upon him the hatred of the cavaliers; and his living being not far distant from the king's head-quarters, he received a visit from some of the troops, who, as he affirms, plundered his house, and drove him from it. His living, which was, I suppose, considered as forfeited by his absence, (though he was not suffered to continue upon it,) was given to a clergyman, of whom he says, that he would become a stage better than a pulpit; a censure which I can neither confute nor admit, because I have not discovered who was his successor. He then retired into Sussex, to exercise his ministry among his friends, in a place where, as he observes, there had been little of the power of religion either known or practised. As no reason can be given why the inhabitants of Sussex should have less knowledge or virtue than those of other places, it may be suspected that he means nothing more than a place where the Presbyterian discipline or principles had never been received. We now observe, that the Methodists, where they scatter their opinions, represent themselves as preaching the gospel to unconverted nations; and enthusiasts of all kinds have been inclined to disguise their particular tenets with pompous appellations, and to imagine themselves the great instruments of salvation; yet it must be confessed that all places are not equally enlightened; that in the most civilized nations there are many corners which may be called barbarous, where neither politeness, nor religion, nor the common arts of life, have yet been cultivated; and it is likewise certain, that

the inhabitants of Sussex have been sometimes mentioned as remarkable for brutality.

From Sussex he went often to London, where, in 1643, he preached three times before the parliament; and, returning in November to Colchester, to keep the monthly fast there, as was his custom, he obtained a convoy of sixteen soldiers, whose bravery or good fortune was such, that they faced and put to flight more than two hundred of the king's forces.

In this journey he found Mr. Chillingworth in the hands of the parliament's troops, of whose sickness and death he gave the account, which has been sufficiently made known to the learned world by Mr. Maizeaux, in his Life of Chillingworth.

With regard to this relation, it may be observed, that it is written with an air of fearless veracity, and with the spirit of a man who thinks his cause just, and his behaviour without reproach; nor does there appear any reason for doubting that Cheynel spoke and acted as he relates: for he does not publish an apology, but a challenge, and writes not so much to obviate calumnies, as to gain from others that applause which he seems to have bestowed very liberally upon himself for his behaviour on that occasion.

Since, therefore, this relation is credible, a great part of it being supported by evidence which cannot be refuted, Mr. Maizeaux seems very justly, in his Life of Mr. Chillingworth, to oppose the common report, that his life was shortened by the inhumanity of those to whom he was a prisoner; for Cheynel appears to have preserved, amidst all his detestation of the opinions which he imputed to him,

him, a great kindness to his person, and veneration for his capacity; nor does he appear to have been cruel to him, otherwise than by that incessant importunity of disputation, to which he was doubtless incited by a sincere belief of the danger of his soul, if he should die without renouncing some of his opinions.

The same kindness which made him desirous to convert him before his death, would incline him to preserve him from dying before he was converted; and accordingly we find, that when the castle was yielded, he took care to procure him a commodious lodging: when he was to have been unseasonably removed, he attempted to shorten his journey, which he knew would be dangerous; when the physician was disgusted by Chillingworth's distrust, he prevailed upon him, as the symptoms grew more dangerous, to renew his visits; and when death left no other act of kindness to be practised, procured him the rites of burial, which some would have denied him.

Having done thus far justice to the humanity of Cheynel, it is proper to enquire how far he deserves blame. He appears to have extended none of that kindness to the opinions of Chillingworth, which he shewed to his person; for he interprets every word in the worst sense, and seems industrious to discover in every line heresies, which might have escaped for ever any other apprehension: he appears always suspicious of some latent malignity, and ready to persecute what he only suspects, with the same violence as if it had been openly avowed: in all his procedure he shews himself sincere, but without candour.

About

About this time Cheynel, in pursuance of his natural ardour, attended the army under the command of the earl of Essex, and added the praise of valour to that of learning; for he distinguished himself so much by his personal bravery, and obtained so much skill in the science of war, that his commands were obeyed by the colonels with as much respect as those of the general. He seems, indeed, to have been born a soldier, for he had an intrepidity which was never to be shaken by any danger, and a spirit of enterprise not to be discouraged by difficulty, which were supported by an unusual degree of bodily strength. His services of all kinds were thought of so much importance by the Parliament, that they bestowed upon him the living of Petworth, in Sussex. This living was of the value of 700*l. per annum*, from which they had ejected a man remarkable for his loyalty, and therefore, in their opinion, not worthy of such revenues. And it may be enquired, whether in accepting this preferment, Cheynel did not violate the protestation which he makes in the passage already recited, and whether he did not suffer his resolutions to be over-borne by the temptations of wealth.

In 1646, when Oxford was taken by the forces of the Parliament, and the reformation of the University was resolved, Mr. Cheynel was sent, with six others, to prepare the way for a visitation; being authorised by the Parliament to preach in any of the churches, without regard to the right of the members of the university, that their doctrine might prepare their hearers for the changes which were intended.

When

When they arrived at Oxford, they began to execute their commission, by possessing themselves of the pulpits; but, if the relation of Wood* is to be regarded, were heard with very little veneration. Those who had been accustomed to the preachers of Oxford, and the liturgy of the church of England, were offended at the emptiness of their discourses, which were noisy and unmeaning; at the unusual gestures, the wild distortions, and the uncouth tone with which they were delivered: at the coldness of their prayers for the king, and the vehemence and exuberance of those which they did not fail to utter for *the blessed councils* and actions of the Parliament and army; and at, what was surely not to be remarked without indignation, their omission of the Lord's Prayer.

But power easily supplied the want of reverence, and they proceeded in their plan of reformation; and thinking sermons not so efficacious to conversion as private interrogatories and exhortations, they established a weekly meeting for *freeing tender consciences from scruple*, at a house that, from the business to which it was appropriated, was called the *Scruple-shop*.

With this project they were so well pleased, that they sent to the Parliament an account of it, which was afterwards printed, and is ascribed by Wood to Mr. Cheynel. They continued for some weeks to hold their meetings regularly, and to admit great numbers, whom curiosity, or a desire of conviction, or a compliance with the prevailing party, brought thither. But their tranquillity was quickly disturbed

* Vide Wood's Hist. Antiq. Oxon. *Orig. Edit.*

by

by the turbulence of the Independents, whose opinions then prevailed among the soldiers, and were very industriously propagated by the discourses of William Earbury, a preacher of great reputation among them, who one day, gathering a considerable number of his most zealous followers, went to the house appointed for the resolution of scruples, on a day which was set apart for the disquisition of the dignity and office of a minister, and began to dispute with great vehemence against the Presbyterians, whom he denied to have any true ministers among them, and whose assemblies he affirmed not to be the true church. He was opposed with equal heat by the Presbyterians, and at length they agreed to examine the point another day, in a regular disputation. Accordingly, they appointed the 12th of November for an enquiry, "whether, "in the Christian church, the office of minister is "committed to any particular persons?"

On the day fixed, the antagonists appeared each attended by great numbers; but when the question was proposed, they began to wrangle, not about the doctrine which they had engaged to examine, but about the terms of the proposition, which the Independents alleged to be changed since their agreement; and at length the soldiers insisted that the question should be, "Whether those who call themselves ministers have more right or power to preach "the gospel than any other man that is a Christian?" This question was debated for some time with great vehemence and confusion, but without any prospect of a conclusion. At length, one of the soldiers, who thought they had an equal right with the rest to engage in the controversy, demanded of the

Presby-

Presbyterians, whence they themselves received their orders, whether from bishops, or any other persons? This unexpected interrogatory put them to great difficulties; for it happened that they were all ordained by the bishops, which they durst not acknowledge, for fear of exposing themselves to a general censure, and being convicted from their own declarations, in which they had frequently condemned Episcopacy as contrary to Christianity; nor durst they deny it, because they might have been confuted, and must at once have sunk into contempt. The soldiers, seeing their perplexity, insulted them; and went away, boasting of their victory: nor did the Presbyterians, for some time, recover spirit enough to renew their meetings, or to proceed in the work of easing consciences.

Earbury, exulting at the victory, which, not his own abilities, but the subtilty of the soldier had procured him, began to vent his notions of every kind without scruple, and at length asserted, that "the "Saints had an equal measure of the divine nature "with our Saviour, though not equally manifest." At the same time he took upon him the dignity of a prophet, and began to utter predictions relating to the affairs of England and Ireland.

His prophecies were not much regarded, but his doctrine was censured by the Presbyterians in their pulpits; and Mr. Cheynel challenged him to a disputation, to which he agreed, and at his first appearance in St. Mary's church addressed his audience in the following manner:

"Christian friends, kind fellow-soldiers, and wor-
"thy students, I, the humble servant of all mankind,
"am

" am this day drawn, against my will, out of my cell " into this publick assembly, by the double chain of " accusation and a challenge from the pulpit. I have " been charged with heresy; I have been challenged " to come hither in a letter written by Mr. Francis " Cheynel. Here then I stand in defence of myself " and my doctrine, which I shall introduce with only " this declaration, that I claim not the office of a " minister on account of any outward call, though I " formerly received ordination, nor do I boast of " *illumination*, or the knowledge of our Saviour, " though I have been held in esteem by others, and " formerly by myself. For I now declare, that I " know nothing, and am nothing; nor would I be " thought of otherwise than as an enquirer and " seeker."

He then advanced his former position in stronger terms, and with additions equally detestable, which Cheynel attacked with the vehemence which, in so warm a temper, such horrid assertions might naturally excite. The dispute, frequently interrupted by the clamours of the audience, and tumults raised to disconcert Cheynel, who was very unpopular, continued about four hours, and then both the controvertists grew weary, and retired. The Presbyterians afterwards thought they should more speedily put an end to the heresies of Earbury by power than by argument; and, by soliciting General Fairfax, procured his removal.

Mr. Cheynel published an account of this dispute under the title of " Faith triumphing over Error and " Heresy in a Revelation," &c. nor can it be doubted but

but he had the victory, where his cause gave him so great superiority.

Somewhat before this, his capricious and petulant disposition engaged him in a controversy, from which he could not expect to gain equal reputation. Dr. Hammond had not long before published his *Practical Catechism*, in which Mr. Cheynel, according to his custom, found many errors implied, if not asserted; and therefore, as it was much read, thought it convenient to censure it in the pulpit. Of this Dr. Hammond being informed, desired him in a letter to communicate his objections; to which Mr. Cheynel returned an answer, written with his usual temper, and therefore somewhat perverse. The controversy was drawn out to a considerable length; and the papers on both sides were afterwards made publick by Dr. Hammond.

In 1647, it was determined by parliament, that the reformation of Oxford should be more vigorously carried on; and Mr. Cheynel was nominated one of the visitors. The general process of the visitation, the firmness and fidelity of the students, the address by which the enquiry was delayed, and the steadiness with which it was opposed, which are very particularly related by Wood, and after him by Walker, it is not necessary to mention here, as they relate not more to Dr. Cheynel's life than to those of his associates.

There is, indeed, some reason to believe that he was more active and virulent than the rest, because he appears to have been charged in a particular manner with some of their most unjustifiable measures. He was accused of proposing that the members of the University

University should be denied the assistance of counsel, and was lampooned by name, as a madman, in a satire written on the visitation.

One action, which shews the violence of his temper, and his disregard both of humanity and decency, when they came in competition with his passions, must not be forgotten. The visitors, being offended at the obstinacy of Dr. Fell, Dean of Christ-church, and Vice-chancellor of the University, having first deprived him of his vice-chancellorship, determined afterwards to dispossess him of his deanery; and, in the course of their proceedings, thought it proper to seize upon his chambers in the college. This was an act which most men would willingly have referred to the officers to whom the law assigned it; but Cheynel's fury prompted him to a different conduct. He, and three more of the visitors, went and demanded admission; which, being steadily refused them, they obtained by the assistance of a file of soldiers, who forced the doors with pick-axes. Then entering, they saw Mrs. Fell in the lodgings, Dr. Fell being in prison at London, and ordered her to quit them; but found her not more obsequious than her husband. They repeated their orders with menaces, but were not able to prevail upon her to remove. They then retired, and left her exposed to the brutality of the soldiers, whom they commanded to keep possession, which Mrs. Fell, however, did not leave. About nine days afterwards she received another visit of the same kind from the new chancellor, the earl of Pembroke; who having, like the others, ordered her to depart without effect, treated her with reproachful language, and at last commanded the soldiers to take her

her up in her chair, and carry her out of doors. Her daughters, and some other gentlewomen that were with her, were afterwards treated in the same manner; one of whom predicted, without dejection, that she should enter the house again with less difficulty, at some other time: nor was she mistaken in her conjecture, for Dr. Fell lived to be restored to his deanery.

At the reception of the chancellor, Cheynel, as the most accomplished of the visitors, had the province of presenting him with the ensigns of his office, some of which were counterfeit, and addressing him with a proper oration. Of this speech, which Wood has preserved, I shall give some passages, by which a judgment may be made of his oratory.

Of the staves of the beadles he observes, that "some are stained with double guilt, that some are "pale with fear, and that others have been made "use of as crutches, for the support of bad causes "and desperate fortunes;" and he remarks of the book of statutes which he delivers, that "the ignorant "may perhaps admire the splendor of the cover, but "the learned know that the real treasure is within." Of these two sentences it is easily discovered, that the first is forced and unnatural, and the second trivial and low.

Soon afterwards Mr. Cheynel was admitted to the degree of Bachelor of Divinity, for which his grace had been denied him in 1641, and, as he then suffered for an ill-timed assertion of the Presbyterian doctrines, he obtained that his degree should be dated from the time at which he was refused it; an honour

nour which, however, did not secure him from being soon after publickly reproached as a madman.

But the vigour of Cheynel was thought by his companions to deserve profit as well as honour; and Dr. Bailey, the president of St. John's College, being not more obedient to the authority of the parliament than the rest, was deprived of his revenues and authority, with which Mr. Cheynel was immediately invested; who, with his usual coolness and modesty, took possession of the lodgings soon after, by breaking open the doors.

This preferment being not thought adequate to the deserts or abilities of Mr. Cheynel, it was therefore desired, by the committee of Parliament, that the visitors would recommend him to the lectureship of divinity founded by the Lady Margaret. To recommend him, and to choose was at that time the same; and he had now the pleasure of propagating his darling doctrine of predestination, without interruption, and without danger.

Being thus flushed with power and success, there is little reason for doubting that he gave way to his natural vehemence, and indulged himself in the utmost excesses of raging zeal, by which he was indeed so much distinguished, that, in a satire mentioned by Wood, he is dignified by the title of Arch-visitor; an appellation which he seems to have been industrious to deserve by severity and inflexibility: for, not contented with the commission which he and his colleagues had already received, he procured six or seven of the members of Parliament to meet privately in Mr. Rouse's lodgings, and assume the style and authority

authority of a committee, and from them obtained a more extensive and tyrannical power, by which the visitors were enabled to force the *solemn League and Covenant* and the *negative Oath* upon all the members of the University, and to prosecute those for a contempt who did not appear to a citation, at whatever distance they might be, and whatever reasons they might assign for their absence.

By this method he easily drove great numbers from the University, whose places he supplied with men of his own opinion, whom he was very industrious to draw from other parts, with promises of making a liberal provision for them out of the spoils of hereticks and malignants.

Having, in time, almost extirpated those opinions which he found so prevalent at his arrival, or at least obliged those, who would not recant, to an appearance of conformity, he was at leisure for employments which deserve to be recorded with greater commendation. About this time, many Socinian writers began to publish their notions with great boldness, which the Presbyterians, considering as heretical and impious, thought it necessary to confute; and therefore Cheynel, who had now obtained his doctor's degree, was desired, in 1649, to write a vindication of the doctrine of the Trinity, which he performed, and published the next year.

He drew up likewise a confutation of some Socinian tenets advanced by John Fry; a man who spent great part of his life in ranging from one religion to another, and who sat as one of the judges on the king, but was expelled afterwards from the house of commons, and disabled from sitting in parliament.

Dr.

Dr. Cheynel is said to have shewn himself evidently superior to him in the controversy, and was answered by him only with an opprobrious book against the Presbyterian clergy.

Of the remaining part of his life, there is found only an obscure and confused account. He quitted the presidentship of St. John's, and the professorship, in 1650, as Calamy relates, because he would not take the engagement; and gave a proof that he could suffer as well as act in a cause which he believed just. We have, indeed, no reason to question his resolution, whatever occasion might be given to exert it; nor is it probable that he feared affliction more than danger, or that he would not have borne persecution himself for those opinions which inclined him to persecute others.

He did not suffer much upon this occasion; for he retained the living of Petworth, to which he thenceforward confined his labours, and where he was very assiduous, and, as Calamy affirms, very successful in the exercise of his ministry, it being his peculiar character to be warm and zealous in all his undertakings.

This heat of his disposition, increased by the uncommon turbulence of the times in which he lived, and by the opposition to which the unpopular nature of some of his employments exposed him, was at last heightened to distraction, so that he was for some years disordered in his understanding, as both Wood and Calamy relate, but with such difference as might be expected from their opposite principles. Wood appears to think, that a tendency to madness was discoverable in a great part of his life; Calamy, that it

was

was only transient and accidental, though, in his additions to his first narrative, he pleads it as an extenuation of that fury with which his kindest friends confess him to have acted on some occasions. Wood declares, that he died little better than distracted; Calamy, that he was perfectly recovered to a sound mind before the Restoration, at which time he retired to Preston, a small village in Sussex, being turned out of his living at Petworth.

It does not appear that he kept his living till the general ejection of the Nonconformists; and it is not unlikely that the asperity of his carriage, and the known virulence of his temper, might have raised him enemies, who were willing to make him feel the effects of persecution which he had so furiously incited against others; but of this incident of his life there is no particular account.

After his deprivation, he lived (till his death, which happened in 1665) at a small village near Chichester, upon a paternal estate, not augmented by the large preferments wasted upon him in the triumphs of his party; having been remarkable, throughout his life, for hospitality and contempt of money.

C A V E*.

EDWARD CAVE was born at Newton in Warwickshire, Feb. 29, 1691. His father (Joseph) was the younger son of Mr. Edward Cave, of Cave's-in-the-Hole, a lone house, on the Street-road in the same county, which took its name from the occupier; but having concurred with his elder brother in cutting off the intail of a small hereditary estate, by which act it was lost from the family, he was reduced to follow in Rugby the trade of a shoemaker. He was a man of good reputation in his narrow circle, and remarkable for strength and rustick intrepidity. He lived to a great age, and was in his latter years supported by his son.

It was fortunate for Edward Cave, that, having a disposition to literary attainments, he was not cut off by the poverty of his parents from opportunities of cultivating his faculties. The school of Rugby, in which he had, by the rules of its foundation, a right

* This life first appeared in the Gentleman's Magazine for 1754, and is now printed from a copy revised by the author, at my request in 1781. N.

to

to be instructed, was then in high reputation, under the Rev. Mr. Holyock, to whose care most of the neighbouring families, even of the highest rank, entrusted their sons. He had judgment to discover, and, for some time, generosity to encourage, the genius of young Cave; and was so well pleased with his quick progress in the school, that he declared his resolution to breed him for the university, and recommended him as a servitor to some of his scholars of high rank. But prosperity which depends upon the caprice of others is of short duration. Cave's superiority in literature exalted him to an invidious familiarity with boys who were far above him in rank and expectations; and, as in unequal associations it always happens, whatever unlucky prank was played was imputed to Cave. When any mischief, great or small, was done, though perhaps others boasted of the stratagem when it was successful, yet upon detection or miscarriage the fault was sure to fall upon poor Cave.

At last, his mistress by some invisible means lost a favourite cock. Cave was, with little examination, stigmatized as the thief and murderer; not because he was more apparently criminal than others, but because he was more easily reached by vindictive justice. From that time Mr. Holyock withdrew his kindness visibly from him, and treated him with harshness, which the crime, in its utmost aggravation, could scarcely deserve; and which surely he would have forborne, had he considered how hardly the habitual influence of birth and fortune is resisted; and how frequently men, not wholly without sense of virtue, are betrayed to acts more atrocious than the

robbery of a hen-roost, by a desire of pleasing their superiors.

Those reflections his master never made, or made without effect; for under pretence that Cave obstructed the discipline of the school, by selling clandestine assistance, and supplying exercises to idlers, he was oppressed with unreasonable tasks, that there might be an opportunity of quarrelling with his failure; and when his diligence had surmounted them, no regard was paid to the performance Cave bore this persecution a while, and then left the school, and the hope of a literary education, to seek some other means of gaining a livelihood.

He was first placed with a collector of the excise. He used to recount with some pleasure a journey or two which he rode with him as his clerk, and relate the victories that he gained over the excisemen in grammatical disputations. But the insolence of his mistress, who employed him in servile drudgery, quickly disgusted him, and he went up to London in quest of more suitable employment.

He was recommended to a timber-merchant at the Bankside, and, while he was there on liking, is said to have given hopes of great mercantile abilities; but this place he soon left, I know not for what reason, and was bound apprentice to Mr. Collins, a printer of some reputation, and deputy alderman.

This was a trade for which men were formerly qualified by a literary education, and which was pleasing to Cave, because it furnished some employment for his scholastick attainments. Here, therefore, he resolved to settle, though his master and mistress lived in perpetual discord, and their house

was

was therefore no comfortable habitation. From the inconveniences of these domestick tumults he was soon released, having in only two years attained so much skill in his art, and gained so much the confidence of his master, that he was sent without any superintendant to conduct a printing-office at Norwich, and publish a weekly paper. In this undertaking he met with some opposition, which produced a publick controversy, and procured young Cave the reputation of a writer.

His master died before his apprenticeship was expired, and he was not able to bear the perverseness of his mistress. He therefore quitted her house upon a stipulated allowance, and married a young widow, with whom he lived at Bow. When his apprenticeship was over, he worked as a journeyman at the printing-house of Mr. Barber, a man much distinguished, and employed by the Tories, whose principles had at that time so much prevalence with Cave, that he was for some years a writer in "Mist's Journal;" which, though he afterwards obtained by his wife's interest a small place in the Post-office, he for some time continued. But as interest is powerful, and conversation, however mean, in time persuasive, he by degrees inclined to another party; in which, however, he was always moderate, though steady and determined.

When he was admitted into the Post-office, he still continued, at his intervals of attendance, to exercise his trade, or to employ himself with some typographical business. He corrected the "Gradus ad Parnassum;" and was liberally rewarded by the company of Stationers. He wrote an "Account of the

the Criminals," which had for some time a considerable sale; and published many little pamphlets that accident brought into his hands, of which it would be very difficult to recover the memory. By the correspondence which his place in the Post-office facilitated, he procured country news-papers, and sold their intelligence to a Journalist in London, for a guinea a week.

He was afterwards raised to the office of clerk of the franks, in which he acted with great spirit and firmness; and often stopped franks which were given by members of parliament to their friends, because he thought such extension of a peculiar right illegal. This raised many complaints, and having stopped, among others, a frank given to the old duchess of Marlborough by Mr. Walter Plummer, he was cited before the house as for a breach of privilege, and accused, I suppose very unjustly, of opening letters to detect them. He was treated with great harshness and severity, but, declining their questions by pleading his oath of secrecy, was at last dismissed. And it must be recorded to his honour, that, when he was ejected from his office, he did not think himself discharged from his trust, but continued to refuse to his nearest friends any information about the management of the office.

By this constancy of diligence and diversification of employment, he in time collected a sum sufficient for the purchase of a small printing-office, and began the "Gentleman's Magazine," a periodical pamphlet, of which the scheme is known wherever the English language is spoken. To this undertaking he owed the affluence in which he passed the last twenty years of

of his life, and the fortune which he left behind him, which, though large, had been yet larger, had he not rashly and wantonly impaired it by innumerable projects, of which I know not that ever one succeeded.

"The Gentleman's Magazine," which has now subsisted fifty years, and still continues to enjoy the favour of the world*, is one of the most successful and lucrative pamphlets which literary history has upon record, and therefore deserves, in this narrative, particular notice.

Mr. Cave, when he formed the project, was far from expecting the success which he found; and others had so little prospect of its consequence, that though he had for several years talked of his plan among printers and booksellers, none of them thought it worth the trial. That they were not restrained by virtue from the execution of another man's design, was sufficiently apparent as soon as that design began to be gainful; for in a few years a multitude of magazines arose and perished; only the London Magazine, supported by a powerful association of booksellers, and circulated with all the art and all the cunning of trade, exempted itself from the general fate of Cave's invaders, and obtained, though not an equal, yet a considerable sale †.

Cave now began to aspire to popularity; and being a greater lover of poetry than any other art, he sometimes offered subjects for poems, and proposed prizes for the best performers. The first prize was 50l. for which, being but newly acquainted with

* This was said in the beginning of the year 1781; and may with truth be now repeated. N.

† The London Magazine ceased to exist in 1785. N.

wealth,

wealth, and thinking the influence of 50l. extremely great, he expected the first authors of the kingdom to appear as competitors; and offered the allotment of the prize to the universities. But when the time came, no name was seen among the writers that had ever been seen before; the universities and several private men rejected the province of assigning the prize*. At all this Mr. Cave wondered for a while; but his natural judgment, and a wider acquaintance with the world, soon cured him of his astonishment, as of many other prejudices and errors. Nor have many men been seen raised by accident or industry to sudden riches, that retained less of the meanness of their former state.

He continued to improve his Magazine, and had the satisfaction of seeing its success proportionate to his diligence, till in 1751, his wife died of an asthma. He seemed not at first much affected by her death, but in a few days lost his sleep and his appetite, which he never recovered; but after having lingered about two years, with many vicissitudes of amendment and relapse, fell by drinking acid liquors into a diarrhœa, and afterwards into a kind of lethargick insensibility, in which one of the last acts of reason which he exerted was fondly to press the hand that is now writing this little narrative. He died on the 10th of January 1754, having just concluded the twenty-third annual collection†.

He

* The determination was left to Dr. Cromwell Mortimer and Dr. Birch, and by the latter the award was made, which may be seen in the Gent. Mag. vol. vi. p. 59. N.

† Mr. Cave was buried in the church of St. James, Clerkenwell, without an epitaph; but the following inscription at Rugby, from

He was a man of a large stature, not only tall but bulky, and was, when young, of remarkable strength and activity. He was generally healthful, and capable of much labour and long application; but in the latter years of his life was afflicted with the gout, which he endeavoured to cure or alleviate by a total abstinence both from strong liquors and animal food. From animal food he abstained about four years, and from

from the pen of Dr. Hawkesworth, is here transcribed from the "Anecdotes of Mr. Bowyer," p. 88

Near this place lies
The body of
JOSEPH CAVE,
Late of this parish;
Who departed this Life, Nov. 18, 1747,
Aged 79 years.
He was placed by Providence in a humble station;
But
Industry abundantly supplied the wants of Nature,
And
Temperance blest him with
Content and Wealth.
As he was an affectionate Father,
He was made happy in the decline of life
By the deserved eminence of his eldest Son
EDWARD CAVE,
Who without interest, fortune, or connection,
By the native force of his own genius,
Assisted only by a classical education,
Which he received at the Grammar-school
Of this Town,
Planned, executed, and established
A literary work, called
THE
GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE.

Whereby

from strong liquors much longer; but the gout continued unconquered, perhaps unabated.

His resolution and perseverance were very uncommon; in whatever he undertook, neither expence nor fatigue were able to repress him; but his constancy was calm, and to those who did not know him appeared faint and languid; but he always went forward, though he moved slowly.

The same chilness of mind was observable in his conversation: he was watching the minutest accent of those whom he disgusted by seeming inattention; and his visitant was surprized when he came a second time, by preparations to execute the scheme which he supposed never to have been heard.

Whereby he acquired an ample fortune,
The whole of which devolved to his family.
Here also lies
The body of WILLIAM CAVE,
Second Son of the said JOSEPH CAVE,
Who died May 2, 1757, aged 62 years;
And who, having survived his elder brother
EDWARD CAVE,
Inherited from him a competent estate;
And, in gratitude to his benefactor,
Ordered this monument to perpetuate his memory.

He liv'd a patriarch in his numerous race,
And shew'd in charity a Christian's grace:
Whate'er a friend or parent feels, he knew;
His hand was open, and his heart was true;
In what he gain'd and gave, he taught mankind,
A grateful always is a generous mind.
Here rest his clay! his soul must ever rest,
Who bless'd when living, dying must be blest. N.

He

He was, consistently with this general tranquillity of mind, a tenacious maintainer, though not a clamorous demander of his right. In his youth having summoned his fellow journeymen to concert measures against the oppression of their masters, he mounted a kind of rostrum, and harangued them so efficaciously, that they determined to resist all future invasions; and when the stamp offices demanded to stamp the last half sheet of the Magazines, Mr. Cave alone defeated their claim, to which the proprietors of the rival Magazines would meanly have submitted.

He was a friend rather easy and constant, than zealous and active; yet many instances might be given, where both his money and his diligence were employed liberally for others. His enmity was in like manner cool and deliberate; but though cool, it was not insidious, and though deliberate, not pertinacious.

His mental faculties were slow. He saw little at a time, but that little he saw with great exactness. He was long in finding the right, but seldom failed to find it at last. His affections were not easily gained, and his opinions not quickly discovered. His reserve, as it might hide his faults, concealed his virtues: but such he was, as they who best knew him have most lamented.

KING OF PRUSSIA*.

CHARLES FREDERICK the present king of Prussia, whose actions and designs now keep Europe in attention, is the eldest son of Frederick William by Sophia Dorothea, daughter of George the First king of England. He was born January 24, 1711-12. Of his early years nothing remarkable has been transmitted to us. As he advanced towards manhood, he became remarkable by his disagreement with his father.

The late king of Prussia was of a disposition violent and arbitrary, of narrow views, and vehement passions, earnestly engaged in little pursuits, or in schemes terminating in some speedy consequence, without any plan of lasting advantage to himself or his subjects, or any prospect of distant events. He was therefore always busy though no effects of his activity ever appeared, and always eager though he had nothing to gain. His behaviour was to the last degree rough and savage. The least provocation, whether designed or accidental, was returned by blows, which he did not always forbear to the queen and princesses.

* First printed in the Literary Magazine for 1756. H.

From

From such a king and such a father it was not any enormous violation of duty in the immediate heir of a kingdom sometimes to differ in opinion, and to maintain that difference with decent pertinacity. A prince of a quick sagacity and comprehensive knowledge must find many practices in the conduct of affairs which he could not approve, and some which he could scarcely forbear to oppose.

The chief pride of the old king was to be master of the tallest regiment in Europe. He therefore brought together from all parts men above the common military standard. To exceed the height of six feet was a certain recommendation to notice, and to approach that of seven a claim to distinction. Men will readily go where they are sure to be caressed; and he had therefore such a collection of giants as perhaps was never seen in the world before.

To review this towering regiment was his daily pleasure, and to perpetuate it was so much his care, that when he met a tall woman, he immediately commanded one of his Titanian retinue to marry her, that they might propagate procerity, and produce heirs to the father's habiliments.

In all this there was apparent folly, but there was no crime. The tall regiment made a fine shew at an expence not much greater, when once it was collected, than would have been bestowed upon common men. But the king's military pastimes were sometimes more pernicious. He maintained a numerous army, of which he made no other use than to review and to talk of it; and when he, or perhaps his emissaries, saw a boy, whose form and sprightliness promised a future soldier, he ordered a kind of badge

to

to be put about his neck, by which he was marked out for the service, like the sons of Christian captives in Turkey; and his parents were forbidden to destine him to any other mode of life.

This was sufficiently oppressive, but this was not the utmost of his tyranny. He had learned, though otherwise perhaps no very great politician, that to be rich was to be powerful; but that the riches of a king ought to be seen in the opulence of his subjects, he wanted either ability or benevolence to understand. He therefore raised exorbitant taxes from every kind of commodity and possession, and piled up the money in his treasury, from which it issued no more. How the land which had paid taxes once was to pay them a second time, how imposts could be levied without commerce, or commerce continued without money, it was not his custom to enquire. Eager to snatch at money, and delighted to count it, he felt new joy at every receipt, and thought himself enriched by the impoverishment of his dominions.

By which of these freaks of royalty the prince was offended, or whether, as perhaps more frequently happens, the offences of which he complained were of a domestick and personal kind, it is not easy to discover. But his resentment, whatever was its cause, rose so high, that he resolved not only to leave his father's court, but his territories, and to seek a refuge among the neighbouring or kindred princes. It is generally believed that his intention was to come to England, and live under the protection of his uncle, till his father's death, or change of conduct, should give him liberty to return.

His

His design, whatever it was, he concerted with an officer in the army, whose name was Kat, a man in whom he placed great confidence, and whom, having chosen him for the companion of his flight, he necessarily trusted with the preparatory measures. A prince cannot leave his country with the speed of a meaner fugitive. Something was to be provided, and something to be adjusted. And, whether Kat found the agency of others necessary, and therefore was constrained to admit some partners of the secret; whether levity or vanity incited him to disburden himself of a trust that swelled in his bosom, or to shew to a friend or mistress his own importance; or whether it be in itself difficult for princes to transact any thing in secret; so it was, that the king was informed of the intended flight, and the prince and his favourite, a little before the time settled for their departure, were arrested, and confined in different places.

The life of princes is seldom in danger, the hazard of their irregularities falls only on those whom ambition or affection combines with them. The king, after an imprisonment of some time, set his son at liberty; but poor Kat was ordered to be tried for a capital crime. The court examined the cause, and acquitted him; the king remanded him to a second trial, and obliged his judges to condemn him. In consequence of the sentence thus tyrannically extorted, he was publickly beheaded, leaving behind him some papers of reflections made in the prison, which were afterwards printed, and among others an admonition to the prince, for whose sake he suffered, not to foster

in

in himself the opinion of destiny, for that a Providence is discoverable in every thing round us.

This cruel prosecution of a man who had committed no crime, but by compliance with influence not easily to be resisted, was not the only act by which the old king irritated his son. A lady with whom the prince was suspected of intimacy, perhaps more than virtue allowed, was seized, I know not upon what accusation, and, by the king's order, notwithstanding all the reason of decency and tenderness that operate in other countries, and other judicatures, was publickly whipped in the streets of Berlin.

At last, that the prince might feel the power of a king and a father in its utmost rigour, he was in 1733 married against his will to the princess Elizabetha Christina of Brunswick Lunenburg Beveren. He married her indeed at his father's command, but without professing for her either esteem or affection, and considering the claim of parental authority fully satisfied by the external ceremony, obstinately and perpetually during the life of his father refrained from her bed. The poor princess lived about seven years in the court of Berlin, in a state which the world has not often seen, a wife without a husband, married so far as to engage her person to a man who did not desire her affection, and of whom it was doubtful whether he thought himself restrained from the power of repudiation by an act performed under evident compulsion.

Thus he lived secluded from publick business, in contention with his father, in alienation from his wife. This state of uneasiness he found the only means

means of softening. He diverted his mind from the scenes about him by studies and liberal amusements. The studies of princes seldom produce great effects, for princes draw with meaner mortals the lot of understanding; and since of many students not more than one can be hoped to advance far towards perfection, it is scarcely to be expected that we should find that one a prince; that the desire of science should overpower in any mind the love of pleasure, when it is always present, or always within call; that laborious meditation should be preferred in the days of youth to amusements and festivity; or that perseverance should press forward in contempt of flattery: and that he, in whom moderate acquisitions would be extolled as prodigies, should exact from himself that excellence of which the whole world conspires to spare him the necessity.

In every great performance, perhaps in every great character, part is the gift of nature, part the contribution of accident, and part, very often not the greatest part, the effect of voluntary election, and regular design. The king of Prussia was undoubtedly born with more than common abilities; but that he has cultivated them with more than common diligence, was probably the effect of his peculiar condition, of that which he then considered as cruelty and misfortune.

In this long interval of unhappiness and obscurity, he acquired skill in the mathematical sciences, such as is said to put him on the level with those who have made them the business of their lives. This is probably to say too much: the acquisitions of kings are always magnified. His skill in poetry and in the

French language has been loudly praised by Voltaire, a judge without exception, if his honesty were equal to his knowledge. Musick he not only understands, but practises on the German flute in the highest perfection; so that, according to the regal censure of Philip of Macedon, he may be ashamed to play so well.

He may be said to owe to the difficulties of his youth an advantage less frequently obtained by princes than literature and mathematicks. The necessity of passing his time without pomp, and of partaking of the pleasures and labours of a lower station, made him acquainted with the various forms of life, and with the genuine passions, interests, desires, and distresses, of mankind. Kings, without this help, from temporary infelicity, see the world in a mist, which magnifies every thing near them, and bounds their view to a narrow compass, which few are able to extend by the mere force of curiosity. I have always thought that what Cromwell had more than our lawful kings, he owed to the private condition in which he first entered the world, and in which he long continued: in that state he learned his art of secret transaction, and the knowledge by which he was able to oppose zeal to zeal, and make one enthusiast destroy another.

The king of Prussia gained the same arts, and, being born to fairer opportunities of using them, brought to the throne the knowledge of a private man without the guilt of usurpation. Of this general acquaintance with the world there may be found some traces in his whole life. His conversation is like that of other men upon common topics, his letters have an

air

air of familiar elegance, and his whole conduct is that of a man who has to do with men, and who is not ignorant what motives will prevail over friends or enemies.

In 1740, the old king fell sick, and spoke and acted in his illness with his usual turbulence and roughness, reproaching his physicians in the grossest terms with their unskilfulness and impotence, and imputing to their ignorance or wickedness the pain which their prescriptions failed to relieve. These insults they bore with the submission which is commonly paid to despotick monarchs; till at last the celebrated Hoffman was consulted, who failing, like the rest, to give ease to his majesty, was, like the rest, treated with injurious language. Hoffman, conscious of his own merit, replied, that he could not bear reproaches which he did not deserve; that he had tried all the remedies that art could supply, or nature could admit; that he was, indeed, a professor by his majesty's bounty; but that, if his abilities or integrity were doubted, he was willing to leave, not only the University, but the kingdom, and that he could not be driven into any place where the name of Hoffman would want respect. The king, however unaccustomed to such returns, was struck with conviction of his own indecency, told Hoffman, that he had spoken well, and requested him to continue his attendance.

The king, finding his distemper gaining upon his strength, grew at last sensible that his end was approaching, and, ordering the prince to be called to his bed, laid several injunctions upon him, of which one was to perpetuate the tall regiment by continual

recruits, and another to receive his espoused wife. The prince gave him a respectful answer, but wisely avoided to diminish his own right or power by an absolute promise; and the king died uncertain of the fate of the tall regiment.

The young king began his reign with great expectations, which he has yet surpassed. His father's faults produced many advantages to the first years of his reign. He had an army of seventy thousand men well disciplined, without any imputation of severity to himself, and was master of a vast treasure without the crime or reproach of raising it. It was publickly said in our house of commons, that he had eight millions sterling of our money; but I believe he that said it had not considered how difficultly eight millions would be found in all the Prussian dominions. Men judge of what they do not see by that which they see. We are used to talk in England of millions with great familiarity, and imagine that there is the same affluence of money in other countries, in countries whose manufactures are few, and commerce little.

Every man's first cares are necessarily domestick. The king, being now no longer under influence, or its appearance, determined how to act towards the unhappy lady who had possessed for seven years the empty title of the princess of Prussia. The papers of those times exhibited the conversation of their first interview; as if the king, who plans campaigns in silence, would not accommodate a difference with his wife, but with writers of news admitted as witnesses. It is certain that he received her as queen, but whether he treats her as a wife is yet in dispute.

In

In a few days his resolution was known with regard to the tall regiment; for some recruits being offered him, he rejected them; and this body of giants, by continued disregard, mouldered away.

He treated his mother with great respect, ordered that she should bear the title of *Queen-mother*, and that, instead of addressing him as *His Majesty*, she should only call him *Son*.

As he was passing soon after between Berlin and Potsdam, a thousand boys, who had been marked out for military service, surrounded his coach, and cried out, "Merciful king! deliver us from our slavery." He promised them their liberty, and ordered, the next day, that the badge should be taken off.

He still continued that correspondence with learned men which he began when he was prince; and the eyes of all scholars, a race of mortals formed for dependence, were upon him, as a man likely to renew the times of patronage, and to emulate the bounties of Lewis the Fourteenth.

It soon appeared that he was resolved to govern with very little ministerial assistance: he took cognizance of every thing with his own eyes; declared, that in all contrarieties of interest between him and his subjects, the publick good should have the preference; and in one of the first exertions of regal power banished the prime minister and favourite of his father, as one that had *betrayed his master, and abused his trust*.

He then declared his resolution to grant a general toleration of religion, and among other liberalities of concession allowed the profession of Free Masonry. It is the great taint of his character, that he has given

given reason to doubt, whether this toleration is the effect of charity or indifference, whether he means to support good men of every religion, or considers all religions as equally good.

There had subsisted for some time in Prussia an order called the *Order for Favour*, which, according to its denomination, had been conferred with very little distinction. The king instituted the *Order for Merit*, with which he honoured those whom he considered as deserving. There were some who thought their merit not sufficiently recompensed by this new title; but he was not very ready to grant pecuniary rewards. Those who were most in his favour he sometimes presented with snuff-boxes, on which was inscribed *L'amitie augmente le prix.*

He was, however, charitable, if not liberal, for he ordered the magistrates of the several districts to be very attentive to the relief of the poor; and if the funds established for that use were not sufficient, permitted that the deficiency should be supplied out of the revenues of the town.

One of his first cares was the advancement of learning. Immediately upon his accession, he wrote to Rollin and Voltaire, that he desired the continuance of their friendship; and sent for Mr. Maupertuis, the principal of the French academicians, who passed a winter in Lapland, to verify, by the mensuration of a degree near the Pole, the Newtonian doctrine of the form of the earth. He requested of Maupertuis to come to Berlin, to settle an academy, in terms of great ardour and great condescension.

At the same time, he shewed the world that literary amusements were not likely, as has more than

once

once happened to royal students, to withdraw him from the care of the kingdom, or make him forget his interest. He began by reviving a claim to Herstal and Hermal, two districts in the possession of the bishop of Liege. When he sent his commissary to demand the homage of the inhabitants, they refused him admission, declaring that they acknowledged no sovereign but the bishop. The king then wrote a letter to the bishop, in which he complained of the violation of his right, and the contempt of his authority, charged the prelate with countenancing the late act of disobedience, and required an answer in two days.

In three days the answer was sent, in which the bishop founds his claim to the two lordships upon a grant of Charles the Fifth, guaranteed by France and Spain; alledges that his predecessors had enjoyed this grant above a century, and that he never intended to infringe the rights of Prussia; but as the house of Brandenburgh had always made some pretensions to that territory, he was willing to do what other bishops had offered, to purchase that claim for an hundred thousand crowns.

To every man that knows the state of the feudal countries, the intricacy of their pedigrees, the confusion of their alliances, and the different rules of inheritance that prevail in different places, it will appear evident, that of reviving antiquated claims there can be no end, and that the possession of a century is a better title than can commonly be produced. So long a prescription supposes an acquiescence in the other claimants; and that acquiescence supposes also some reason, perhaps now unknown, for which the claim

claim was forborne. Whether this rule could be considered as valid in the controversy between these sovereigns may, however, be doubted, for the bishop's answer seems to imply, that the title of the house of Brandenburgh had been kept alive by repeated claims, though the seizure of the territory had been hitherto forborne.

The king did not suffer his claim to be subjected to any altercations, but, having published a declaration, in which he charged the bishop with violence and injustice, and remarked that the feudal laws allowed every man whose possession was withheld from him, to enter it with an armed force, he immediately dispatched two thousand soldiers into the controverted countries, where they lived without controul, exercising every kind of military tyranny, till the cries of the inhabitants forced the bishop to relinquish them to the quiet government of Prussia.

This was but a petty acquisition; the time was now come when the king of Prussia was to form and execute greater designs. On the 9th of October, 1740, half Europe was thrown into confusion by the death of Charles the Sixth, emperor of Germany, by whose death all the hereditary dominions of the house of Austria descended, according to the pragmatick sanction, to his eldest daughter, who was married to the duke of Lorrain, at the time of the emperor's death, duke of Tuscany.

By how many securities the pragmatick sanction was fortified, and how little it was regarded when those securities became necessary: how many claimants started up at once to the several dominions of the house of Austria; how vehemently their pretensions were

were enforced, and how many invasions were threatened or attempted: the distresses of the emperor's daughter, known for several years by the title only of the Queen of Hungary, because Hungary was the only country to which her claim had not been disputed: the firmness with which she struggled with her difficulties, and the good fortune by which she surmounted them; the narrow plan of this essay will not suffer me to relate. Let them be told by some other writer of more leisure and wider intelligence.

Upon the emperor's death, many of the German princes fell upon the Austrian territories as upon a dead carcase, to be dismembered among them without resistance. Among these, with whatever justice, certainly with very little generosity, was the king of Prussia, who, having assembled his troops, as was imagined, to support the pragmatick sanction, on a sudden entered Silesia with thirty thousand men, publishing a declaration, in which he disclaims any design of injuring the rights of the house of Austria, but urges his claim to Silesia, as rising *from ancient conventions of family and confraternity between the house of Brandenburg and the princes of Silesia, and other honourable titles.* He says, the fear of being defeated by other pretenders to the Austrian dominions, obliged him to enter Silesia without any previous expostulation with the queen, and that he shall *strenuously espouse the interests of the house of Austria.*

Such a declaration was, I believe, in the opinion of all Europe, nothing less than the aggravation of hostility by insult, and was received by the Austrians with suitable indignation. The king pursued his purpose, marched forward, and in the frontiers of Silesia

lesia made a speech to his followers, in which he told them, that he considered them rather "as friends "than subjects, that the troops of Brandenburg had "been always eminent for their bravery, that they "would always fight in his presence, and that he "would recompense those who should distinguish "themselves in his service, rather as a father than "as a king."

The civilities of the great are never thrown away. The soldiers would naturally follow such a leader with alacrity; especially because they expected no opposition: but human expectations are frequently deceived.

Entering thus suddenly into a country which he was supposed rather likely to protect than to invade, he acted for some time with absolute authority: but supposing that this submission would not always last, he endeavoured to persuade the queen to a cession of Silesia, imagining that she would easily be persuaded to yield what was already lost. He therefore ordered his minister to declare at Vienna, "that he was "ready to guarantee all the German dominions of "the house of Austria: that he would conclude a "treaty with Austria, Russia, and the maritime "powers: that he would endeavour that the duke of "Lorrain should be elected emperor, and believed "that he could accomplish it: that he would imme-"diately advance to the queen two millions of flo-"rins: that, in recompence for all this, he required "Silesia to be yielded to him."

These seem not to be the offers of a prince very much convinced of his own right. He afterwards moderated his claim, and ordered his minister to hint at Vienna, that half of Silesia would content him.

The

The queen answered, that though the king alledged, as his reason for entering Silesia, the danger of the Austrian territories from other pretenders, and endeavoured to persuade her to give up part of her possessions for the preservation of the rest, it was evident that he was the first and only invader, and that, till he entered in a hostile manner, all her estates were unmolested.

To his promises of assistance she replied, "that "she set a high value on the king of Prussia's "friendship; but that he was already obliged to assist "her against invaders, both by the golden bull, and "the pragmatick sanction, of which he was a gua-"rantee; and that, if these ties were of no force, she "knew not what to hope from other engagements."

Of his offers of alliances with Russia and the maritime powers, she observed, that it could be never fit to alienate her dominions for the consolidation of an alliance formed only to keep them intire.

With regard to his interest in the election of an emperor, she expressed her gratitude in strong terms; but added, that the election ought to be free, and that it must be necessarily embarrassed by contentions thus raised in the heart of the empire. Of the pecuniary assistance proposed, she remarks, that no prince ever made war to oblige another to take money, and that the contributions already levied in Silesia exceed the two millions offered as its purchase.

She concluded, that as she values the king's friendship, she was willing to purchase it by any compliance but the diminution of her dominions, and exhorted him to perform his part in support of the pragmatick sanction.

The

The king, finding negotiation thus ineffectual, pushed forward his inroads, and now began to show how secretly he could take his measures. When he called a council of war, he proposed the question in a few words: all his generals wrote their opinions in his presence upon separate papers, which he carried away, and, examining them in private, formed his resolution, without imparting it otherwise than by his orders.

He began, not without policy, to seize first upon the estates of the clergy, an order every where necessary, and every where envied. He plundered the convents of their stores of provision; and told them, that he never had heard of any magazines erected by the apostles.

This insult was mean, because it was unjust; but those who could not resist were obliged to bear it. He proceeded in his expedition; and a detachment of his troops took Jablunca, one of the strong places of Silesia, which was soon after abandoned, for want of provisions, which the Austrian hussars, who were now in motion, were busy to interrupt.

One of the most remarkable events of the Silesia war, was the conquest of Great Glogaw, which was taken by an assault in the dark, headed by prince Leopold of Anhault Dessau. They arrived at the foot of the fortifications about twelve at night, and in two hours were masters of the place. In attempts of this kind many accidents happen which cannot be heard without surprise. Four Prussian grenadiers who had climbed the ramparts, missing their own company, met an Austrian captain with fifty-two men: they were at first frighted, and were about to retreat;

retreat; but, gathering courage, commanded the Austrians to lay down their arms, and in the terror of darkness and confusion were unexpectedly obeyed.

At the same time a conspiracy to kill or carry away the king of Prussia was said to be discovered. The Prussians published a memorial, in which the Austrian court was accused of employing emissaries and assassins against the king; and it was alleged, in direct terms, that one of them had confessed himself obliged by oath to destroy him, which oath had been given him in an Aulic council in the presence of the duke of Lorrain.

To this the Austrians answered, "that the cha-"racter of the queen and duke was too well known "not to destroy the force of such an accusation, "that the tale of the confession was an imposture, "and that no such attempt was ever made."

Each party was now inflamed, and orders were given to the Austrian general to hazard a battle. The two armies met at Molwitz, and parted without a complete victory on either side. The Austrians quitted the field in good order; and the king of Prussia rode away upon the first disorder of his troops, without waiting for the last event. This attention to his personal safety has not yet been forgotten.

After this, there was no action of much importance. But the king of Prussia, irritated by opposition, transferred his interest in the election to the duke of Bavaria; and the queen of Hungary, now attacked by France, Spain, and Bavaria, was obliged to make peace with him at the expence of half Silesia, without procuring those advantages which were once offered her.

To

To enlarge dominions has been the boast of many princes; to diffuse happiness and security through wide regions has been granted to few. The king of Prussia has aspired to both these honours, and endeavoured to join the praise of legislator to that of conqueror.

To settle property, to suppress false claims, and to regulate the administration of civil and criminal justice, are attempts so difficult and so useful, that I shall willingly suspend or contract the history of battles and sieges, to give a larger account of this pacifick enterprize.

That the king of Prussia has considered the nature, and the reasons of laws, with more attention than is common to princes, appears from his dissertation on the *Reasons for enacting and repealing Laws*; a piece which yet deserves notice, rather as a proof of good inclination than of great ability; for there is nothing to be found in it more than the most obvious books may supply, or the weakest intellect discover. Some of his observations are just and useful; but upon such a subject who can think without often thinking right? It is, however, not to be omitted, that he appears always propense towards the side of mercy. "If a poor man," says he, "steals "in his want a watch, or a few pieces, from one to "whom the loss is inconsiderable, is this a reason for "condemning him to death?"

He regrets that the laws against duels have been ineffectual; and is of opinion, that they can never attain their end, unless the princes of Europe shall agree not to afford an asylum to duellists, and to punish all who shall insult their equals either by word,

word, deed, or writing. He seems to suspect this scheme of being chimerical. "Yet why," "says he, "should not personal quarrels be submitted to judges, "as well as questions of possession? and why should "not a congress be appointed for the general good of "mankind, as well as for so many purposes of less "importance?"

He declares himself with great ardour against the use of torture, and by some misinformation charges the English that they still retain it.

It is perhaps impossible to review the laws of any country without discovering many defects and many superfluities. Laws often continue, when their reasons have ceased. Laws made for the first state of the society continue unabolished, when the general form of life is changed. Parts of the judicial procedure, which were at first only accidental, become in time essential; and formalities are accumulated on each other, till the art of litigation requires more study, than the discovery of right.

The king of Prussia, examining the institutions of his own country, thought them such as could only be amended by a general abrogation, and the establishment of a new body of law, to which he gave the name of the CODE FREDERIQUE, which is comprised in one volume of no great bulk, and must therefore unavoidably contain general positions, to be accommodated to particular cases by the wisdom and integrity of the courts. To embarrass justice by multiplicity of laws, or to hazard it by confidence in judges, seem to be the opposite rocks on which all civil institutions have been wrecked, and between

which

which legislative wisdom has never yet found an open passage.

Of this new system of laws, contracted as it is, a full account cannot be expected in these memoirs; but, that curiosity may not be dismissed without some gratification, it has been thought proper to epitomise the king's *plan for the reformation of his courts*.

"The differences which arise between members "of the same society, may be terminated by a volun- "tary agreement between the parties, by arbitration, "or by a judicial process.

"The two first methods produce more frequently "a temporary suspension of disputes than a final ter- "mination. Courts of justice are therefore neces- "sary, with a settled method of procedure, of which "the most simple is to cite the parties, to hear their "pleas, and dismiss them with immediate decision.

"This, however, is in many cases impracticable, "and in others is so seldom practised, that it is fre- "quent rather to incur loss than to seek for legal "reparation, by entering a labyrinth of which there "is no end.

"This tediousness of suits keeps the parties in "disquiet and perturbation, rouses and perpetuates "animosities, exhausts the litigants by expence, re- "tards the progress of their fortune, and discourages "strangers from settling.

"These inconveniences, with which the best re- "gulated polities of Europe are embarrassed, must be "removed, not by the total prohibition of suits, "which is impossible, but by contraction of processes; "by opening an easy way for the appearance of

"truth,

" truth, and removing all obstructions by which it is " concealed.

" The ordonnance of 1667, by which Lewis the " Fourteenth established an uniformity of procedure " through all his courts, has been considered as one " of the greatest benefits of his reign.

" The king of Prussia, observing that each of his " provinces had a different method of judicial proce- " dure, proposed to reduce them all to one form; " which being tried with success in Pomerania, a " province remarkable for contention, he afterwards " extended to all his dominions, ordering the judges " to inform him of any difficulties which arose " from it.

" Some settled method is necessary in judicial pro- " cedures. Small and simple causes might be de- " cided upon the oral pleas of the two parties appear- " ing before the judge: but many cases are so en- " tangled and perplexed as to require all the skill " and abilities of those who devote their lives to the " study of the law.

" Advocates, or men who can understand and ex- " plain the question to be discussed, are therefore " necessary. But these men, instead of endeavouring " to promote justice and discover truth, have exert- " ed their wits in the defence of bad causes, by for- " geries of facts, and fallacies of argument.

" To remedy this evil, the king has ordered an " inquiry into the qualifications of the advocate. All " those who practise without a regular admission, or " who can be convicted of disingenuous practice, are " discarded. And the judges are commanded to " examine which of the causes now depending have

" been protracted by the crimes and ignorance of the " advocates, and to dismiss those who shall appear " culpable.

" When advocates are too numerous to live by " honest practice, they busy themselves in exciting " disputes, and disturbing the community: the num- " ber of these to be employed in each court is there- " fore fixed.

" The reward of the advocates is fixed with due " regard to the nature of the cause, and the labour " required; but not a penny is received by them " till the suit is ended, that it may be their interest, " as well as that of the clients, to shorten the pro- " cess.

" No advocate is admitted in petty courts, small " towns, or villages; where the poverty of the people, " and for the most part the low value of the matter " contested, make dispatch absolutely necessary. In " those places the parties shall appear in person, and " the judge make a summary decision.

" There must likewise be allowed a subordination " of tribunals, and a power of appeal. No judge is " so skilful and attentive as not sometimes to err. " Few are so honest as not sometimes to be partial. " Petty judges would become insupportably tyranni- " cal if they were not restrained by the fear of a su- " perior judicature; and their decision would be " negligent or arbitrary if they were not in danger " of seeing them examined and cancelled.

" The right of appeal must be restrained, that " causes may not be transferred without end from " court to court; and a peremptory decision must at " last be made

" When

" When an appeal is made to a higher court, the " appellant is allowed only four weeks to frame his " bill, the judge of the lower court being to transmit " to the higher all the evidences and informations. " If upon the first view of the cause thus opened, it " shall appear that the appeal was made without just " cause, the first sentence shall be confirmed without " citation of the defendant. If any new evidence " shall appear, or any doubts arise, both the parties " shall be heard.

" In the discussion of causes altercation must be " allowed; yet to altercation some limits must be " put. There are therefore allowed a bill, an an- " swer, a reply, and a rejoinder, to be delivered in " writing.

" No cause is allowed to be heard in more than " three different courts. To further the first decision, " every advocate is enjoined, under severe penal- " ties, not to begin a suit till he has collected all the " necessary evidence. If the first court has decided " in an unsatisfactory manner, an appeal may be " made to the second, and from the second to the " third. The process in each appeal is limited to " six months. The third court may indeed pass an " erroneous judgment; and then the injury is with- " out redress. But this objection is without end, " and therefore without force. No method can be " found of preserving humanity from error; but of " contest there must some time be an end; and he, " who thinks himself injured for want of an appeal to " a fourth court, must consider himself as suffering " for the publick.

"There is a special advocate appointed for the "poor.

"The attorneys, who had formerly the care of "collecting evidence, and of adjusting all the preli- "minaries of a suit, are now totally dismissed; the "whole affair is put into the hands of the advo- "cates, and the office of an attorney is annulled for "ever.

"If any man is hindered by some lawful im- "pediment from attending his suit, time will be "granted him upon the representation of his "case."

Such is the order according to which civil justice is administered through the extensive dominions of the king of Prussia; which, if it exhibits nothing very subtle or profound, affords one proof more that the right is easily discovered, and that men do not so often want ability to find, as willingness to practise it.

We now return to the war.

The time at which the queen of Hungary was willing to purchase peace by the resignation of Silesia, though it came at last, was not come yet. She had all the spirit, though not all the power of her ancestors, and could not bear the thought of losing any part of her patrimonial dominions to the enemies which the opinion of her weakness raised every where against her.

In the beginning of the year 1742, the elector of Bavaria was invested with the imperial dignity, supported by the arms of France, master of the kingdom of Bohemia; and confederated with the elector Palatine,

tine, and the elector of Saxony, who claimed Moravia; and with the king of Prussia, who was in possession of Silesia.

Such was the state of the queen of Hungary, pressed on every side, and on every side preparing for resistance: she yet refused all offers of accommodation, for every prince set peace at a price which she was not yet so far humbled as to pay.

The king of Prussia was among the most zealous and forward in the confederacy against her. He promised to secure Bohemia to the emperor, and Moravia to the elector of Saxony; and, finding no enemy in the field able to resist him, he returned to Berlin, and left Schwerin his general to prosecute the conquest.

The Prussians in the midst of winter took Olmutz, the capital of Moravia, and laid the whole country under contribution. The cold then hindered them from action, and they only blocked up the fortresses of Brinn and Spielberg.

In the spring, the king of Prussia came again into the field, and undertook the siege of Brinn; but upon the approach of prince Charles of Lorrain retired from before it, and quitted Moravia, leaving only a garrison in the capital.

The condition of the queen of Hungary was now changed. She was a few months before without money, without troops, incircled with enemies. The Bavarians had entered Austria, Vienna was threatened with a siege, and the queen left it to the fate of war, and retired into Hungary, where she was received with zeal and affection, not unmingled however with that neglect which must always be borne by

by greatness in distress. She bore the disrespect of her subjects with the same firmness as the outrages of her enemies; and at last persuaded the English not to despair of her preservation, by not despairing herself.

Voltaire in his late history has asserted that a large sum was raised for her succour, by voluntary subscriptions of the English ladies. It is the great failing of a strong imagination to catch greedily at wonders. He was misinformed, and was perhaps unwilling to learn by a second enquiry, a truth less splendid and amusing. A contribution was by news-writers, upon their own authority, fruitlessly, and, I think, illegally, proposed. It ended in nothing. The parliament voted a supply, and five hundred thousand pounds were remitted to her.

It has been always the weakness of the Austrian family to spend in the magnificence of empire those revenues which should be kept for its defence. The court is splendid, but the treasury is empty; and, at the beginning of every war, advantages are gained against them, before their armies can be assembled and equipped.

The English money was to the Austrians as a shower to a field, where all the vegetative powers are kept unactive by a long continuance of drought. The armies, which had hitherto been hid in mountains and forests, started out of their retreats; and wherever the queen's standard was erected, nations scarcely known by their names, swarmed immediately about it. An army, especially a defensive army, multiplies itself. The contagion of enterprize spreads from one heart to another. Zeal for a native or detestation

detestation of a foreign sovereign, hope of sudden greatness or riches, friendship or emulation between particular men, or, what are perhaps more general and powerful, desire of novelty and impatience of inactivity, fill a camp with adventurers, add rank to rank, and squadron to squadron.

The queen had still enemies on every part, but she now on every part had armies ready to oppose them. Austria was immediately recovered; the plains of Bohemia were filled with her troops, though the fortresses were garrisoned by the French. The Bavarians were recalled to the defence of their own country, now wasted by the incursions of troops that were called Barbarians, greedy enough of plunder, and daring perhaps beyond the rules of war, but otherwise not more cruel than those whom they attacked. Prince Lobkowitz with one army observed the motions of Broglio, the French general in Bohemia; and prince Charles with another put a stop to the advances of the king of Prussia.

It was now the turn of the Prussians to retire. They abandoned Olmutz, and left behind them part of their cannon and their magazines. And the king, finding that Broglio could not long oppose prince Lobkowitz, hastened into Bohemia to his assistance; and having received a reinforcement of twenty-three thousand men, and taken the castle of Glatz, which, being built upon a rock, scarcely accessible, would have defied all his power, had the garrison been furnished with provisions, he purposed to join his allies, and prosecute his conquests.

Prince Charles, seeing Moravia thus evacuated by the Prussians, determined to garrisons the towns which

he

he had just recovered, and pursue the enemy, who, by the assistance of the French, would have been too powerful for prince Lobkowitz.

Success had now given confidence to the Austrians, and had proportionably abated the spirit of their enemies. The Saxons, who had co-operated with the king of Prussia in the conquest of Moravia, of which they expected the perpetual possession, seeing all hopes of sudden acquisition defeated, and the province left again to its former masters, grew weary of following a prince whom they considered as no longer acting the part of their confederate; and when they approached the confines of Bohemia took a different road, and left the Prussians to their own fortune.

The king continued his march, and Charles his pursuit. At Czaslaw the two armies came in sight of one another, and the Austrians resolved on a decisive day. On the 6th of May, about seven in the morning, the Austrians began the attack: their impetuosity was matched by the firmness of the Prussians. The animosity of the two armies was much inflamed: the Austrians were fighting for their country, and the Prussians were in a place where defeat must inevitably end in death or captivity. The fury of the battle continued four hours: the Prussian horse were at length broken, and the Austrians forced their way to the camp, where the wild troops, who had fought with so much vigour and constancy, at the sight of plunder forgot their obedience, nor had any man the least thought but how to load himself with the richest spoils.

While

While the right wing of the Austrians was thus employed, the main body was left naked: the Prussians recovered from their confusion, and regained the day. Charles was at last forced to retire, and carried with him the standard of his enemies, the proofs of a victory, which, though so nearly gained, he had not been able to keep.

The victory however was dearly bought; the Prussian army was much weakened, and the cavalry almost totally destroyed. Peace is easily made when it is necessary to both parties; and the king of Prussia had now reason to believe that the Austrians were not his only enemies. When he found Charles advancing, he sent to Broglio for assistance, and was answered that "he must have orders from Ver-"sailles." Such a desertion of his most powerful ally disconcerted him, but the battle was unavoidable.

When the Prussians were returned to the camp, the king, hearing that an Austrian officer was brought in mortally wounded, had the condescension to visit him. The officer, struck with this act of humanity, said, after a short conversation, "I should "die, sir, contentedly after this honour, if I might "first shew my gratitude to your majesty by inform-"ing you with what allies you are now united, "allies that have no intention but to deceive you." The king appearing to suspect this intelligence; "Sir," said the Austrian, "if you will permit me "to send a messenger to Vienna, I believe the queen "will not refuse to transmit an intercepted letter "now in her hands, which will put my report be-"yond all doubt."

The

The messenger was sent, and the letter transmitted, which contained the order sent to Broglio, who was, first forbidden to mix his troops on any occasion with the Prussians. Secondly, he was ordered to act always at a distance from the king. Thirdly, to keep always a body of twenty thousand men to observe the Prussian army. Fourthly, to observe very closely the motions of the king, for important reasons. Fifthly, to hazard nothing; but to pretend want of reinforcements, or the absence of Bellisle.

The king now with great reason considered himself as disengaged from the confederacy, being deserted by the Saxons, and betrayed by the French; he therefore accepted the mediation of king George, and in three weeks after the battle of Czaslaw made peace with the queen of Hungary, who granted to him the whole province of Silesia, a country of such extent and opulence that he is said to receive from it one third part of his revenues. By one of the articles of this treaty it is stipulated, "that neither "should assist the enemies of the other."

The queen of Hungary thus disentangled on one side, and set free from the most formidable of her enemies, soon persuaded the Saxons to peace; took possession of Bavaria; drove the emperor, after all his imaginary conquests, to the shelter of a neutral town, where he was treated as a fugitive; and besieged the French in Prague, in the city which they had taken from her.

Having thus obtained Silesia, the king of Prussia returned to his own capital, where he reformed his laws, forbid the torture of criminals, concluded a defensive

fensive alliance with England, and applied himself to the augmentation of his army.

This treaty of peace with the queen of Hungary was one of the first proofs given by the king of Prussia, of the secrecy of his counsels. Bellisle, the French general, was with him in the camp, as a friend and coadjutor in appearance, but in truth a spy, and a writer of intelligence. Men who have great confidence in their own penetration are often by that confidence deceived; they imagine that they can pierce through all the involutions of intrigue without the diligence necessary to weaker minds, and therefore sit idle and secure; they believe that none can hope to deceive them, and therefore that none will try. Bellisle, with all his reputation of sagacity, though he was in the Prussian camp, gave every day fresh assurances of the king's adherence to his allies; while Broglio, who commanded the army at a distance, discovered sufficient reason to suspect his desertion. Broglio was slighted, and Bellisle believed, till on the 11th of June the treaty was signed, and the king declared his resolution to keep a neutrality.

This is one of the great performances of polity which mankind seem agreed to celebrate and admire; yet to all this nothing was necessary but the determination of a very few men to be silent.

From this time the queen of Hungary proceeded with an uninterrupted torrent of success. The French, driven from station to station, and deprived of fortress after fortress, were at last enclosed with their two generals, Bellisle and Broglio, in the walls of Prague, which they had stored with all provisions necessary to a town besieged, and where they defended

fended themselves three months before any prospect appeared of relief.

The Austrians, having been engaged chiefly in the field, and in sudden and tumultuary excursions rather than a regular war, had no great degree of skill in attacking or defending towns. They likewise would naturally consider all the mischiefs done to the city as falling ultimately upon themselves, and therefore were willing to gain it by time rather than by force.

It was apparent that, how long soever Prague might be defended, it must be yielded at last, and therefore all arts were tried to obtain an honourable capitulation. The messengers from the city were sent back sometimes unheard, but always with this answer, "That no terms would be allowed, but that "they should yield themselves prisoners of war."

The condition of the garrison was in the eyes of all Europe desperate; but the French, to whom the praise of spirit and activity cannot be denied, resolved to make an effort for the honour of their arms. Maillebois was at that time encamped with his army in Westphalia. Orders were sent him to relieve Prague. The enterprize was considered as romantick. Maillebois was a march of forty days distant from Bohemia, the passes were narrow, and the ways foul; and it was likely that Prague would be taken before he could reach it. The march was, however, begun: the army, being joined by that of count Saxe, consisted of fifty thousand men, who, notwithstanding all the difficulties which two Austrian armies could put in their way, at last entered Bohemia. The siege of Prague, though not raised, was remitted, and a communication was now opened to

it

it with the country. But the Austrians, by perpetual intervention, hindered the garrison from joining their friends. The officers of Maillebois incited him to a battle, because the army was hourly lessening by the want of provisions; but, instead of pressing on to Prague, he retired into Bavaria, and completed the ruin of the emperor's territories.

The court of France, disappointed and offended, conferred the chief command upon Broglio, who escaped from the besiegers with very little difficulty, and kept the Austrians employed till Bellisle by a sudden sally quitted Prague, and without any great loss joined the main army. Broglio then retired over the Rhine into the French dominions, wasting in his retreat the country which he had undertaken to protect, and burning towns, and destroying magazines of corn, with such wantonness, as gave reason to believe that he expected commendation from his court for any mischiefs done, by whatever means.

The Austrians pursued their advantages, recovered all their strong places, in some of which French garrisons had been left, and made themselves masters of Bavaria, by taking not only Munich the capital, but Ingolstadt the strongest fortification in the elector's dominions, where they found a great number of cannon and a quantity of ammunition intended in the dreams of projected greatness for the siege of Vienna, all the archives of the state, the plate and ornaments of the electoral palace, and what had been considered as most worthy of preservation. Nothing but the warlike stores were taken away. An oath of allegiance to the queen was required of the Bavarians, but without any explanation whether temporary or perpetual.

The

The emperor lived at Francfort in the security that was allowed to neutral places, but without much respect from the German princes, except that, upon some objections made by the queen to the validity of his election, the king of Prussia declared himself determined to support him in the imperial dignity with all his power.

This may be considered as a token of no great affection to the queen of Hungary, but it seems not to have raised much alarm. The German princes were afraid of new broils. To contest the election of an emperor once invested and acknowledged, would be to overthrow the whole Germanic constitution. Perhaps no election by plurality of suffrages was ever made among human beings, to which it might not be objected that voices were procured by illicit influence.

Some suspicions, however, were raised by the king's declaration, which he endeavoured to obviate by ordering his ministers to declare at London and at Vienna, that he was resolved not to violate the treaty of Breslaw. This declaration was sufficiently ambiguous, and could not satisfy those whom it might silence. But this was not a time for nice disquisitions: to distrust the king of Prussia might have provoked him, and it was most convenient to consider him as a friend, till he appeared openly as an enemy.

About the middle of the year 1744, he raised new alarms by collecting his troops and putting them in motion. The earl of Hindford about this time demanded the troops stipulated for the protection of Hanover, not perhaps because they were thought necessary,

cessary, but that the king's designs might be guessed from his answer, which was, that troops were not granted for the defence of any country till that country was in danger, and that he could not believe the elector of Hanover to be in much dread of an invasion, since he had withdrawn the native troops, and put them into the pay of England.

He had, undoubtedly, now formed designs which made it necessary that his troops should be kept together, and the time soon came when the scene was to be opened. Prince Charles of Lorrain, having chased the French out of Bavaria, lay for some months encamped on the Rhine, endeavouring to gain a passage into Alsace. His attempts had long been evaded by the skill and vigilance of the French general, till at last, June 21, 1744, he executed his design, and lodged his army in the French dominions, to the surprise and joy of a great part of Europe. It was now expected that the territories of France would in their turn feel the miseries of war; and the nation, which so long kept the world in alarm, be taught at last the value of peace.

The king of Prussia now saw the Austrian troops at a great distance from him, engaged in a foreign country against the most powerful of all their enemies. Now, therefore, was the time to discover that he had lately made a treaty at Francfort with the emperor, by which he had engaged, "that, as the "court of Vienna and its allies appeared backward "to re-establish the tranquillity of the empire, and "more cogent methods appeared necessary; he, "being animated with a desire of co-operating to- "wards the pacification of Germany, should make

"an

" an expedition for the conquest of Bohemia, and to " put it into the possession of the emperor, his heirs " and successors, for ever; in gratitude for which " the emperor should resign to him and his successors " a certain number of lordships, which are now part " of the kingdom of Bohemia. His Imperial ma- " jesty likewise guarantees to the king of Prussia the " perpetual possession of Upper Silesia; and the king " guarantees to the emperor the perpetual possession " of Upper Austria, as he shall have occupied it by " conquest."

It is easy to discover that the king began the war upon other motives than zeal for peace; and that, whatever respect he was willing to shew to the Emperor, he did not purpose to assist him without reward. In prosecution of this treaty he put his troops in motion; and, according to his promise, while the Austrians were invading France, he invaded Bohemia.

Princes have this remaining of humanity, that they think themselves obliged not to make war without a reason. Their reasons are indeed not always very satisfactory. Lewis the fourteenth seemed to think his own glory a sufficient motive for the invasion of Holland. The Czar attacked Charles of Sweden, because he had not been treated with sufficient respect when he made a journey in disguise. The king of Prussia, having an opportunity of attacking his neighbour, was not long without his reasons. On July 30, he published his declaration, in which he declares;

That he can no longer stand an idle spectator of the troubles in Germany, but finds himself obliged to make

make use of force to restore the power of the laws, and the authority of the emperor.

That the Queen of Hungary has treated the emperor's hereditary dominions with inexpressible cruelty.

That Germany has been overrun with foreign troops, which have marched through neutral countries without the customary requisitions.

That the emperor's troops have been attacked under neutral fortresses, and obliged to abandon the empire, of which their master is the head.

That the imperial dignity has been treated with indecency by the Hungarian troops.

The queen declaring the election of the emperor void, and the diet of Frankfort illegal, had not only violated the imperial dignity, but injured all the princes who have the right of election.

That he had no particular quarrel with the queen of Hungary; and that he desires nothing for himself, and only enters as an auxiliary into a war for the liberties of Germany.

That the emperor had offered to quit his pretension to the dominions of Austria, on condition that his hereditary countries be restored to him.

That this proposal had been made to the king of England at Hanau, and rejected in such a manner as shewed that the king of England had no intention to restore peace, but rather to make his advantage of the troubles.

That the mediation of the Dutch had been desired; but that they declined to interpose, knowing the inflexibility of the English and Austrian courts.

That the same terms were again offered at Vienna, and again rejected: that therefore the queen must impute it to her own councils that her enemies find new allies.

That he is not fighting for any interest of his own, that he demands nothing for himself; but is determined to exert all his powers in defence of the emperor, in vindication of the right of election, and in support of the liberties of Germany, which the queen of Hungary would enslave.

When this declaration was sent to the Prussian minister in England, it was accompanied with a remonstrance to the king, in which many of the foregoing positions were repeated; the emperor's candour and disinterestedness were magnified; the dangerous designs of the Austrians were displayed; it was imputed to them as the most flagrant violation of the Germanick constitution, that they had driven the emperor's troops out of the empire; the publick spirit and generosity of his Prussian majesty were again heartily declared; and it was said, that this quarrel having no connection with English interests, the English ought not to interpose.

Austria and all her allies were put into amazement by this declaration, which at once dismounted them from the summit of success, and obliged them to fight through the war a second time. What succours, or what promises, Prussia received from France was never publickly known; but it is not to be doubted that a prince so watchful of opportunity sold assistance, when it was so much wanted, at the highest rate; nor can it be supposed that he exposed himself

himself to so much hazard only for the freedom of Germany, and a few petty districts in Bohemia.

The French, who, from ravaging the empire at discretion, and wasting whatever they found either among enemies or friends, were now driven into their own dominions, and in their own dominions were insulted and pursued, were on a sudden by this new auxiliary restored to their former superiority, at least were disburthened of their invaders, and delivered from their terrors. And all the enemies of the house of Bourbon saw with indignation and amazement the recovery of that power which they had with so much cost and bloodshed brought low, and which their animosity and elation had disposed them to imagine yet lower than it was.

The queen of Hungary still retained her firmness. The Prussian declaration was not long without an answer, which was transmitted to the European princes with some observations on the Prussian minister's remonstrance to the court of Vienna, which he was ordered by his master to read to the Austrian council, but not to deliver. The same caution was practised before when the Prussians, after the emperor's death, invaded Silesia. This artifice of political debate may, perhaps, be numbered by the admirers of greatness among the refinements of conduct; but, as it is a method of proceeding not very difficult to be contrived or practised, as it can be of very rare use to honesty or wisdom, and as it has been long known to that class of men whose safety depends upon secresy, though hitherto applied chiefly in petty cheats and slight transactions; I do not see that it can much advance the reputation of regal understanding,

or indeed that it can add more to the safety, than it takes away from the honour of him that shall adopt it.

The queen in her answer, after charging the king of Prussia with breach of the treaty of Breslaw, and observing how much her enemies will exult to see the peace now the third time broken by him, declares,

That she had no intention to injure the rights of the electors, and that she calls in question not the event but the manner of the election.

That she had spared the emperor's troops with great tenderness, and that they were driven out of the empire only because they were in the service of France.

That she is so far from disturbing the peace of the empire, that the only commotions now raised in it are the effect of the armaments of the king of Prussia.

Nothing is more tedious than publick records, when they relate to affairs which by distance of time or place lose their power to interest the reader. Every thing grows little as it grows remote; and of things thus diminished, it is sufficient to survey the aggregate without a minute examination of the parts.

It is easy to perceive, that, if the king of Prussia's reasons be sufficient, ambition or animosity can never want a plea for violence and invasion. What he charges upon the queen of Hungary, the waste of country, the expulsion of the Bavarians, and the employment of foreign troops, is the unavoidable consequence of a war inflamed on either side to the utmost

utmost violence. All these grievances subsisted when he made the peace, and therefore they could very little justify its breach.

It is true, that every prince of the empire is obliged to support the imperial dignity, and assist the emperor when his rights are violated. And every subsequent contract must be understood in a sense consistent with former obligations. Nor had the king power to make a peace on terms contrary to that constitution by which he held a place among the Germanick electors. But he could have easily discovered that not the emperor but the duke of Bavaria was the queen's enemy, not the administrator of the imperial power, but the claimant of the Austrian dominions. Nor did his allegiance to the emperor, supposing the emperor injured, oblige him to more than a succour of ten thousand men. But ten thousand men could not conquer Bohemia, and without the conquest of Bohemia he could receive no reward for the zeal and fidelity which he so loudly professed.

The success of this enterprize he had taken all possible precaution to secure. He was to invade a country guarded only by the faith of treaties, and therefore left unarmed, and unprovided of all defence. He had engaged the French to attack prince Charles, before he should repass the Rhine, by which the Austrians would at least have been hindered from a speedy march into Bohemia: they were likewise to yield him such other assistance as he might want.

Relying therefore upon the promises of the French, he resolved to attempt the ruin of the house of Austria, and in August 1744 broke into Bohemia at the head of an hundred and four thousand men.

When

When he entered the country, he published a proclamation, promising, that his army should observe the strictest discipline, and that those who made no resistance should be suffered to remain at quiet in their habitations. He required that all arms, in the custody of whomsoever they might be placed, should be given up, and put into the hands of publick officers. He still declared himself to act only as an auxiliary to the emperor, and with no other design than to establish peace and tranquillity throughout Germany, his dear country.

In this proclamation there is one paragraph of which I do not remember any precedent. He threatens, that, if any peasant should be found with arms, he shall be hanged without further enquiry; and that, if any lord shall connive at his vassals keeping arms in their custody, his village shall be reduced to ashes.

It is hard to find upon what pretence the king of Prussia could treat the Bohemians as criminals, for preparing to defend their native country, or maintaining their allegiance to their lawful sovereign against an invader, whether he appears principal or auxiliary, whether he professes to intend tranquillity or confusion.

His progress was such as gave great hopes to the enemies of Austria: like Cæsar, he conquered as he advanced, and met with no opposition till he reached the walls of Prague. The indignation and resentment of the queen of Hungary may be easily conceived; the alliance of Franckfort was now laid open to all Europe; and the partition of the Austrian dominions was again publickly projected. They were to be shared among the emperor, the king of Prussia,

sia, the elector palatine, and the landgrave of Hesse. All the powers of Europe who had dreamed of controuling France, were awakened to their former terrors; all that had been done was now to be done again; and every court, from the Straits of Gibraltar to the Frozen Sea, was filled with exultation or terror, with schemes of conquest or precautions for defence.

The king, delighted with his progress, and expecting, like other mortals elated with success; that his prosperity could not be interrupted, continued his march, and began in the latter end of September the siege of Prague. He had gained several of the outer posts, when he was informed that the convoy which attended his artillery was attacked by an unexpected party of the Austrians. The king went immediately to their assistance with the third part of his army, and found his troops put to flight, and the Austrians hasting away with his cannons: such a loss would have disabled him at once. He fell upon the Austrians, whose number would not enable them to withstand him, recovered his artillery, and, having also defeated Bathiani, raised his batteries; and there being no artillery to be placed against him, he destroyed a great part of the city. He then ordered four attacks to be made at once, and reduced the besieged to such extremities, that in fourteen days the governor was obliged to yield the place.

At the attack commanded by Schwerin, a grenadier is reported to have mounted the bastion alone, and to have defended himself for some time with his sword, till his followers mounted after him; for this act

act of bravery, the king made him a lieutenant, and gave him a patent of nobility.

Nothing now remained but that the Austrians should lay aside all thought of invading France, and apply their whole power to their own defence. Prince Charles, at the first news of the Prussian invasion, prepared to repass the Rhine. This the French, according to their contract with the king of Prussia, should have attempted to hinder; but they knew by experience the Austrians would not be beaten without resistance, and that resistance always incommodes an assailant. As the king of Prussia rejoiced in the distance of the Austrians, whom he considered as entangled in the French territories; the French rejoiced in the necessity of their return, and pleased themselves with the prospect of easy conquests, while powers whom they considered with equal malevolence should be employed in massacring each other.

Prince Charles took the opportunity of bright moonshine to repass the Rhine; and Noailles, who had early intelligence of his motions, gave him very little disturbance, but contented himself with attacking the rear-guard, and when they retired to the main body ceased his pursuit.

The king, upon the reduction of Prague, struck a medal, which had on one side a plan of the town, with this inscription:

"Prague taken by the King of Prussia,
September 16, 1744;
For the third time in three years."

On the other side were two verses, in which he prayed, "That his Conquests might produce Peace."

He

He then marched forward with the rapidity which constitutes his military character, took possession of almost all Bohemia, and began to talk of entering Austria and besieging Vienna.

The queen was not yet wholly without resource. The elector of Saxony, whether invited or not, was not comprised in the union of Franckfort; and as every sovereign is growing less as his next neighbour is growing greater, he could not heartily wish success to a confederacy which was to aggrandize the other powers of Germany. The Prussians gave him likewise a particular and immediate provocation to oppose them; for, when they departed to the conquest of Bohemia, with all the elation of imaginary success, they passed through his dominions with unlicensed and contemptuous disdain of his authority. As the approach of Prince Charles gave a new prospect of events, he was easily persuaded to enter into an alliance with the queen, whom he furnished with a very large body of troops.

The king of Prussia having left a garrison in Prague, which he commanded to put the burghers to death if they left their houses in the night, went forward to take the other towns and fortresses, expecting, perhaps, that prince Charles would be interrupted in his march; but the French, though they appeared to follow him, either could not or would not overtake him.

In a short time, by marches pressed on with the utmost eagerness, Charles reached Bohemia, leaving the Bavarians to regain the possession of the wasted plains of their country, which their enemies, who still kept the strong places, might again seize at will.

At

At the approach of the Austrian army, the courage of the king of Prussia seemed to have failed him. He retired from post to post, and evacuated town after town, and fortress after fortress, without resistance, or appearance of resistance, as if he was resigning them to the rightful owners.

It might have been expected that he should have made some effort to rescue Prague; but, after a faint attempt to dispute the passage of the Elbe, he ordered his garrison of eleven thousand men to quit the place. They left behind them their magazines, and heavy artillery, among which were seven pieces of remarkable excellence, called "The Seven Electors." But they took with them their field cannon and a great number of carriages laden with stores and plunder, which they were forced to leave in their way to the Saxons and Austrians that harassed their march. They at last entered Silesia with the loss of about a third part.

The king of Prussia suffered much in his retreat; for besides the military stores, which he left every where behind him, even to the clothes of his troops, there was a want of provisions in his army, and consequently frequent desertions and many diseases; and a soldier sick or killed was equally lost to a flying army.

At last he re-entered his own territories, and, having stationed his troops in places of security, returned for a time to Berlin, where he forbad all to speak either ill or well of the campaign.

To what end such a prohibition could conduce, it is difficult to discover: there is no country in which men can be forbidden to know what they know, and what

what is universally known may as well be spoken. It is true, that in popular governments seditious discourses may inflame the vulgar; but in such governments they cannot be restrained, and in absolute monarchies they are of little effect.

'When the Prussians invaded Bohemia, and this whole nation was fired with resentment, the king of England gave orders in his palace that none should mention his nephew with disrespect; by this command he maintained the decency necessary between princes, without enforcing, and probably without expecting, obedience but in his own presence.

The king of Prussia's edict regarded only himself, and therefore it is difficult to tell what was his motive, unless he intended to spare himself this mortification of absurd and illiberal flattery, which, to a mind stung with disgrace, must have been in the highest degree painful and disgusting.

Moderation in prosperity is a virtue very difficult to all mortals; forbearance of revenge, when revenge is within reach, is scarcely ever to be found among princes. Now was the time when the queen of Hungary might perhaps have made peace on her own terms; but keenness of resentment, and arrogance of success, with-held her from the due use of the present opportunity. It is said, that the king of Prussia in his retreat sent letters to prince Charles, which were supposed to contain ample concessions, but were sent back unopened. The king of England offered likewise to mediate between them; but his propositions were rejected at Vienna, where a resolution was taken not only to revenge the interruption of their success on the Rhine by the recovery of Silesia,

Silesia, but to reward the Saxons for their seasonable help by giving them part of the Prussian dominions.

In the beginning of the year 1745 died the emperor Charles of Bavaria; the treaty of Franckfort was consequently at an end; and the king of Prussia, being no longer able to maintain the character of auxiliary to the emperor, and having avowed no other reason for the war, might have honourably withdrawn his forces, and on his own principles have complied with terms of peace; but no terms were offered him; the queen pursued him with the utmost ardour of hostility, and the French left him to his own conduct, and his own destiny.

His Bohemian conquests were already lost; and he was now chased back into Silesia, where, at the beginning of the year, the war continued in an equilibration by alternate losses and advantages. In April, the elector of Bavaria seeing his dominions over-run by the Austrians, and receiving very little succour from the French, made a peace with the queen of Hungary upon easy conditions, and the Austrians had more troops to employ against Prussia.

But the revolutions of war will not suffer human presumption to remain long unchecked. The peace with Bavaria was scarcely concluded when the battle of Fontenoy was lost, and all the allies of Austria called upon her to exert her utmost power for the preservation of the Low Countries; and, a few days after the loss at Fontenoy, the first battle between the Prussians and the combined army of Austrians and Saxons was fought at Niedburg in Silesia.

The particulars of this battle were variously reported by the different parties, and published in the journals

journals of that time; to transcribe them would be tedious and useless, because accounts of battles are not easily understood, and because there are no means of determining to which of the relations credit should be given. It is sufficient that they all end in claiming or allowing a complete victory to the king of Prussia, who gained all the Austrian artillery, killed four thousand, took seven thousand prisoners, with the loss, according to the Prussian narrative, of only sixteen hundred men.

He now advanced again into Bohemia, where, however, he made no great progress. The queen of Hungary, though defeated, was not subdued. She poured in her troops from all parts to the reinforcement of prince Charles, and determined to continue the struggle with all her power. The king saw that Bohemia was an unpleasing and inconvenient theatre of war, in which he should be ruined by a miscarriage, and should get little by a victory. Saxony was left defenceless, and, if it was conquered, might be plundered.

He therefore published a declaration against the elector of Saxony, and, without waiting for reply, invaded his dominions. This invasion produced another battle at Standentz, which ended, as the former, to the advantage of the Prussians. The Austrians had some advantage in the beginning; and their irregular troops, who are always daring, and are always ravenous, broke into the Prussian camp, and carried away the military chest. But this was easily repaired by the spoils of Saxony.

The queen of Hungary was still inflexible, and hoped that fortune would at last change. She recruited

cruited once more her army, and prepared to invade the territories of Brandenburg; but the king of Prussia's activity prevented all her designs. One part of his forces seized Leipsic, and the other once more defeated the Saxons; the king of Poland fled from his dominions, prince Charles retired into Bohemia. The king of Prussia entered Dresden as a conqueror, exacted very severe contributions from the whole country, and the Austrians and Saxons were at last compelled to receive from him such a peace as he would grant. He imposed no severe conditions except the payment of the contributions, made no new claim of dominions, and, with the elector Palatine, acknowledged the duke of Tuscany for emperor.

The lives of princes, like the histories of nations, have their periods. We shall here suspend our narrative of the king of Prussia, who was now at the height of human greatness, giving laws to his enemies, and courted by all the powers of Europe.

BROWNE.

THOUGH the writer of the following Essays * seems to have had the fortune, common among men of letters, of raising little curiosity after his private life, and has, therefore, few memorials preserved of his felicities and misfortunes; yet, because an edition of a posthumous work appears imperfect and neglected, without some account of the author, it was thought necessary to attempt the gratification of that curiosity which naturally inquires by what peculiarities of nature or fortune eminent men have been distinguished, how uncommon attainments have been gained, and what influence learning had on its possessors, or virtue on its teachers.

SIR THOMAS BROWNE was born at London, in the parish of St. Michael in Cheapside, on the 19th of October, 1605 †. His father was a merchant, of an ancient family at Upton in Cheshire. Of the name or family of his mother I find no account.

Of his childhood or youth there is little known, except that he lost his father very early; that he was, according to the common ‡ fate of orphans, defrauded by one of his guardians; and that he was placed for his education at the school of Winchester.

* "Christian Morals," first printed in 1756. H.

† Life of Sir Thomas Browne, prefixed to the Antiquities of Norwich

‡ Whitefoot's character of Sir Thomas Browne, in a marginal note.

His

His mother, having taken * three thousand pounds as the third part of her husband's property, left her son, by consequence, six thousand, a large fortune for a man destined to learning at that time, when commerce had not yet filled the nation with nominal riches. But it happened to him, as to many others, to be made poorer by opulence; for his mother soon married Sir Thomas Dutton, probably by the inducement of her fortune; and he was left to the rapacity of his guardian, deprived now of both his parents, and therefore helpless and unprotected.

He was removed in the beginning of the year 1623 from Winchester to Oxford †, and entered a gentleman-commoner of Broadgate-Hall, which was soon afterwards endowed, and took the name of Pembroke-college, from the Earl of Pembroke, then chancellor of the University. He was admitted to the degree of Bachelor of Arts, January 31, 1626-7; being, as Wood remarks, the first man of eminence graduated from the new college, to which the zeal or gratitude of those that love it most can wish little better than that it may long proceed as it began.

Having afterwards taken his degree of Master of Arts, he turned his studies to physick ‡, and practised it for some time in Oxfordshire; but soon afterwards, either induced by curiosity, or invited by promises, he quitted his settlement, and accompanied his § father-in-law, who had some employment in Ireland, in a visitation of the forts and castles, which the state of Ireland then made necessary.

* Life of Sir Thomas Browne.
† Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses.
‡ Wood.
§ Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

He

He that has once prevailed on himself to break his connections of acquaintance, and begin a wandering life, very easily continues it. Ireland had, at that time, very little to offer to the observation of a man of letters: he, therefore, passed * into France and Italy; made some stay at Montpellier and Padua, which were then the celebrated schools of physick; and returning home through Holland, procured himself to be created doctor of physick at Leyden.

When he began his travels, or when he concluded them, there is no certain account; nor do there remain any observations made by him in his passage through those countries which he visited. To consider, therefore, what pleasure or instruction might have been received from the remarks of a man so curious and diligent, would be voluntarily to indulge a painful reflection, and load the imagination with a wish, which, while it is formed, is known to be vain. It is, however, to be lamented, that those who are most capable of improving mankind, very frequently neglect to communicate their knowledge; either because it is more pleasing to gather ideas than to impart them, or because, to minds naturally great, few things appear of so much importance as to deserve the notice of the publick.

About the year 1634†, he is supposed to have returned to London; and the next year to have written his celebrated treatise, called *Religio Medici*, "The "religion of a physician‡," which he declares himself never to have intended for the press, having com-

* Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

† Biographia Britannica.

‡ Letter to Sir Kenelm Digby, prefixed to the Religio Medici, fol. edit.

posed it only for his own exercise and entertainment. It, indeed, contains many passages, which, relating merely to his own person, can be of no great importance to the publick: but when it was written, it happened to him as to others, he was too much pleased with his performance, not to think that it might please others as much; he, therefore, communicated it to his friends, and receiving, I suppose, that exuberant applause with which every man repays the grant of perusing a manuscript, he was not very diligent to obstruct his own praise by recalling his papers, but suffered them to wander from hand to hand, till at last, without his own consent, they were in 1642 given to a printer.

This has, perhaps, sometimes befallen others; and this, I am willing to believe, did really happen to Dr. Browne: but there is surely some reason to doubt the truth of the complaint so frequently made of surreptitious editions. A song, or an epigram may be easily printed without the author's knowledge; because it may be learned when it is repeated, or may be written out with very little trouble: but a long treatise, however elegant, is not often copied by mere zeal or curiosity, but may be worn out in passing from hand to hand, before it is multiplied by a transcript. It is easy to convey an imperfect book, by a distant hand, to the press, and plead the circulation of a false copy as an excuse for publishing the true, or to correct what is found faulty or offensive, and charge the errors on the transcriber's depravations.

This is a stratagem, by which an author, panting for fame, and yet afraid of seeming to challenge it, may at once gratify his vanity, and preserve the appearance of modesty; may enter the lists, and secure a retreat:

retreat: and this candour might suffer to pass undetected as an innocent fraud, but that indeed no fraud is innocent; for the confidence which makes the happiness of society is in some degree diminished by every man whose practice is at variance with his words.

The *Religio Medici* was no sooner published than it excited the attention of the publick, by the novelty of paradoxes, the dignity of sentiment, the quick succession of images, the multitude of abstruse allusions, the subtlety of disquisition, and the strength of language.

What is much read will be much criticised. The earl of Dorset recommended this book to the perusal of Sir Kenelm Digby, who returned his judgment upon it, not in a letter, but a book; in which, though mingled with some positions fabulous and uncertain, there are acute remarks, just censures, and profound speculations; yet its principal claim to admiration is, that * it was written in twenty-four hours, of which part was spent in procuring Browne's book, and part in reading it.

Of these animadversions, when they were yet not all printed, either officiousness or malice informed Dr. Browne; who wrote to Sir Kenelm with much softness and ceremony, declaring the unworthiness of his work to engage such notice, the intended privacy of the composition, and the corruptions of the impression; and received an answer equally genteel and respectful, containing high commendations of the piece, pompous professions of reverence, meek acknowledgements of inability, and anxious apologies for the hastiness of his remarks.

* Digby's letter to Browne, prefixed to the Religio Medici, fol. edit.

The reciprocal civility of authors is one of the most risible scenes in the farce of life. Who would not have thought, that these two luminaries of their age had ceased to endeavour to grow bright by the obscuration of each other? yet the animadversions thus weak, thus precipitate, upon a book thus injured in the transcription, quickly passed the press; and *Religio Medici* was more accurately published, with an admonition prefixed "to those who have or shall per-"use the observations upon a former corrupt copy;" in which there is a severe censure, not upon Digby, who was to be used with ceremony, but upon the observator who had usurped his name: nor was this invective written by Dr. Browne, who was supposed to be satisfied with his opponent's apology; but by some officious friend, zealous for his honour, without his consent.

Browne has, indeed, in his own preface, endeavoured to secure himself from rigorous examination, by alledging, that "many things are delivered rhe-"torically, many expressions merely tropical, and "therefore many things to be taken in a soft and "flexible sense, and not to be called unto the rigid "test of reason." The first glance upon his book will indeed discover examples of this liberty of thought and expression: "I could be content (says "he) to be nothing almost to eternity, if I might "enjoy my Saviour at the last." He has little acquaintance with the acuteness of Browne, who suspects him of a serious opinion, that any thing can be "almost eternal," or that any time beginning and ending, is not infinitely less than infinite duration.

In this book he speaks much, and, in the opinion of Digby, too much of himself; but with such generality

rality and conciseness as affords very little light to his biographer: he declares, that, besides the dialects of different provinces, he understood six languages; that he was no stranger to Astronomy; and that he had seen several countries; but what most awakens curiosity is, his solemn assertion, that "his life has been "a miracle of thirty years; which to relate were not "history, but a piece of poetry, and would sound "like a fable."

There is, undoubtedly, a sense in which all life is miraculous; as it is an union of powers of which we can image no connection, a succession of motions of which the first cause must be supernatural; but life, thus explained, whatever it may have of miracle, will have nothing of fable; and, therefore, the author undoubtedly had regard to something, by which he imagined himself distinguished from the rest of mankind.

Of these wonders, however, the view that can be now taken of his life offers no appearance. The course of his education was like that of others, such as put him little in the way of extraordinary casualties. A scholastic and academical life is very uniform; and has, indeed, more safety than pleasure. A traveller has greater opportunities of adventure; but Browne traversed no unknown seas, or Arabian desarts; and, surely, a man may visit France and Italy, reside at Montpelier and Padua, and at last take his degree at Leyden, without any thing miraculous. What it was that would, if it was related, sound so poetical and fabulous, we are left to guess; I believe without hope of guessing rightly. The wonders probably were transacted in his own mind;

self-

self-love, co-operating with an imagination vigorous and fertile as that of Browne, will find or make objects of astonishment in every man's life; and, perhaps, there is no human being, however hid in the crowd from the observation of his fellow-mortals, who, if he has leisure and disposition to recollect his own thoughts and actions, will not conclude his life in some sort a miracle, and imagine himself distinguished from all the rest of his species by many discriminations of nature or of fortune.

The success of this performance was such, as might naturally encourage the author to new undertakings. A gentleman of Cambridge*, whose name was Merryweather, turned it not inelegantly into Latin; and from his version it was again translated into Italian, German, Dutch, and French; and at Strasburg the Latin translation was published with large notes, by Lenuus Nicholaus Molifarius. Of the English annotations, which in all the editions from 1644 accompany the book, the author is unknown.

Of Merryweather, to whose zeal Browne was so much indebted for the sudden extension of his renown, I know nothing, but that he published a small treatise for the instruction of young persons in the attainment of a Latin style. He printed his translation in Holland with some difficulty†. The first printer to whom he offered it carried it to Salmasius, "who laid it by (says he) in state for three months," and then discouraged its publication: it was afterwards rejected by two other printers, and at last was received by Hackius.

* Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

† Merryweather's letter, inserted in the Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

The

The peculiarities of this book raised the author, as is usual, many admirers and many enemies; but we know not of more than one professed answer, written under * the title of "Medicus Medicatus," by Alexander Ross, which was universally neglected by the world.

At the time when this book was published, Dr. Browne resided at Norwich, where he had settled in 1636, by † the persuasion of Dr. Lushington his tutor, who was then rector of Barnham Westgate in the neighbourhood. It is recorded by Wood, that his practice was very extensive, and that many patients resorted to him. In 1637 ‡ he was incorporated doctor of physick in Oxford.

He married in 1641 § Mrs. Mileham, of a good family in Norfolk; "a lady (says Whitefoot) of "such symmetrical proportion to her worthy hus- "band, both in the graces of her body and mind, "that they seemed to come together by a kind of "natural magnetism."

This marriage could not but draw the raillery of contemporary wits || upon a man who had just been wishing in his new book, "that we might procreate "like trees, without conjunction;" and had ¶ lately declared, that "the whole world was made for man, "but only the twelfth part of man for woman;" and, that "man is the whole world, but woman only "the rib or crooked part of man."

Whether the lady had been yet informed of these contemptuous positions, or whether she was pleased

* Life of Sir Thomas Browne.
† Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses. ‡ Wood. § Whitefoot.
|| Howel's Letters. ¶ Religio Medici.

with

with the conquest of so formidable a rebel, and considered it as a double triumph, to attract so much merit, and overcome so powerful prejudices; or whether, like most others, she married upon mingled motives, between convenience and inclination; she had, however, no reason to repent, for she lived happily with him one-and-forty years, and bore him ten children, of whom one son and three daughters outlived their parents: she survived him two years, and passed her widowhood in plenty, if not in opulence.

Browne having now entered the world as an author, and experienced the delights of praise and molestations of censure, probably found his dread of the publick eye diminished; and, therefore, was not long before he trusted his name to the criticks a second time: for in 1646 * he printed *Enquiries into vulgar and common Errours;* a work, which as it arose not from fancy and invention, but from observation and books, and contained not a single discourse of one continued tenor, of which the latter part arose from the former, but an enumeration of many unconnected particulars, must have been the collection of years, and the effect of a design early formed and long pursued, to which his remarks had been continually referred, and which arose gradually to its present bulk by the daily aggregation, of new particles of knowledge. It is indeed to be wished, that he had longer delayed the publication, and added what the remaining part of his life might have furnished: the thirty-six years which he spent afterwards in study and experience, would doubtless have made large additions to an *Enquiry into vulgar Errours.* He published

* Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

in

in 1673 the sixth edition, with some improvements; but I think rather with explication of what he had already written, than any new heads of disquisition: But with the work, such as the author, whether hindered from continuing it by eagerness of praise, or weariness of labour, thought fit to give, we must be content; and remember, that in all sublunary things there is something to be wished which we must wish in vain.

This book, like his former, was received with great applause, was answered by Alexander Ross, and translated into Dutch and German, and not many years ago into French. It might now be proper, had not the favour with which it was at first received filled the kingdom with copies, to reprint it with notes, partly supplemental, and partly emendatory, to subjoin those discoveries which the industry of the last age has made, and correct those mistakes which the author has committed not by idleness or negligence, but for want of Boyle's and Newton's philosophy.

He appears indeed to have been willing to pay labour for truth. Having heard a flying rumour of sympathetick needles, by which, suspended over a circular alphabet, distant friends or lovers might correspond, he procured two such alphabets to be made, touched his needles with the same magnet, and placed them upon proper spindles: the result was, that when he moved one of his needles, the other, instead of taking by sympathy the same direction, "stood like the pillars of Hercules." That it continued motionless, will be easily believed; and most men would have been content to believe it, without the

the labour of so hopeless an experiment. Browne might himself have obtained the same conviction by a method less operose, if he had thrust his needles through corks, and set them afloat in two basons of water.

Notwithstanding his zeal to detect old errors, he seems not very easy to admit new positions; for he never mentions the motion of the earth but with contempt and ridicule, though the opinion which admits it was then growing popular, and was surely plausible, even before it was confirmed by later observations.

The reputation of Browne encouraged some low writer to publish, under his name, a book called, * *Nature's Cabinet unlocked*, translated, according to Wood, from the physicks of Magirus; of which Browne took care to clear himself, by modestly advertising, that "if any man † had been benefited by "it, he was not so ambitious as to challenge the "honour thereof, as having no hand in that work."

In 1658 the discovery of some ancient urns in Norfolk gave him occasion to write *Hydriotaphia, Urn-burial, or a Discourse of sepulchral Urns* in which he treats with his usual learning on the funeral rites of the ancient nations; exhibits their various treatment of the dead; and examines the substances found in his Norfolcian urns. There is, perhaps, none of his works which better exemplifies his reading or memory. It is scarcely to be imagined, how many particulars he has amassed together, in a trea-

* Wood, and Life of Sir Thomas Browne.

† At the end of Hydriotaphia.

tise

tise which seems to have been occasionally written; and for which, therefore, no materials could have been previously collected. It is indeed, like other treatises of antiquity, rather for curiosity than use; for it is of small importance to know which nation buried their dead in the ground, which threw them into the sea, or which gave them to birds and beasts; when the practice of cremation began, or when it was disused; whether the bones of different persons were mingled in the same urn; what oblations were thrown into the pyre; or how the ashes of the body were distinguished from those of other substances. Of the uselessness of these enquiries, Browne seems not to have been ignorant; and, therefore, concludes them with an observation which can never be too frequently recollected:

"All or most apprehensions rested in opinions of "some future being, which, ignorantly or coldly be- "lieved, begat those perverted conceptions, ceremo- "nies, sayings, which Christians pity or laugh at. "Happy are they, which live not in that dead- "vantage of time, when men could say little for "futurity, but from reason; whereby the noblest "mind fell often upon doubtful deaths, and melan- "choly dissolutions: with these hopes Socrates "warmed his doubtful spirits against the cold po- "tion; and Cato, before he durst give the fatal "stroke, spent part of the night in reading the im- "mortality of Plato, thereby confirming his waver- "ing hand unto the animosity of that attempt.

"It is the heaviest stone that melancholy can "throw at a man, to tell him he is at the end of his "nature; or that there is no further state to come, "unto which this seems progressional, and otherwise

"made

" made in vain: without this accomplishment, the " natural expectation and desire of such a state were " but a fallacy in nature: unsatisfied considerators " would quarrel at the justness of the constitution, " and rest content that Adam had fallen lower, " whereby, by knowing no other original, and deeper " ignorance of themselves, they might have enjoyed " the happiness of inferiôr creatures, who in tran- " quillity possess their constitutions, as having not the " apprehension to deplore their own natures; and be- " ing framed below the circumference of these hopes " of cognition of better things, the wisdom of God " hath necessitated their contentment. But the supe- " rior ingredient and obscured part of ourselves, " whereto all present felicities afford no resting con- " tentment, will be able at last to tell us we are more " than our present selves: and evacuate such hopes " in the fruition of their own accomplishments."

To his treatise on *Urn-burial* was added *The Garden of Cyrus, or the quincunxial lozenge, or network plantation of the Ancients, artificially, naturally, mystically, considered.* This discourse he begins with the *Sacred Garden*, in which the first man was placed; and deduces the practice of horticulture from the earliest accounts of antiquity to the time of the *Persian Cyrus*, the first man whom we actually know to have planted a quincunx; which, however, our author is inclined to believe of longer date, and not only discovers it in the description of the hanging gardens of Babylon, but seems willing to believe, and to persuade his reader, that it was practised by the feeders on vegetables before the flood.

Some of the most pleasing performances have been produced by learning and genius exercised upon subjects

jects of little importance. It seems to have been in all ages the pride of wit, to shew how it could exalt the low, and amplify the little. To speak not inadequately of things really and naturally great, is a task not only difficult but disagreeable; because the writer is degraded in his own eyes by standing in comparison with his subject, to which he can hope to add nothing from his imagination: but it is a perpetual triumph of fancy to expand a scanty theme, to raise glittering ideas from obscure properties, and to produce to the world an object of wonder to which nature had contributed little. To this ambition, perhaps, we owe the frogs of Homer, the gnat and the bees of Virgil, the butterfly of Spenser, the shadow of Wowerus, and the quincunx of Browne.

In the prosecution of this sport of fancy, he considers every production of art and nature in which he could find any decussation or approaches to the form of a quincunx; and as a man once resolved upon ideal discoveries seldom searches long in vain, he finds his favourite figure in almost every thing, whether natural or invented, ancient or modern, rude or artificial, sacred or civil; so that a reader, not watchful against the power of his infusions, would imagine that decussation was the great business of the world, and that nature and art had no other purpose than to exemplify and imitate a quincunx.

To shew the excellence of this figure, he enumerates all its properties; and finds it in almost every thing of use or pleasure: and to shew how readily he supplies what he cannot find, one instance may be sufficient: "though therein (says he) we meet not "with right angles, yet every rhombus containing

"four

" four angles equal unto two right, it virtually con-
" tains two right in every one."

The fanciful sports of great minds are never without some advantage to knowledge. Browne has interspersed many curious observations on the form of plants, and the laws of vegetation; and appears to have been a very accurate observer of the modes of germination, and to have watched with great nicety the evolution of the parts of plants from their seminal principles.

He is then naturally led to treat of the number Five; and finds, that by this number many things are circumscribed; that there are five kinds of vegetable productions, five sections of a cone, five orders of architecture, and five acts of a play. And observing that five was the ancient conjugal or wedding number, he proceeds to a speculation which I shall give in his own words; " the ancient numerists made
" out the conjugal number by two and three, the
" first parity and imparity, the active and passive
" digits, the material and formal principles in gene-
" rative societies."

These are all the tracts which he published. But many papers were found in his closet: " some of
" them, (says Whitefoot,) designed for the press,
" were often transcribed and corrected by his own
" hand, after the fashion of great and curious
" writers."

Of these, two collections have been published; one by Dr. Tennison, the other in 1722 by a nameless editor. Whether the one or the other selected those pieces which the author would have preferred, cannot be known: but they have both the merit of

giving

giving to mankind what was too valuable to be suppressed; and what might, without their interposition, have perhaps perished among other innumerable labours of learned men, or have been burnt in a scarcity of fuel like the papers of Peirecius.

The first of these posthumous treatises contains *Observations upon several Plants mentioned in Scripture:* these remarks, though they do not immediately either rectify the faith, or refine the morals of the reader, yet are by no means to be censured as superfluous niceties, or useless speculations; for they often shew some propriety of description, or elegance of allusion, utterly undiscoverable to readers not skilled in Oriental botany; and are often of more important use, as they remove some difficulty from narratives, or some obscurity from precepts.

The next is, *Of Garlands, or coronary and garland Plants;* a subject merely of learned curiosity without any other end than the pleasure of reflecting on ancient customs, or on the industry with which studious men have endeavoured to recover them.

The next is a letter, *On the Fishes eaten by our Saviour with his Disciples, after his Resurrection from the Dead;* which contains no determinate resolution of the question, what they were, for indeed it cannot be determined. All the information that diligence or learning could supply consists in an enumeration of the fishes produced in the waters of Judea.

Then follow, *Answers to certain Queries about Fishes, Birds and Insects*; and *A Letter of Hawks and Falconry ancient and modern:* in the first of which he gives the proper interpretation of some ancient names of animals, commonly mistaken; and in the other has some curious observations on the art of hawking.

hawking, which he considers as a practice unknown to the ancients. I believe all our sports of the field are of Gothic original; the ancients neither hunted by the scent, nor seemed much to have practised horsemanship as an exercise; and though in their works, there is mention of *aucupium* and *piscatio*, they seem no more to have been considered as diversions, than agriculture or any other manual labour.

In two more letters he speaks of the *cymbals of the Hebrews*, but without any satisfactory determination; and of *ropalic or gradual verses*, that is, of verses beginning with a word of one syllable, and proceeding by words of which each has a syllable more than the former; as,

"O deus, æternæ stationis conciliator." AUSONIUS.

And after this manner pursuing the hint, he mentions many other restrained methods of versifying, to which industrious ignorance has sometimes voluntarily subjected itself.

His next attempt is *On Languages, and particularly the Saxon Tongue*. He discourses with great learning, and generally with great justness, of the derivation and changes of languages; but like other men of multifarious learning, he receives some notions without examination. Thus he observes, according to the popular opinion, that the Spaniards have retained so much Latin as to be able to compose sentences that shall be at once grammatically Latin and Castilian: this will appear very unlikely to a man that considers the Spanish terminations; and Howel, who was eminently skilful in the three provincial languages, declares, that after many essays he never could effect it.

The

The principal design of this letter is to shew the affinity between the modern English and the ancient Saxon; and he observes, very rightly, that "though "we have borrowed many substantives, adjectives, "and some verbs, from the French; yet the great "body of numerals, auxiliary verbs, articles, pro- "nouns, adverbs, conjunctions, and prepositions, "which are the distinguishing and lasting parts of "a language, remain with us from the Saxon."

To prove this position more evidently, he has drawn up a short discourse of six paragraphs, in Saxon and English; of which every word is the same in both languages, excepting the terminations and orthography. The words are, indeed, Saxon, but the phrascology is English; and, I think, would not have been understood by Bede or Elfric, notwithstanding the confidence of our author. He has, however, sufficiently proved his position, that the English resembles its paternal language more than any modern European dialect.

There remain five tracts of this collection yet unmentioned; one, *Of artificial Hills, Mounts, or Barrows, in England;* in reply to an interrogatory letter of E. D. whom the writers of the *Biographia Britannica* suppose to be, if rightly printed, W. D. or sir William Dugdale, one of Browne's correspondents. These are declared by Browne, in concurrence, I think, with all other antiquaries, to be for the most part funeral monuments. He proves, that both the Danes and Saxons buried their men of eminence under piles of earth, "which admitting "(says he) neither ornament, epitaph, nor inscrip- "tion, may, if earthquakes spare them, outlast "other

" other monuments: obelisks have their term, and " pyramids will tumble; but these mountainous mo- " numents may stand, and are like to have the same " period with the earth."

In the next, he answers two geographical questions; one concerning Troas, mentioned in the Acts and Epistles of St. Paul, which he determines to be the city built near the ancient Ilium; and the other concerning the dead sea, of which he gives the same account with other writers.

Another letter treats *Of the Answers of the Oracle of Apollo, at Delphos,* to Crœsus king of Lydia. In this tract nothing deserves notice, more than that Browne considers the oracles as evidently and indubitably supernatural, and founds all his disquisition upon that postulate. He wonders why the physiologists of old, having such means of instruction, did not enquire into the secrets of nature: but judiciously concludes, that such questions would probably have been vain; " for in matters cognoscible, and formed " for our disquisition, our industry must be our " oracle, and reason our Apollo."

The pieces that remain are, *A Prophecy concerning the future State of several Nations*; in which Browne plainly discovers his expectation to be the same with that entertained lately with more confidence by Dr. Berkeley, " that America will be the seat of the fifth " empire:" and *Museum clausum, sive Bibliotheca abscondita*; in which the author amuses himself with imagining the existence of books and curiosities, either never in being or irrecoverably lost.

These pieces I have recounted as they are ranged in Tenison's collection, because the editor has given no

no account of the time at which any of them were written. Some of them are of little value, more than as they gratify the mind with the picture of a great scholar, turning his learning into amusement; or shew upon how great a variety of enquiries the same mind has been successfully employed.

The other collection of his posthumous pieces, published in octavo, London 1722, contains *Repertorium; or some Account of the Tombs and Monuments in the Cathedral of Norwich;* where, as Tenison observes, there is not matter proportionate to the skill of the antiquary.

The other pieces are, "Answers to Sir William "Dugdale's enquiries about the Fens; a letter con- "cerning Ireland; another relating to Urns newly "discovered; some short strictures on different sub- "jects; and a letter to a friend on the death of his "intimate friend," published singly by the author's son in 1690.

There is inserted in the "Biographia Britannica, "a letter containing instructions for the study of "Physick;" which, with the essays here offered to the publick, completes the works of Dr. Browne.

To the life of this learned man, there remains little to be added, but that in 1665 he was chosen honorary fellow of the college of physicians, as a man, "Virtute et literis ornatissimus;—eminently "embellished with literature and virtue:" and, in 1671, received, at Norwich, the honour of knighthood from Charles II. a prince, who, with many frailties and vices, had yet skill to discover excellence, and virtue to reward it with such honorary distinctions at least as cost him nothing, yet, con-

ferred by a king so judicious and so much beloved, had the power of giving merit new lustre and greater popularity.

Thus he lived in high reputation, till in his seventy-sixth year he was seized with a colick, which, after having tortured him about a week, put an end to his life at Norwich, on his birth-day, October 19, 1682*. Some of his last words were expressions of submission to the will of God, and fearlessness of death.

He lies buried in the church of St. Peter, Mancroft, in Norwich, with this inscription on a mural monument, placed on the south pillar of the altar:

M. S.
Hic situs est THOMAS BROWNE, M. D.
Et miles.
Anno 1605, Londini natus;
Generosâ familiâ apud Upton
In agro Cestriensi oriundus.
Scholâ primum Wintoniensi, postea
In Coll. Pembr.
Apud Oxonienses bonis literis
Haud leviter imbutus;
In urbe hâc Nordovicensi medicinam
Arte egregiâ, & fœlici successu professus;
Scriptis quibus tituli, RELIGIO MEDICI
Et PSEUDODOXIA EPIDEMICA aliisque
Per orbem notissimus.
Vir prudentissimus, integerrimus, doctissimus;
Obiit Octob. 19, 1682.
Piè posuit mœstissima conjux
Da. Doroth. Br.

* Browne's remains. Whitefoot.

Near

Near the foot of this pillar
Lies Sir Thomas Browne, knt. and doctor in physick,
Author of Religio Medici, and other learned books,
Who practised physick in this city 46 years,
And died Oct. 1682, in the 77th year of his age.
In memory of whom,
Dame Dorothy Browne, who had been his affectionate
Wife 47 years, caused this monument to be
Erected.

Besides this lady, who died in 1685, he left a son and three daughters. Of the daughters nothing very remarkable is known; but his son, Edward Browne, requires a particular mention.

He was born about the year 1642; and, after having passed through the classes of the school at Norwich, became bachelor of physick at Cambridge; and afterwards removing to Merton-College in Oxford, was admitted there to the same degree, and afterwards made a doctor. In 1668 he visited part of Germany; and in the year following made a wider excursion into Austria, Hungary, and Thessaly; where the Turkish sultan then kept his court at Larissa. He afterwards passed through Italy. His skill in natural history made him particularly attentive to mines and metallurgy. Upon his return he published an account of the countries through which he had passed; which I have heard commended by a learned traveller, who has visited many places after him, as written with scrupulous and exact veracity, such as is scarcely to be found in any other book of the same kind. But whatever it may contribute to the instruction of a naturalist, I cannot recommend it

as

as likely to give much pleasure to common readers; for whether it be that the world is very uniform, and therefore he who is resolved to adhère to truth will have few novelties to relate; or that Dr. Browne was, by the train of his studies, led to enquire most after those things by which the greatest part of mankind is little affected; a great part of his book seems to contain very unimportant accounts of his passage from one place where he saw little, to another where he saw no more.

Upon his return, he practised physick in London; was made physician first to Charles II., and afterwards, in 1682, to St. Bartholomew's hospital.—About the same time he joined his name to those of many other eminent men, in "a translation of Plu-" tarch's lives." He was first censor, then elect, and treasurer of the college of physicians; of which in 1705 he was chosen president, and held his office till in 1708 he died in a degree of estimation suitable to a man so variously accomplished, that king Charles had honoured him with this panegyrick, that "he " was as learned as any of the college, and as well-" bred as any of the court."

Of every great and eminent character, part breaks forth into publick view, and part lies hid in domestic privacy. Those qualities, which have been exerted in any known and lasting performances, may, at any distance of time, be traced and estimated; but silent excellences are soon forgotten; and those minute peculiarities which discriminate every man from all others, if they are not recorded by those whom personal knowledge enables to observe them, are irrecoverably lost. This mutilation of character must have

have happened, among many others, to sir Thomas Browne, had it not been delineated by his friend Mr. Whitefoot, "who esteemed it an especial favour of "Providence, to have had a particular acquaintance "with him for two thirds of his life." Part of his observations I shall therefore copy.

"For a character of his person, his complexion and "hair was answerable to his name; his stature was "moderate, and a habit of body neither fat nor lean, "but εὐσάρκος.

"In his habit of clothing, he had an aversion to "all finery, and affected plainness both in the fashion "and ornaments. He ever wore a cloak, or boots, "when few others did. He kept himself always very "warm, and thought it most safe so to do, though "he never loaded himself with such a multitude of "garments, as Suetonius reports of Augustus, enough "to clothe a good family.

"The horizon of his understanding was much "larger than the hemisphere of the world: all that "was visible in the heavens he comprehended so "well, that few that are under them knew so much: "he could tell the number of the visible stars in his "horizon, and call them all by their names that had "any; and of the earth he had such a minute and "exact geographical knowledge, as if he had been "by Divine Providence ordained surveyor-general "of the whole terrestrial orb, and its products, mi-"nerals, plants, and animals. He was so curious a "botanist, that, besides the specifical distinctions, he "made nice and elaborate observations, equally use-"ful as entertaining.

"His

"His memory, though not so eminent as that of "Seneca or Scaliger, was capacious and tenacious, "insomuch as he remembered all that was remark- "able in any book that he had read; and not only "knew all persons again that he had ever seen at "any distance of time, but remembered the circum- "stances of their bodies, and their particular dis- "courses and speeches.

"In the Latin poets he remembered every thing "that was acute and pungent; he had read most of "the historians, ancient and modern, wherein his "observations were singular, not taken notice of by "common readers; he was excellent company when "he was at leisure, and expressed more light than "heat in the temper of his brain.

"He had no despotical power over his affections "and passions (that was a privilege of original per- "fection, forfeited by the neglect of the use of it), "but as large a political power over them, as any "stoick, or man of his time, whereof he gave so "great experiment, that he hath very rarely been "known to have been overcome with any of them. "The strongest that were found in him, both of the "irascible and concupiscible, were under the con- "troul of his reason. Of admiration, which is one "of them, being the only product either of igno- "rance or uncommon knowledge, he had more and "less than other men, upon the same account of his "knowing more than others; so that though he met "with many rarities, he admired them not so much "as others do.

"He was never seen to be transported with "mirth, or dejected with sadness; always cheerful

"but

"but rarely merry, at any sensible rate; seldom "heard to break a jest; and when he did, he would "be apt to blush at the levity of it: his gravity was "natural, without affectation.

"His modesty was visible in a natural habitual "blush, which was increased upon the least occasion, "and oft discovered without any observable cause.

"They that knew no more of him than by the "briskness of his writings, found themselves deceived "in their expectation, when they came in his com- "pany, noting the gravity and sobriety of his aspect "and conversation; so free from loquacity or much "talkativeness, that he was sometimes difficult to "be engaged in any discourse; though when he was "so, it was always singular, and never trite or vul- "gar. Parsimonious in nothing but his time, "whereof he made as much improvement, with as "little loss as any man in it: when he had any to "spare from his drudging practice, he was scarce "patient of any diversion from his study; so impa- "tient of sloth and idleness, that he would say, he "could not do nothing.

"Sir Thomas understood most of the European "languages; viz. all that are in Hutter's Bible, "which he made use of. The Latin and Greek he "understood critically; the Oriental languages, "which never were vernacular in this part of the "world, he thought the use of them would not "answer the time and pains of learning them; yet "had so great a veneration for the matrix of them, "viz. the Hebrew, consecrated to the oracles of "God, that he was not content to be totally igno- "rant of it; though very little of his science is to be

"found

" found in any books of that primitive language. " And though much is said to be written in the derivative idioms of that tongue, especially the Arabick, " yet he was satisfied with the translations, wherein " he found nothing admirable.

" In his religion he continued in the same mind " which he had declared in his first book, written when " he was but thirty years old, his *Religio Medici*, " wherein he fully assented to that of the church of " England, preferring it before any in the world, as " did the learned Grotius. He attended the publick " service very constantly, when he was not with-held " by his practice; never missed the sacrament in his " parish, if he were in town; read the best English " sermons he could hear of, with liberal applause; " and delighted not in controversies. In his last " sickness, wherein he continued about a week's " time, enduring great pain of the colick, besides " a continual fever, with as much patience as hath " been seen in any man, without any pretence of " Stoical apathy, animosity, or vanity of not being " concerned thereat, or suffering no impeachment " of happiness—*Nihil agis, dolor.*

" His patience was founded upon the Christian " philosophy, and a sound faith of God's providence, " and a meek and holy submission thereunto, which " he expressed in few words. I visited him near his " end, when he had not strength to hear or speak " much; the last words which I heard from him " were, besides some expressions of dearness, that " he did freely submit to the will of God, being " without fear: he had often triumphed over the " king of terrors in others, and given many repulses

" in

" in the defence of patients; but, when his own turn " came, he submitted with a meek, rational, and re- " ligious courage.

" He might have made good the old saying of " *Dat Galenus opes*, had he lived in a place that " could have afforded it. But his indulgence and " liberality to his children, especially in their travels, " two of his sons in divers countries, and two of his " daughters in France, spent him more than a little. " He was liberal in his house-entertainments and in " his charity; he left a comfortable, but no great " estate, both to his lady and children, gained by his " own industry.

" Such was his sagacity and knowledge of all his- " tory, ancient and modern, and his observations " thereupon so singular, that it hath been said, by " them that knew him best, that if his profession, " and place of abode, would have suited his abi- " lity, he would have made an extraordinary man " for the privy-council, not much inferior to the " famous Padre Paulo, the late oracle of the Ve- " netian state.

" Though he were no prophet, nor son of a pro- " phet, yet in that faculty which comes nearest it he " excelled, i. e. the stochastick, wherein he was sel- " dom mistaken, as to future events, as well public " as private; but not apt to discover any presages or " superstition."

It is observable, that he, who in his earlier years had read all the books against religion, was in the latter part of his life averse from controversies. To play with important truths, to disturb the repose of established tenets, to subtilize objections, and elude proof,

proof, is too often the sport of youthful vanity, of which maturer experience commonly repents. There is a time when every man is weary of raising difficulties only to task himself with the solution, and desires to enjoy truth without the labour or hazard of contest. There is, perhaps, no better method of encountering these troublesome irruptions of scepticism, with which inquisitive minds are frequently harassed, than that which Browne declares himself to have taken: "If there arise any doubts in my way, I do "forget them; or at least defer them, till my better "settled judgment, and more manly reason, be able "to resolve them: for I perceive, every man's reason "is his best *Œdipus*, and will, upon a reasonable "truce, find a way to loose those bonds, wherewith "the subtilties of error have enchained our more "flexible and tender judgments."

The foregoing character may be confirmed and enlarged by many passages in the *Religio Medici*; in which it appears, from Whitefoot's testimony, that the author, though no very sparing panegyrist of himself, had not exceeded the truth, with respect to his attainments or visible qualities.

There are, indeed, some interior and secret virtues, which a man may sometimes have without the knowledge of others; and may sometimes assume to himself, without sufficient reasons for his opinion. It is charged upon Browne, by Dr. Watts, as an instance of arrogant temerity, that, after a long detail of his attainments, he declares himself to have escaped "the first and father-sin of pride." A perusal of the *Religio Medici* will not much contribute to produce a belief of the author's exemption from this father-

father-sin: pride is a vice, which pride itself inclines every man to find in others, and to overlook in himself.

As easily may we be mistaken in estimating our own courage, as our own humility; and therefore, when Browne shews himself persuaded, that "he "could lose an arm without a tear, or with a few "groans be quartered to pieces," I am not sure that he felt in himself any uncommon powers of endurance; or, indeed, any thing more than a sudden effervescence of imagination, which, uncertain and involuntary as it is, he mistook for settled resolution.

"That there were not many extant, that in a "noble way feared the face of death less than him-"self;" he might likewise believe at a very easy expence, while death was yet at a distance; but the time will come to every human being, when it must be known how well he can bear to die; and it has appeared that our author's fortitude did not desert him in the great hour of trial.

It was observed by some of the remarkers on the *Religio Medici*, that "the author was yet alive, and "might grow worse as well as better;" it is therefore happy, that this suspicion can be obviated by a testimony given to the continuance of his virtue, at a time when death had set him free from danger of change, and his panegyrist from temptation to flattery.

But it is not on the praises of others, but on his own writings, that he is to depend for the esteem of posterity; of which he will not easily be deprived while learning shall have any reverence among men; for

for there is no science in which he does not discover some skill; and scarce any kind of knowledge, profane or sacred, abstruse or elegant, which he does not appear to have cultivated with success.

His exuberance of knowledge, and plenitude of ideas, sometimes obstruct the tendency of his reasoning and the clearness of his decisions: on whatever subject he employed his mind, there started up immediately so many images before him, that he lost one by grasping another. His memory supplied him with so many illustrations, parallel or dependent notions, that he was always starting into collateral considerations: but the spirit and vigour of his pursuit always gives delight; and the reader follows him, without reluctance, through his mazes, in themselves flowery and pleasing, and ending at the point originally in view.

"To have great excellences and great faults, *mag-* "*næ virtutes nec minora vitia,* is the poesy," says our author, "of the best natures." This poesy may be properly applied to the style of Browne: it is vigorous, but rugged; it is learned, but pedantick; it is deep, but obscure; it strikes, but does not please; it commands, but does not allure: his tropes are harsh and his combinations uncouth. He fell into an age in which our language began to lose the stability which it had obtained in the time of Elizabeth; and was considered by every writer as a subject on which he might try his plastick skill, by moulding it according to his own fancy. Milton, in consequence of this incroaching licence, began to introduce the Latin idiom: and Browne, though he gave less disturbance to our structures in phraseology, yet poured in

in a multitude of exotick words; many, indeed, useful and significant, which, if rejected, must be supplied by circumlocution, such as *commensality* for the state of many living at the same table; but many superfluous, as a *paralogical* for an unreasonable doubt; and some so obscure, that they conceal his meaning rather than explain it, as *arthritical analogies* for parts that serve some animals in the place of joints.

His style is, indeed, a tissue of many languages; a mixture of heterogeneous words, brought together from distant regions, with terms originally appropriated to one art, and drawn by violence into the service of another. He must however be confessed to have augmented our philosophical diction: and in defence of his uncommon words and expressions, we must consider, that he had uncommon sentiments, and was not content to express in many words that idea for which any language could supply a single term.

But his innovations are sometimes pleasing, and his temerities happy: he has many *verba ardentia*, forcible expressions, which he would never have found, but by venturing to the utmost verge of propriety; and flights which would never have been reached, but by one who had very little fear of the shame of falling.

There remains yet an objection against the writings of Browne, more formidable than the animadversions of criticism. There are passages from which some have taken occasion to rank him among deists, and others among atheists. It would be difficult to guess how any such conclusion should be formed, had not

experience

experience shewn that there are two sorts of men willing to enlarge the catalogue of infidels.

It has been long observed, that an atheist has no just reason for endeavouring conversions; and yet none harass those minds which they can influence, with more importunity of solicitation to adopt their opinions. In proportion as they doubt the truth of their own doctrines, they are desirous to gain the attestation of another understanding: and industriously labour to win a proselyte, and eagerly catch at the slightest pretence to dignify their sect with a celebrated name *.

The others become friends to infidelity only by unskilful hostility; men of rigid orthodoxy, cautious conversation, and religious asperity. Among these, it is too frequently the practice, to make in their heat concessions to atheism, or deism, which their most confident advocates had never dared to claim, or to hope. A sally of levity, an idle paradox, an indecent jest, an unreasonable objection, are sufficient in the opinion of these men, to efface a name from the lists of Christianity, to exclude a soul from everlasting life. Such men are so watchful to censure, that they have seldom much care to look for favourable interpretations of ambiguities, to set the general tenor of life against single failures, or to know how soon any slip of inadvertency has been expiated by sorrow and retraction; but let fly their fulminations, without mercy or prudence, against slight of-

* Therefore no Hereticks desire to spread
Their wild opinions like these Epicures,
For so their staggering thoughts are computed,
And other men's assent their doubt assures. DAVIES.

fences

fences of casual temerities, against crimes never committed, or immediately repented

The infidel knows well what he is doing. He is endeavouring to supply, by authority, the deficiency of his arguments; and to make his cause less invidious, by shewing numbers on his side: he will, therefore, not change his conduct, till he reforms his principles. But the zealot should recollect, that he is labouring, by this frequency of excommunication, against his own cause, and voluntarily adding strength to the enemies of truth. It must always be the condition of a great part of mankind to reject and embrace tenets upon the authority of those whom they think wiser than themselves; and, therefore, the addition of every name to infidelity in some degree invalidates that argument upon which the religion of multitudes is necessarily founded.

Men may differ from each other in many religious opinions, and yet all may retain the essentials of Christianity; men may sometimes eagerly dispute, and yet not differ much from one another: the rigorous persecutors of error should, therefore, enlighten their zeal with knowledge, and temper their orthodoxy with charity; that charity, without which orthodoxy is vain; charity that "thinketh no evil," but "hopeth all things," and "endureth all "things."

Whether Browne has been numbered among the contemners of religion, by the fury of its friends, or the artifice of its enemies, it is no difficult task to replace him among the most zealous professors of Christianity. He may, perhaps, in the ardour of his imagination, have hazarded an expression, which a mind

intent upon faults may interpret into heresy, if considered apart from the rest of his discourse; but a phrase is not to be opposed to volumes; there is scarcely a writer to be found, whose profession was not divinity, that has so frequently testified his belief of the sacred writings, has appealed to them with such unlimited submission, or mentioned them with such unvaried reverence.

It is, indeed, somewhat wonderful, that he should be placed without the pale of Christianity, who declares, "that he assumes the honourable style of "a Christian," not because it is "the religion of his "country," but because, "having in his riper years "and confirmed judgment seen and examined all, he "finds himself obliged, by the principles of grace, "and the law of his own reason, to embrace no other "name but this:" who, to specify his persuasion yet more, tells us, that "he is of the Reformed reli-"gion; of the same belief our Saviour taught, the "apostles disseminated, the fathers authorised, and "the martyrs confirmed:" who, though "paradoxi-"cal in philosophy, loves in divinity to keep the "beaten road; and pleases himself that he has no "taint of heresy, schism, or error:" to whom, "where "the Scripture is silent, the Church is a text; where "that speaks, 'tis but a comment;" and who uses not "the dictates of his own reason, but where there "is a joint silence of both: who blesses himself, that "he lived not in the days of miracles, when faith had "been thrust upon him; but enjoys that greater "blessing, pronounced to all that believe and saw "not." He cannot surely be charged with a defect of faith, who "believes that our Saviour was dead,

"and

"and buried, and rose again, and desires to see him "in his glory:" and who affirms that "this is not "much to believe;" that "we have reason to owe "this faith unto history;" and that "they only had "the advantage of a bold and noble faith, who lived "before his coming; and upon obscure prophecies, "and mystical types, could raise a belief." Nor can contempt of the positive and ritual parts of religion be imputed to him, who doubts, whether a good man would refuse a poisoned eucharist; and "who would "violate his own arm, rather than a church."

The opinions of every man must be learned from himself: concerning his practice, it is safest to trust the evidence of others. Where these testimonies concur, no higher degree of historical certainty can be obtained; and they apparently concur to prove, that Browne was a zealous adherent to the faith of Christ, that he lived in obedience to his laws, and died in confidence of his mercy.

ASCHAM*.

IT often happens to writers, that they are known only by their works; the incidents of a literary life are seldom observed, and therefore seldom recounted; but Ascham has escaped the common fate by the friendship of Edward Graunt, the learned master of Westminster school, who devoted an oration to his memory, and has marked the various vicissitudes of his fortune. Graunt either avoided the labour of minute inquiry, or thought domestic occurrences unworthy of his notice; or, preferring the character of an orator to that of an historian, selected only such particulars as he could best express or most happily embellish. His narrative is therefore scanty, and I know not by what materials it can now be amplified.

ROGER ASCHAM was born in the year 1515, at Kirby Wiske, (or Kirby Wicke,) a village near Northallerton, in Yorkshire, of a family above the vulgar. His father, John Ascham, was house-steward in the family of Scroop; and in that age, when the different orders of men were at a greater distance from each other, and the manners of gentlemen were regularly formed by menial services in great houses, lived with a very conspicuous reputation. Margaret Ascham, his wife, is said to have been allied to many considerable families, but her maiden name is not

* First printed before his Works 4to. published by Bennet 1763. H.

recorded.

recorded. She had three sons, of whom Roger was the youngest, and some daughters; but who can hope, that of any progeny more than one shall deserve to be mentioned? They lived married sixty-seven years, and at last died together almost on the same hour of the same day.

Roger, having passed his first years under the care of his parents, was adopted into the family of Antony Wingfield, who maintained him, and committed his education, with that of his own sons, to the care of one Bond, a domestic tutor. He very early discovered an unusual fondness for literature by an eager perusal of English books; and having passed happily through the scholastick rudiments, was put, in 1530, by his patron Wingfield, to St. John's college in Cambridge.

Ascham entered Cambridge at a time when the last great revolution of the intellectual world was filling every academical mind with ardour or anxiety. The destruction of the Constantinopolitan empire had driven the Greeks with their language into the interior parts of Europe, the art of printing had made the books easily attainable, and Greek now began to be taught in England. The doctrines of Luther had already filled all the nations of the Romish communion with controversy and dissention. New studies of literature, and new tenets of religion, found employment for all who were desirous of truth, or ambitious of fame. Learning was at that time prosecuted with that eagerness and perseverance which in this age of indifference and dissipation it is not easy to conceive. To teach or to learn, was at once the business and the pleasure of the academical life; and an emulation of study was raised by Cheke and Smith, to which even the

the present age perhaps owes many advantages, without remembering or knowing its benefactors.

Ascham soon resolved to unite himself to those who were enlarging the bounds of knowledge, and, immediately upon his admission into the college, applied himself to the study of Greek. Those who were zealous for the new learning, were often no great friends to the old religion; and Ascham, as he became a Grecian, became a Protestant. The Reformation was not yet begun, disaffection to Popery was considered as a crime justly punished by exclusion from favour and preferment, and was not yet openly professed, though superstition was gradually losing its hold upon the publick. The study of Greek was reputable enough, and Ascham pursued it with diligence and success equally conspicuous. He thought a language might be most easily learned by teaching it; and when he had obtained some proficiency in Greek, read lectures, while he was yet a boy, to other boys, who were desirous of instruction. His industry was much encouraged by Pember, a man of great eminence at that time, though I know not that he has left any monuments behind him, but what the gratitude of his friends and scholars has bestowed. He was one of the great encouragers of Greek learning, and particularly applauded Ascham's lectures, assuring him in a letter, of which Graunt has preserved an extract, that he would gain more knowledge by explaining one of Æsop's fables to a boy, than by hearing one of Homer's poems explained by another.

Ascham took his bachelor's degree in 1534, February 18, in the eighteenth year of his age: a time of life at which it is more common now to enter the univer-

universities than to take degrees, but which, according to the modes of education then in use, had nothing of remarkable prematurity. On the 23d of March following, he was chosen fellow of the college, which election he considered as a second birth. Dr. Metcalf, the master of the college, a man, as Ascham tells us, "meanly learned himself, but no mean encourager of learning in others," clandestinely promoted his election, though he openly seemed first to oppose it, and afterwards to censure it, because Ascham was known to favour the new opinions; and the master himself was accused of giving an unjust preference to the Northern men, one of the factions into which this nation was divided, before we could find any more important reason of dissention, than that some were born on the Northern and some on the Southern side of Trent. Any cause is sufficient for a quarrel; and the zealots of the North and South lived long in such animosity, that it was thought necessary at Oxford to keep them quiet by chusing one proctor every year from each.

He seems to have been hitherto supported by the bounty of Wingfield, which his attainment of a fellowship now freed him from the necessity of receiving. Dependance, though in those days it was more common, and less irksome, than in the present state of things, can never have been free from discontent; and therefore he that was released from it must always have rejoiced. The danger is, lest the joy of escaping from the patron may not leave sufficient memory of the benefactor. Of this forgetfulness Ascham cannot be accused; for he is recorded to have preserved the most grateful and affectionate reverence for Wingfield, and to have never grown weary of recounting his benefits.

His

His reputation still increased, and many resorted to his chamber to hear the Greek writers explained. He was likewise eminent for other accomplishments. By the advice of Pember, he had learned to play on musical instruments, and he was one of the few who excelled in the mechanical art of writing, which then began to be cultivated among us, and in which we now surpass all other nations. He not only wrote his pages with neatness, but embellished them with elegant draughts and illuminations; an art at that time so highly valued, that it contributed much both to his fame and his fortune.

He became master of arts in March 1537, in his twenty-first year, and then, if not before, commenced tutor, and publickly undertook the education of young men. A tutor of one and twenty, however accomplished with learning, however exalted by genius, would now gain little reverence or obedience; but in those days of discipline and regularity, the authority of the statutes easily supplied that of the teacher; all power that was lawful was reverenced. Besides, young tutors had still younger pupils.

Ascham is said to have courted his scholars to study by every incitement, to have treated them with great kindness, and to have taken care at once to instill learning and piety, to enlighten their minds, and to form their manners. Many of his scholars rose to great eminence; and among them William Grindal was so much distinguished, that, by Cheke's recommendation, he was called to court as a proper master of languages for the lady Elizabeth.

There was yet no established lecturer of Greek; the university therefore appointed Ascham to read in the open schools, and paid him out of the publick purse

purse an honorary stipend, such as was then reckoned sufficiently liberal. A lecture was afterwards founded by King Henry, and he then quitted the schools, but continued to explain Greek authors in his own college.

He was at first an opponent of the new pronunciation introduced, or rather of the ancient restored, about this time by Cheke and Smith, and made some cautious struggles for the common practice, which the credit and dignity of his antagonists did not permit him to defend very publickly, or with much vehemence: nor were they long his antagonists; for either his affection for their merit; or his conviction of the cogency of their arguments, soon changed his opinion and his practice, and he adhered ever after to their method of utterance.

Of this controversy it is not necessary to give a circumstantial account; something of it may be found in Strype's Life of Smith, and something in Baker's Reflections upon Learning; it is sufficient to remark here, that Cheke's pronunciation was that which now prevails in the schools of England. Disquisitions not only verbal, but merely literal, are too minute for popular narration.

He was not less eminent as a writer of Latin, than as a teacher of Greek. All the publick letters of the university were of his composition; and as little qualifications must often bring great abilities into notice, he was recommended to this honourable employment not less by the neatness of his hand, than the elegance of his style.

However great was his learning, he was not always immured in his chamber; but, being valetudinary, and weak of body, thought it necessary to spend many

many hours in such exercises as might best relieve him after the fatigue of study. His favourite amusement was archery, in which he spent, or, in the opinion of others, lost so much time, that those whom either his faults or virtues made his enemies, and perhaps some whose kindness wished him always worthily employed, did not scruple to censure his practice, as unsuitable to a man professing learning, and perhaps of bad example in a place of education.

To free himself from this censure was one of the reasons for which he published, in 1544, his "Toxophilus, or the schole or partitions of shooting," in which he joins the praise with the precepts of archery. He designed not only to teach the art of shooting, but to give an example of diction more natural and more truly English than was used by the common writers of that age, whom he censures for mingling exotic terms with their native language, and of whom he complains, that they were made authors, not by skill or education, but by arrogance and temerity.

He has not failed in either of his purposes. He has sufficiently vindicated archery as an innocent, salutary, useful, and liberal diversion; and if his precepts are of no great use, he has only shown, by one example among many, how little the hand can derive from the mind, how little intelligence can conduce to dexterity. In every art, practice is much; in arts manual, practice is almost the whole. Precept can at most but warn against error: it can never bestow excellence.

The bow has been so long disused, that most English readers have forgotten its importance, though it was the weapon by which we gained the battle of

Agin-

Agincourt; a weapon which, when handled by English yeomen, no foreign troops were able to resist. We were not only abler of body than the French, and therefore superior in the use of arms, which are forcible only in proportion to the strength with which they are handled, but the national practice of shooting for pleasure or for prizes, by which every man was inured to archery from his infancy, gave us insuperable advantage, the bow requiring more practice to skilful use than any other instrument of offence.

Fire-arms were then in their infancy; and though battering-pieces had been some time in use, I know not whether any soldiers were armed with hand-guns when the "Toxophilus" was first published. They were soon after used by the Spanish troops, whom other nations made haste to imitate: but how little they could yet effect, will be understood from the account given by the ingenious author of the "Exercise for the Norfolk Militia."

"The first muskets were very heavy, and could "not be fired without a rest; they had match-locks, "and barrels of a wide bore, that carried a large "ball and charge of powder, and did execution at a "greater distance.

"The musketeers on a march carried only their "rests and ammunition, and had boys to bear their "muskets after them, for which they were allowed "great additional pay.

"They were very slow in loading, not only by "reason of the unwieldiness of the pieces, and be-"cause they carried the powder and balls separate, "but from the time it took to prepare and adjust "the match; so that their fire was not near so brisk

"as

"as ours is now. Afterwards a lighter kind of "match-lock musket came into use, and they car- "ried their ammunition in bandeliers, which were "broad belts that came over the shoulder, to which "were hung several little cases of wood covered with "leather, each containing a charge of powder; the "balls they carried loose in a pouch; and they had "also a priming-horn hanging by their side.

"The old English writers call those large muskets "calivers: the harquebuze was a lighter piece, that "could be fired without a rest. The match-lock "was fired by a match fixed by a kind of tongs in "the serpentine or cock, which, by pulling the trig- "ger, was brought down with great quickness upon "the priming in the pan; over which there was a "sliding cover, which was drawn back by the hand "just at the time of firing. There was a great deal "of nicety and care required to fit the match pro- "perly to the cock, so as to come down exactly true "on the priming, to blow the ashes from the coal, "and to guard the pan from the sparks that fell "from it. A great deal of time was also lost in tak- "ing it out of the cock, and returning it between the "fingers of the left hand every time that the piece "was fired; and wet weather often rendered the "matches useless."

While this was the state of fire-arms, and this state continued among us to the civil war with very little improvement, it is no wonder that the long-bow was preferred by Sir Thomas Smith, who wrote of the choice of weapons in the reign of queen Elizabeth, when the use of the bow still continued, though the musket was gradually prevailing. Sir John Hay-

ward,

ward, a writer yet later, has in his History of the Norman Kings, endeavoured to evince the superiority of the archer to the musketeer: however, in the long peace of king James, the bow was wholly forgotten. Guns have from that time been the weapons of the English, as of other nations, and, as they are now improved, are certainly more efficacious.

Ascham had yet another reason, if not for writing his book, at least for presenting it to king Henry. England was not then what it may be now justly termed, the capital of literature; and therefore those who aspired to superior degrees of excellence, thought it necessary to travel into other countries. The purse of Ascham was not equal to the expence of peregrination; and therefore he hoped to have it augmented by a pension. Nor was he wholly disappointed; for the king rewarded him with an yearly payment of ten pounds.

A pension of ten pounds granted by a king of England to a man of letters, appears to modern readers so contemptible a benefaction, that it is not unworthy of enquiry what might be its value at that time, and how much Ascham might be enriched by it. Nothing is more uncertain than the estimation of wealth by denominated money; the precious metals never retain long the same proportion to real commodities, and the same names in different ages do not imply the same quantity of metal; so that it is equally difficult to know how much money was contained in any nominal sum, and to find what any supposed quantity of gold or silver would purchase; both which are necessary to the commensuration of money, or the adjustment of proportion between the same sums at different periods of time.

A numeral

A numeral pound in king Henry's time contained, as now, twenty shillings; and therefore it must be inquired what twenty shillings could perform. Bread-corn is the most certain standard of the necessaries of life. Wheat was generally sold at that time for one shilling the bushel; if therefore we take five shillings the bushel for the current price, ten pounds were equivalent to fifty. But here is danger of a fallacy. It may be doubted whether wheat was the general bread-corn of that age; and if rye, barley, or oats, were the common food, and wheat, as I suspect, only a delicacy, the value of wheat will not regulate the price of other things. This, doubt, however is in favour of Ascham; for if we raise the worth of wheat, we raise that of his pension.

But the value of money has another variation, which we are still less able to ascertain: the rules of custom, or the different needs of artificial life, make that revenue little at one time which is great at another. Men are rich and poor, not only in proportion to what they have, but to what they want. In some ages, not only necessaries are cheaper, but fewer things are necessary. In the age of Ascham, most of the elegancies and expences of our present fashions were unknown: commerce had not yet distributed superfluity through the lower classes of the people, and the character of a student implied frugality, and required no splendour to support it. His pension, therefore, reckoning together the wants which he could supply, and the wants from which he was exempt, may be estimated, in my opinion, at more than one hundred pounds a year; which, added to the income of his fellowship, put him far enough above distress.

This

This was an year of good fortune to Ascham. He was chosen orator to the university on the removal of Sir John Cheke to court, where he was made tutor to prince Edward. A man once distinguished soon gains admirers. Ascham was now received to notice by many of the nobility, and by great ladies, among whom it was then the fashion to study the ancient languages. Lee, archbishop of York, allowed him an yearly pension; how much we are not told. He was probably about this time employed in teaching many illustrious persons to write a fine hand; and, among others, Henry and Charles, dukes of Suffolk, the princess Elizabeth, and prince Edward.

Henry VIII. died two years after, and a reformation of religion being now openly prosecuted by king Edward and his council, Ascham, who was known to favour it, had a new grant of his pension, and continued at Cambridge, where he lived in great familiarity with Bucer, who had been called from Germany to the professorship of divinity. But his retirement was soon at an end; for in 1548 his pupil Grindal, the master of the princess Elizabeth, died, and the princess, who had already some acquaintance with Ascham, called him from his college to direct her studies. He obeyed the summons, as we may easily believe, with readiness, and for two years instructed her with great diligence; but then, being disgusted either at her or her domesticks, perhaps eager for another change of life, he left her without her consent, and returned to the university. Of this precipitation he long repented; and, as those who are not accustomed to disrespect cannot easily forgive it, he

he probably felt the effects of his imprudence to his death.

After having visited Cambridge, he took a journey into Yorkshire, to see his native place, and his old acquaintance, and there received a letter from the court, informing him, that he was appointed secretary to Sir Richard Morisine, who was to be dispatched as ambassador into Germany. In his return to London he paid that memorable visit to lady Jane Gray, in which he found her reading the *Phædo* in Greek, as he has related in his *Schoolmaster*.

In the year 1550, he attended Morisine to Germany, and wandered over great part of the country, making observations upon all that appeared worthy of his curiosity, and contracting acquaintance with men of learning. To his correspondent Sturmius he paid a visit, but Sturmius was not at home, and those two illustrious friends never saw each other. During the course of this embassy, Ascham undertook to improve Morisine in Greek, and for four days in the week explained some passages in Herodotus every morning, and more than two hundred verses of Sophocles or Euripides every afternoon. He read with him likewise some of the orations of Demosthenes. On the other days he compiled the letters of business, and in the night filled up his diary, digested his remarks, and wrote private letters to his friends in England, and particularly to those of his college, whom he continually exhorted to perseverance in study. Amidst all the pleasures of novelty which his travels supplied, and in the dignity of his publick station, he preferred the tranquillity of private study, and

and the quiet of academical retirement. The reasonableness of this choice has been always disputed; and in the contrariety of human interests and dispositions, the controversy will not easily be decided.

He made a short excursion into Italy, and mentions in his *Schoolmaster* with great severity the vices of Venice. He was desirous of visiting Trent while the council were sitting; but the scantiness of his purse defeated his curiosity.

In this journey he wrote his *Report and Discourse of the Affairs in Germany*, in which he describes the dispositions and interests of the German princes like a man inquisitive and judicious, and recounts many particularities which are lost in the mass of general history, in a style which to the ears of that age was undoubtedly mellifluous, and which is now a very valuable specimen of genuine English.

By the death of king Edward in 1553, the Reformation was stopped, Morisine was recalled, and Ascham's pension and hopes were at an end. He therefore retired to his fellowship in a state of disappointment and despair, which his biographer has endeavoured to express in the deepest strain of plaintive declamation. "He was deprived of all his support," says Graunt, "stripped of his pension, and cut off "from the assistance of his friends, who had now "lost their influence: so that he had NEC PRÆMIA "NEC PRÆDIA, neither pension nor estate to support "him at Cambridge." There is no credit due to a rhetorician's account either of good or evil. The truth is, that Ascham still had in his fellowship all that in the early part of his life had given him plenty, and

might have lived like the other inhabitants of the college, with the advantage of more knowledge and higher reputation. But notwithstanding his love of academical retirement, he had now too long enjoyed the pleasures and festivities of publick life, to return with a good will to academical poverty.

He had, however, better fortune than he expected; and, if he lamented his condition like his historian, better than he deserved. He had during his absence in Germany been appointed Latin secretary to king Edward; and by the interest of Gardiner, bishop of Winchester, he was instated in the same office under Philip and Mary, with a salary of twenty pounds a year.

Soon after his admission to his new employment, he gave an extraordinary specimen of his abilities and diligence, by composing and transcribing with his usual elegance, in three days, forty-seven letters to princes and personages, of whom cardinals were the lowest.

How Ascham, who was known to be a Protestant, could preserve the favour of Gardiner, and hold a place of honour and profit in queen Mary's court, it must be very natural to inquire. Cheke, as is well known, was compelled to a recantation; and why Ascham was spared, cannot now be discovered. Grant, at a time when the transactions of queen Mary's reign must have been well enough remembered, declares that Ascham always made open profession of the reformed religion, and that Englesfield and others often endeavoured to incite Gardiner against him, but found their accusations rejected with contempt: yet he allows, that suspicions and charges

of

of temporization and compliance had somewhat sullied his reputation. The author of the Biographia Britannica conjectures, that he owed his safety to his innocence and usefulness; that it would have been unpopular to attack a man so little liable to censure, and that the loss of his pen could not have been easily supplied. But the truth is, that morality was never suffered in the days of persecution to protect heresy; nor are we sure that Ascham was more clear from common failings than those who suffered more; and whatever might be his abilities, they were not so necessary, but Gardiner could have easily filled his place with another secretary. Nothing is more vain, than at a distant time to examine the motives of discrimination and partiality; for the inquirer, having considered interest and policy, is obliged at last to admit more frequent and more active motives of human conduct, caprice, accident, and private affections.

At that time, if some were punished, many were forborne; and of many why should not Ascham happen to be one? He seems to have been calm and prudent, and content with that peace which he was suffered to enjoy: a mode of behaviour that seldom fails to produce security. He had been abroad in the last years of king Edward, and had at least given no recent offence. He was certainly, according to his own opinion, not much in danger; for in the next year he resigned his fellowship, which by Gardiner's favour he had continued to hold, though not resident; and married Margaret Howe, a young gentlewoman of a good family.

He was distinguished in this reign by the notice of cardinal Pole, a man of great candour, learning, and gentleness of manners, and particularly eminent for his skill in Latin, who thought highly of Ascham's style; of which it is no inconsiderable proof, that when Pole was desirous of communicating a speech made by himself as legate, in parliament, to the pope, he employed Ascham to translate it.

He is said to have been not only protected by the officers of state, but favoured and countenanced by the queen herself, so that he had no reason of complaint in that reign of turbulence and persecution: nor was his fortune much mended, when in 1558 his pupil Elizabeth mounted the throne. He was continued in his former employment, with the same stipend: but though he was daily admitted to the presence of the queen, assisted her private studies, and partook of her diversions; sometimes read to her in the learned languages, and sometimes played with her at draughts and chess; he added nothing to his twenty pounds a year but the prebend of Westwang in the church of York, which was given him the year following. His fortune was therefore not proportionate to the rank which his offices and reputation gave him, or to the favour in which he seemed to stand with his mistress. Of this parsimonious allotment it is again a hopeless search to inquire the reason. The queen was not naturally bountiful, and perhaps did not think it necessary to distinguish by any prodigality of kindness a man who had formerly deserted her, and whom she might still suspect of serving rather for interest than affection. Graunt

exerts

exerts his rhetorical powers in praise of Ascham's disinterestedness and contempt of money; and declares, that though he was often reproached by his friends with neglect of his own interest, he never would ask any thing, and inflexibly refused all presents which his office or imagined interest induced any to offer him. Camden, however, imputes the narrowness of his condition to his love of dice and cock-fights: and Graunt, forgetting himself, allows that Ascham was sometimes thrown into agonies by disappointed expectations. It may be easily discovered from his *Schoolmaster*, that he felt his wants, though he might neglect to supply them; and we are left to suspect that he shewed his contempt of money only by losing at play. If this was his practice, we may excuse Elizabeth, who knew the domestick character of her servants, if she did not give much to him who was lavish of a little.

However he might fail in his œconomy, it were indecent to treat with wanton levity the memory of a man who shared his frailties with all, but whose learning or virtues few can attain, and by whose excellencies many may be improved, while himself only suffered by his faults.

In the reign of Elizabeth nothing remarkable is known to have befallen him, except that, in 1563, he was invited by Sir Edward Sackville to write the *Schoolmaster*, a treatise on education, upon an occasion which he relates in the beginning of the book.

This work, though begun with alacrity, in hopes of a considerable reward, was interrupted by the death of the patron, and afterwards sorrowfully and slowly finished, in the gloom of disappointment, under the pressure

pressure of distress. But of the author's disinclination or dejection there can be found no tokens in the work, which is conceived with great vigour, and finished with great accuracy; and perhaps contains the best advice that was ever given for the study of languages.

This treatise he completed, but did not publish; for that poverty which in our days drives authors so hastily in such numbers to the press, in the time of Ascham, I believe, debarred them from it. The printers gave little for a copy, and, if we may believe the tale of Ralegh's history, were not forward to print what was offered them for nothing. Ascham's book, therefore, lay unseen in his study, and was at last dedicated to lord Cecil by his widow.

Ascham never had a robust or vigorous body, and his excuse for so many hours of diversion was his inability to endure a long continuance of sedentary thought. In the latter part of his life he found it necessary to forbear any intense application of the mind from dinner to bed-time, and rose to read and write early in the morning. He was for some years hectically feverish; and, though he found some alleviation of his distemper, never obtained a perfect recovery of his health. The immediate cause of his last sickness was too close application to the composition of a poem, which he purposed to present to the queen on the day of her accession. To finish this, he forbore to sleep at his accustomed hours, till in December 1568 he fell sick of a kind of lingering disease, which Graunt has not named, nor accurately described. The most afflictive symptom was want of sleep, which he endeavoured to obtain by the motion of a cradle. Growing every day weaker,

weaker, he found it vain to contend with his distemper, and prepared to die with the resignation and piety of a true Christian. He was attended on his death-bed by Gravet, vicar of St. Sepulchre, and Dr. Nowel, the learned dean of St. Paul's, who gave ample testimony to the decency and devotion of his concluding life. He frequently testified his desire of that dissolution which he soon obtained. His funeral sermon was preached by Dr. Nowel.

Roger Ascham died in the fifty-third year of his age, at a time when, according to the general course of life, much might yet have been expected from him, and when he might have hoped for much from others: but his abilities and his wants were at an end together; and who can determine, whether he was cut off from advantages, or rescued from calamities? He appears to have been not much qualified for the improvement of his fortune. His disposition was kind and social; he delighted in the pleasures of conversation, and was probably not much inclined to business. This may be suspected from the paucity of his writings. He has left little behind him; and of that little nothing was published by himself but the *Toxophilus*, and the account of Germany. The *Schoolmaster* was printed by his widow; and the epistles were collected by Graunt, who dedicated them to queen Elizabeth, that he might have an opportunity of recommending his son Giles Ascham to her patronage. The dedication was not lost: the young man was made, by the queen's mandate, fellow of a college in Cambridge, where he obtained considerable reputation. What was the effect of his widow's dedication to Cecil, is not known: it may be

be hoped that Ascham's works obtained for his family, after his decease, that support which he did not in his life very plenteously procure them.

Whether he was poor by his own fault, or the fault of others, cannot now be decided; but it is certain that many have been rich with less merit. His philological learning would have gained him honour in any country; and among us it may justly call for that reverence which all nations owe to those who first rouse them from ignorance, and kindle among them the light of literature. Of his manners nothing can be said but from his own testimony, and that of his contemporaries. Those who mention him allow him many virtues. His courtesy, benevolence, and liberality, are celebrated; and of his piety we have not only the testimony of his friends, but the evidence of his writings.

That his English works have been so long neglected, is a proof of the uncertainty of literary fame. He was scarcely known as an author in his own language till Mr. Upton published his *Schoolmaster* with learned notes. His other pieces were read only by those few who delight in obsolete books; but as they are now collected into one volume, with the addition of some letters never printed before, the publick has an opportunity of recompensing the injury, and allotting Ascham the reputation due to his knowledge and his eloquence.

LETTERS

BY

SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL. D.

SELECTED FROM

THE COLLECTION OF MRS. PIOZZI,

AND OTHERS.

LETTERS.

LETTER I. *To Mr.* JAMES ELPHINSTON.

DEAR SIR, Sept. 25th, 1750.

YOU have, as I find by every kind of evidence, lost an excellent mother; and I hope you will not think me incapable of partaking of your grief. I have a mother, now eighty-two years of age, whom, therefore, I must soon lose, unless it please God that she rather should mourn for me. I read the letters in which you relate your mother's death to Mrs. Strahan, and think I do myself honour, when I tell you, that I read them with tears; but tears are neither to *you*, nor to *me*, of any farther use, when once the tribute of nature has been paid. The business of life summons us away from useless grief, and calls us to the exercise of those virtues of which we are lamenting our deprivation.

The greatest benefit which one friend can confer upon another, is to guard, and excite, and elevate his virtues. This your mother will still perform, if you diligently preserve the memory of her life, and of her death: a life, so far as I can learn, useful, wise, and innocent; and a death resigned, peaceful, and

and holy. I cannot forbear to mention, that neither reason nor revelation denies you to hope, that you may increase her happiness by obeying her precepts; and that she may, in her present state, look with pleasure upon every act of virtue to which her instructions or example have contributed. Whether this be more than a pleasing dream, or a just opinion of separate spirits, is, indeed, of no great importance to us, when we consider ourselves as acting under the eye of God: yet, surely, there is something pleasing in the belief, that our separation from those, whom we love, is merely corporeal; and it may be a great incitement to virtuous friendship, if it can be made probable, that that union, which has received the divine approbation, shall continue to eternity.

There is one expedient, by which you may, in some degree, continue her presence. If you write down minutely what you remember of her from your earliest years, you will read it with great pleasure, and receive from it many hints of soothing recollection, when time shall remove her yet farther from you, and your grief shall be matured to veneration. To this, however painful for the present, I cannot but advise you, as to a source of comfort and satisfaction in the time to come; for all comfort and all satisfaction is sincerely wished you by,

DEAR SIR,

Your most obliged, most obedient,

And most humble servant,

SAM. JOHNSON.

LET-

LETTER II. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

MADAM, London, Aug. 13, 1765.

IF you have really so good an opinion of me as you express, it will not, be necessary to inform you how unwillingly I miss the opportunity of coming to Brighthelmstone in Mr. Thrale's company; or, since I cannot do what I wish first, how eagerly I shall catch the second degree of pleasure, by coming to you and him, as soon as I can dismiss my work from my hands.

I am afraid to make promises even to myself; but I hope that the week after the next will be the end of my present business. When business is done, what remains but pleasure? and where should pleasure be sought, but under Mrs. Thrale's influence?

Do not blame me for a delay by which I must suffer so much, and by which I suffer alone. If you cannot think I am good, pray think I am mending, and that in time I may deserve to be, dear Madam, your, &c.

LETTER III. *To the Same.*

MADAM, Lichfield, July 20, 1767.

THOUGH I have been away so much longer than I purposed or expected, I have found nothing that withdraws my affections from the friends whom I left behind, or which makes me less desirous of reposing at that place which your kindness and Mr. Thrale's allows me to call my *home.*

Miss

Miss Lucy * is more kind and civil than I expected, and has raised my esteem by many excellencies very noble and resplendent, though a little discoloured by hoary virginity. Every thing else recals to my remembrance years, in which I proposed what, I am afraid, I have not done, and promised myself pleasure which I have not found. But complaint can be of no use; and why then should I depress your hopes by my lamentations? I suppose it is the condition of humanity to design what never will be done, and to hope what never will be obtained. But among the vain hopes, let me not number the hope which I have, of being long, dear Madam, your, *&c.*

LETTER IV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

MADAM, Lichfield, August 14, 1769.

I SET out on Thursday morning, and found my companion, to whom I was very much a stranger, more agreeable than I expected. We went cheerfully forward, and passed the night at Coventry. We came in late, and went out early; and therefore I did not send for my cousin Tom; but I design to make him some amends for the omission.

Next day we came early to Lucy, who was, I believe, glad to see us. She had saved her best gooseberries upon the tree for me; and, as Steele says, *I was neither too proud nor too wise* to gather them. I have rambled a very little *inter fontes et flumina nota*, but I am not yet well. They have cut down

* Miss Lucy Porter, daughter to Dr. Johnson's wife by a former husband.

the

the trees in George Lane. Evelyn, in his book of Forest Trees, tells us of wicked men that cut down trees, and never prospered afterwards; yet nothing has deterred these audacious aldermen from violating the Hamadryads of George Lane. As an impartial traveller I must however tell, that in Stow-street, where I left a draw-well, I have found a pump; but the lading-well in this ill-fated George Lane lies shamefully neglected.

I am going to-day or to-morrow to Ashbourne; but I am at a loss how I shall get back in time to London. Here are only chance coaches, so that there is no certainty of a place. If I do not come, let it not hinder your journey. I can be but a few days behind you; and I will follow in the Brighthelmstone coach. But I hope to come.

I took care to tell Miss Porter, that I have got another Lucy. I hope she is well. Tell Mrs. Salusbury, that I beg her stay at Streatham, for little Lucy's sake. I am, &c.

LETTER V. *To the Same.*

MADAM, Lichfield, July 11, 1770.

SINCE my last letter, nothing extraordinary has happened. Rheumatism, which has been very troublesome, is grown better. I have not yet seen Dr. Taylor, and July runs fast away. I shall not have much time for him, if he delays much longer to come or send. Mr. Grene, the apothecary, has found a book, which tells who paid levies in our parish,

parish, and how much they paid, above an hundred years ago. Do you not think we study this book hard? Nothing is like going to the bottom of things. Many families that paid the parish-rates are now extinct, like the race of Hercules. *Pulvis et umbra sumus.* What is nearest us touches us most. The passions rise higher at domestic than at imperial tragedies. I am not wholly unaffected by the revolutions of Sadler-street; nor can forbear to mourn a little when old names vanish away, and new come into their place.

Do not imagine, Madam, that I wrote this letter for the sake of these philosophical meditations; for when I began it, I had neither Mr. Greene, nor his book, in my thoughts; but was resolved to write, and did not know what I had to send, but my respects to Mrs. Salusbury, and Mr. Thrale, and Harry, and the Misses. I am, dearest Madam, your, *&c.*

LETTER VI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Ashbourne, July 23, 1770.

THERE had not been so long an interval between my two last letters, but that when I came hither I did not at first understand the hours of the post.

I have seen the great bull; and very great he is. I have seen likewise his heir apparent, who promises to inherit all the bulk and all the virtues of his sire. I have seen the man who offered a hundred guineas

for

for the young bull, while he was yet little better than a calf. Matlock, I am afraid, I shall not see, but I purpose to see Dovedale; and after all this seeing, I hope to see you. I am, *&c.*

LETTER VII. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, Ashbourne, July 3, 1771.

LAST Saturday I came to Ashbourne; the dangers or the pleasures of the journey I have at present no disposition to recount; else might I paint the beauties of my native plains; might I tell of the "smiles of nature, and the charms of art:" else might I relate how I crossed the Staffordshire canal, one of the great efforts of human labour, and human contrivance; which, from the bridge on which I viewed it, passed away on either side, and loses itself in distant regions, uniting waters that nature had divided, and dividing lands which nature had united. I might tell how these reflections fermented in my mind till the chaise stopped at Ashbourne, at Ashbourne in the Peak. Let not the barren name of the Peak terrify you; I have never wanted strawberries and cream. The great bull has no disease but age. I hope in time to be like the great bull; and hope you will be like him too a hundred years hence. I am, *&c.*

LETTER VIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Ashbourne, July 10, 1771.

I AM obliged to my friend Harry, for his remembrance; but think it a little hard that I hear nothing from Miss.

There has been a man here to-day to take a farm. After some talk he went to see the bull, and said that he had seen a bigger. Do you think he is likely to get the farm?

Toujours strawberries and cream.

Dr. Taylor is much better, and my rheumatism is less painful. Let me hear in return as much good of you and of Mrs. Salusbury. You despise the Dog and Duck; things that are at hand are always slighted. I remember that Dr. Grevil, of Gloucester, sent for that water when his wife was in the same danger; but he lived near Malvern, and you live near the Dog and Duck. Thus, in difficult cases, we naturally trust most what we least know.

Why Bromefield, supposing that a lotion can do good, should despise laurel-water in comparison with his own receipt, I do not see; and see still less why he should laugh at that which Wall thinks efficacious. I am afraid philosophy will not warrant much hope in a lotion.

Be pleased to make my compliments from Mrs. Salusbury to Susy. I am, *&c.*

LETTER

LETTER IX. *To the Same.*

MADAM, October 31, 1772.

THOUGH I am just informed, that, by some accidental negligence, the letter which I wrote on Thursday was not given to the post, yet I cannot refuse myself the gratification of writing again to my mistress; not that I have any thing to tell, but that by showing how much I am employed upon you, I hope to keep you from forgetting me.

Doctor Taylor asked me this morning on what I was thinking? and I was thinking on Lucy. I hope Lucy is a good girl. But she cannot yet be so good as Queeney. I have got nothing yet for Queeney's cabinet.

I hope dear Mrs. Salusbury grows no worse. I wish any thing could be found that would make her better. You must remember her admonition, and bustle in the brewhouse. When I come, you may expect to have your hands full with all of us.

Our bulls and cows are all well; but we yet hate the man that had seen a bigger bull. Our deer have died; but many are left. Our waterfall at the garden makes a great roaring this wet weather.

And so no more at present from, Madam, your, &c.

LETTER X. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Nov. 23, 1772.

I AM sorry that none of your letters bring better news of the poor dear lady. I hope her pain is not great. To have a disease confessedly incurable and apparently mortal is a very heavy affliction; and it is still more grievous when pain is added to despair.

Every thing else in your letter pleased me very well, except that when I come I entreat I may not be flattered, as your letters flatter me. You have read of heroes and princes ruined by flattery, and I question if any of them had a flatterer so dangerous as you. Pray keep strictly to your character of governess.

I cannot yet get well; my nights are flatulent and unquiet, but my days are tolerably easy, and Taylor says that I look much better than when I came hither. You will see when I come, and I can take your word.

Our house affords no revolutions. The great bull is well. But I write not merely to think on you, for I do that without writing, but to keep you a little thinking on me. I perceive that I have taken a broken piece of paper, but that is not the greatest fault that you must forgive in, Madam, your, &c.

LETTER

LETTER XI. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, Nov. 27, 1772

IF you are so kind as to write to me on Saturday, the day on which you will receive this, I shall have it before I leave Ashbourne. I am to go to Litchfield on Wednesday, and purpose to find my way to London through Birmingham and Oxford.

I was yesterday at Chatsworth. It is a very fine house. I wish you had been with me to see it; for then, as we are apt to want matter of talk, we should have gained something new to talk on. They complimented me with playing the fountain, and opening the cascade. But I am of my friend's opinion, that when one has seen the ocean, cascades are but little things.

I am in hope of a letter to-day from you or Queeney, but the post has made some blunder, and the packet is not yet distributed. I wish it may bring me a little good of you all. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XII. *To the Same.*

MADAM, Tuesday, Jan. 26, 1773.

THE inequalities of human life have always employed the meditation of deep thinkers, and I cannot forbear to reflect on the difference between your condition and my own. You live upon mock-turtle, and stewed rumps of beef; I dined yesterday upon crumpets. You sit with parish officers, caressing and caressed, the idol of the table, and the wonder of the

the day. I pine in the solitude of sickness, not bad enough to be pitied, and not well enough to be endured. You sleep away the night, and laugh or scold away the day. I cough and grumble, and grumble and cough. Last night was very tedious, and this day makes no promises of much ease. However, I have this day put on my shoe, and hope that gout is gone. I shall have only the cough to contend with, and I doubt whether I shall get rid of that without change of place. I caught cold in the coach as I went away, and am disordered by very little things. Is it accident or age? I am, dearest Madam, &c.

LETTER XIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, March 17, 1773.

TO tell you that I am sorry both for the poor lady and for you is useless. I cannot help either of you. The weakness of mind is perhaps only a casual interruption or intermission of the attention, such as we all suffer when some weighty care or urgent calamity has possession of the mind. She will compose herself. She is unwilling to die, and the first conviction of approaching death raised great perturbation. I think she has but very lately thought death close at hand. She will compose herself to do that as well as she can, which must at last be done. May she not want the Divine assistance!

You, Madam, will have a great loss; a greater than is common in the loss of a parent. Fill your mind with hope of her happiness, and turn your thoughts

thoughts first to Him who gives and takes away, in whose presence the living and dead are standing together. Then remember, that when this mournful duty is paid, others yet remain of equal obligation, and, we may hope, of less painful performance. Grief is a species of idleness, and the necessity of attention to the present preserves us, by the merciful disposition of Providence, from being lacerated and devoured by sorrow for the past. You must think on your husband and your children, and do what this dear lady has done for you.

Not to come to town while the great struggle continues is undoubtedly well resolved. But do not harass yourself into danger; you owe the care of your health to all that love you, at least to all whom it is your duty to love. You cannot give such a mother too much, if you do not give her what belongs to another. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XIV. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, April 27, 1773.

HOPE is more pleasing than fear, but not less fallacious; you know, when you do not try to deceive yourself, that the disease which at last is to destroy, must be gradually growing worse, and that it is vain to wish for more than that the descent to death may be slow and easy. In this wish I join with you, and hope it will be granted. Dear, dear lady, whenever she is lost she will be missed, and whenever she is remembered she will be lamented. Is it a good or an evil to me that she now loves me? It is surely a good;

a good; for you will love me better, and we shall have a new principle of concord; and I shall be happier with honest sorrow, than with sullen indifference: and far happier still than with counterfeited sympathy.

I am reasoning upon a principle very far from certain, a confidence of survivance. You or I, or both, may be called into the presence of the Supreme Judge before her. I have lived a life of which I do not like the review. Surely I shall in time live better.

I sat down with an intention to write high compliments; but my thoughts have taken another course, and some other time must now serve to tell you with what other emotions, benevolence, and fidelity, I am, &c.

LETTER XV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

MADAM, May 17, 1773.

NEVER imagine that your letters are long; they are always too short for my curiosity. I do not know that I was ever content with a single perusal.

Of dear Mrs. Salusbury I never expect much better news than you send me; *de pis en pis* is the natural and certain course of her dreadful malady. I am content when it leaves her ease enough for the exercise of her mind.

Why should Mr. * * * * * suppose that what I took the liberty of suggesting was concerted with you? He does not know how much I revolve his affairs, and how honestly I desire his prosperity. I hope

hope he has let the hint take some hold of his mind.

Your declaration to Miss * * * * * is more general than my opinions allow. I think an unlimited promise of acting by the opinion of another so wrong, that nothing, or hardly any thing, can make it right. All unnecessary vows are folly, because they suppose a prescience of the future which has not been given us. They are, I think, a crime, because they resign that life to chance which God has given us to be regulated by reason; and superinduce a kind of fatality, from which it is the great privilege of our nature to be free. Unlimited obedience is due only to the Universal Father of Heaven and Earth. My parents may be mad and foolish; may be wicked and malicious; may be erroneously religious, or absurdly scrupulous. I am not bound to compliance with mandates either positive or negative, which either religion condemns, or reason rejects. There wanders about the world a wild notion, which extends over marriage more than over any other transaction. If Miss * * * * followed a trade, would it be said that she was bound in conscience to give or refuse credit at her father's choice? And is not marriage a thing in which she is more interested, and has therefore more right of choice? When I may suffer for my own crimes, when I may be sued for my own debts, I may judge by parity of reason for my own happiness. The parent's moral right can arise only from his kindness, and his civil right only from his money.

Conscience cannot dictate obedience to the wicked, or compliance with the foolish; and of interest mere prudence is the judge.

If

If the daughter is bound without a promise, she promises nothing; and if she is not bound, she promises too much.

What is meant by tying up money in trade I do not understand. No money is so little tied as that which is employed in trade. Mr. * * * * perhaps only means, that in consideration of money to be advanced, he will oblige his son to be a trader. This is reasonable enough. Upon ten thousand pounds diligently occupied, they may live in great plenty and splendour, without the mischiefs of idleness.

I can write a long letter as well as my mistress; and shall be glad that my long letters may be as welcome as hers.

My nights are grown again very uneasy and troublesome. I know not that the country will mend them; but I hope your company will mend my days. Though I cannot now expect much attention, and would not wish for more than can be spared from the poor dear lady, yet I shall see you and hear you every now and then; and to see and hear you, is always to hear wit, and to see virtue.

I shall, I hope, see you to-morrow, and a little on the two next days; and with that little I must for the present try to be contented. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XVI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, August 12, 1773.

We left London on Friday the sixth, not very early, and travelled without any memorable accident through a country which I had seen before. In the evening I was not well, and was forced to stop at Stilton, one stage short of Stamford, where we intended to have lodged.

On the 7th we passed through Stamford and Grantham, and dined at Newark, where I had only time to observe that the market-place was uncommonly spacious and neat. In London we should call it a square, though the sides were neither straight nor parallel. We came, at night, to Doncaster, and went to church in the morning, where Chambers found the monument of Robert of Doncaster, who says on his stone something like this:—What I gave, that I have; what I spent, that I had; what I left, that I lost.—So saith Robert of Doncaster, who reigned in the world sixty-seven years, and all that time lived not one. Here we were invited to dinner, and therefore made no great haste away.

We reached York, however, that night; I was much disordered with old complaints. Next morning we saw the Minster, an edifice of loftiness and elegance equal to the highest hopes of architecture. I remember nothing but the dome of St. Paul's that can be compared with the middle walk. The Chapter-house is a circular building, very stately, but I think excelled by the Chapter-house of Lincoln.

I then

I then went to see the ruins of the Abbey, which are almost vanished, and I remember nothing of them distinct.

The next visit was to the jail, which they call the castle; a fabrick built lately, such is terrestrial mutability, out of the materials of the ruined Abbey. The under jailor was very officious to shew his fetters, in which there was no contrivance. The head jailor came in, and seeing me look I suppose fatigued, offered me wine, and when I went away would not suffer his servant to take money. The jail is accounted the best in the kingdom, and you find the jailor deserving of his dignity.

We dined at York, and went on to Northallerton, a place of which I know nothing, but that it afforded us a lodging on Monday night, and about two hundred and seventy years ago gave birth to Roger Ascham.

Next morning we changed our horses at Darlington, where Mr. Cornelius Harrison, a cousin-german of mine, was perpetual curate. He was the only one of my relations who ever rose in fortune above penury, or in character above neglect.

The church is built crosswise, with a fine spire, and might invite a traveller to survey it; but I perhaps wanted vigour, and thought I wanted time.

The next stage brought us to Durham, a place of which Mr. Thrale bade me take particular notice. The Bishop's palace has the appearance of an old feudal castle, built upon an eminence, and looking down upon the river, upon which was formerly thrown a draw-bridge, as I suppose to be raised at night, lest the Scots should pass it.

The

The cathedral has a massiness and solidity such as I have seen in no other place; it rather awes than pleases, as it strikes with a kind of gigantick dignity, and aspires to no other praise than that of rocky solidity and indeterminate duration. I had none of my friends resident, and therefore saw but little. The library is mean and scanty.

At Durham, beside all expectation, I met an old friend: Miss Fordyce is married there to a physician. We met, I think, with honest kindness on both sides. I thought her much decayed, and having since heard that the banker had involved her husband in his extensive ruin, I cannot forbear to think that I saw in her withered features more impression of sorrow than of time—

Qua terra patet, sera regnat Erinnys.

He that wanders about the world sees new forms of human misery, and if he chances to meet an old friend, meets a face darkened with troubles.

On Tuesday night we came hither; yesterday I took some care of myself, and to-day I am *quite polite*. I have been taking a view of all that could be shewn me, and find that all very near to nothing. You have often heard me complain of finding myself disappointed by books of travels; I am afraid travel itself will end likewise in disappointment. One town, one country, is very like another: civilized nations have the same customs, and barbarous nations have the same nature: there are indeed minute discriminations both of places and of manners, which perhaps are not wanting of curiosity, but which a traveller seldom stays long enough to investigate and compare.

The

The dull utterly neglect them; the acute see a little, and supply the rest with fancy and conjecture.

I shall set out again to-morrow; but I shall not, I am afraid, see Alnwick, for Dr. Percy is not there. I hope to lodge to-morrow night at Berwick, and the next at Edinburgh, where I shall direct Mr. Drummond, bookseller at Ossian's head, to take care of my letters.

I hope the little dears are all well, and that my dear master and mistress may go somewhither; but wherever you go do not forget, Madam, your most humble servant.

I am pretty well.

August 15.

Thus far I had written at Newcastle. I forgot to send it. I am now at Edinburgh; and have been this day running about. I run pretty well.

LETTER XVII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Edinburgh, August 17, 1773.

ON the 13th, I left Newcastle, and in the afternoon came to Alnwick, where we were treated with great civility by the Duke: I went through the apartments, walked on the wall, and climbed the towers. That night we lay at Belford, and on the next night came to Edinburgh. On Sunday (15th) I went to the English chapel. After dinner Dr. Robertson came in, and promised to shew me the place. On Monday I saw their public buildings: the cathedral, which I told Robertson I wished to

see

see because it had once been a church, the courts of justice, the parliament-house, the advocates' library, the repository of records, the college and its library, and the palace, particularly the old tower where the king of Scotland seized David Rizzio in the queen's presence. Most of their buildings are very mean; and the whole town bears some resemblance to the old part of Birmingham.

Boswell has very handsome and spacious rooms; level with the ground on one side of the house, and on the other four stories high.

At dinner on Monday were the Duchess of Douglas, an old lady, who talks broad Scotch with a paralytick voice, and is scarcely understood by her own countrymen; the Lord Chief Baron, Sir Adolphus Oughton, and many more. At supper there was such a conflux of company that I could scarcely support the tumult. I have never been well in the whole journey, and am very easily disordered.

This morning I saw at breakfast Dr. Blacklock, the blind poet, who does not remember to have seen light, and is read to, by a poor scholar, in Latin, Greek, and French. He was originally a poor scholar himself. I looked on him with reverence. To-morrow our journey begins; I know not when I shall write again. I am but poorly. I am, &c.

LETTER XVIII. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, Bamff, August 25, 1773.

IT has so happened that though I am perpetually thinking on you, I could seldom find opportunity to

to write; I have in fourteen days sent only one letter; you must consider the fatigues of travel, and the difficulties encountered in a strange country.

August 18th, I passed, with Boswell, the Frith of Forth, and began our journey; in the passage we observed an island, which I persuaded my companions to survey. We found it a rock somewhat troublesome to climb, about a mile long, and half a mile broad; in the middle were the ruins of an old fort, which had on one of the stones—Maria Re. 1564. It had been only a blockhouse one story high. I measured two apartments, of which the walls were entire, and found them twenty-seven feet long, and twenty-three broad. The rock had some grass and many thistles, both cows and sheep were grazing. There was a spring of water. The name is Inchkeith. Look on your maps. This visit took about an hour. We pleased ourselves with being in a country all our own, and then went back to the boat, and landed at Kinghorn, a mean town; and travelling through Kirkaldie, a very long town meanly built, and Cowpar, which I could not see because it was night, we came late to St. Andrew's, the most ancient of the Scotch universities, and once the see of the Primate of Scotland. The inn was full; but lodgings were provided for us at the house of the professor of rhetorick, a man of elegant manners, who showed us, in the morning, the poor remains of a stately cathedral, demolished in Knox's reformation, and now only to be imagined by tracing its foundation, and contemplating the little ruins that are left. Here was once a religious house. Two of the vaults or cellars of the subprior are even yet entire. In one of them

them lives an old woman, who claims an hereditary residence in it, boasting that her husband was the sixth tenant of this gloomy mansion, in a lineal descent, and claims by her marriage with this lord of the cavern an alliance with the Bruces. Mr. Boswell staid a while to interrogate her, because he understood her language; she told him, that she and her cat lived together; that she had two sons somewhere, who might perhaps be dead; that when there were quality in the town notice was taken of her, and that now she was neglected, but did not trouble them. Her habitation contained all that she had; her turf for fire was laid in one place, and her balls of coal dust in another, but her bed seemed to be clean. Boswell asked her, if she never heard any noises; but she could tell him of nothing supernatural, though she often wandered in the night among the graves and ruins, only she had sometimes notice by dreams of the death of her relations. We then viewed the remains of a castle on the margin of the sea, in which the archbishops resided, and in which Cardinal Beatoun was killed.

The professors who happened to be resident in the vacation made a publick dinner, and treated us very kindly and respectfully. They shewed us their colleges, in one of which there is a library that, for luminousness and elegance, may vie at least with the new edifice at Streatham. But learning seems not to prosper among them; one of their colleges has been lately alienated, and one of their churches lately deserted. An experiment was made of planting a shrubbery in the church, but it did not thrive.

Why the place should thus fall to decay, I know not; for education, such as is here to be had, is sufficiently cheap. The term, or, as they call it, their session, lasts seven months in the year, which the students of the highest rank and greatest expence may pass here for twenty pounds, in which are included board, lodging, books, and the continual instruction of three professors.

20th, We left St. Andrew's, well satisfied with our reception, and, crossing the Frith of Tay, came to Dundee, a dirty, despicable town. We passed afterwards through Aberbrothick, famous once for an abbey, of which there are only a few fragments left; but those fragments testify that the fabrick was once of great extent, and of stupendous magnificence. Two of the towers are yet standing, though shattered; into one of them Boswell climbed, but found the stairs broken: the way into the other we did not see, and had not time to search; I believe it might be ascended, but the top, I think, is open.

We lay at Montrose, a neat place, with a spacious area for the market, and an elegant town-house.

21st, We travelled towards Aberdeen, another university, and in the way dined at Lord Monboddo's, the Scotch Judge, who has lately written a strange book about the origin of language, in which he traces monkeys up to men, and says that in some countries the human species have tails like other beasts. He enquired for these long-tailed men of Banks, and was not well pleased that they had not been found in all his peregrination. He talked nothing of this to me, and I hope we parted friends; for we agreed pretty well, only we disputed in adjusting

ing the claims of merit between a shopkeeper of London, and a savage of the American wildernesses. Our opinions were, I think, maintained on both sides without full conviction: Monboddo declared boldly for the savage, and I, perhaps for that reason, sided with the citizen.

We came late to Aberdeen, where I found my dear mistress's letter, and learned that all our little people were happily recovered of the measles. Every part of your letter was pleasing.

There are two cities of the name of Aberdeen: the old town, built about a mile inland, once the see of a bishop, which contains the King's College, and the remains of the cathedral, and the new town, which stands, for the sake of trade, upon a frith or arm of the sea, so that ships rest against the quay.

The two cities have their separate magistrates, and the two colleges are in effect two universities, which confer degrees independently of each other.

New Aberdeen is a large town, built almost wholly of that granite which is used for the new pavement in London, which, hard as it is, they square with very little difficulty. Here I first saw the women in plaids. The plaid makes at once a hood and cloak, without cutting or sewing, merely by the manner of drawing the opposite sides over the shoulders. The maids at the inns run over the house barefoot; and children, not dressed in rags, go without shoes or stockings. Shoes are indeed not yet in universal use; they came late into this country. One of the professors told us, as we were mentioning a fort built by Cromwell, that the country owed much of its present industry to Cromwell's soldiers. They

taught us, said he, to raise cabbage and make shoes. How they lived without shoes may yet be seen; but in the passage through villages, it seems to him that surveys their gardens, that when they had not cabbage they had nothing.

Education is here of the same price as at St. Andrew's, only the session is but from the 1st of November to the 1st of April. The academical buildings seem rather to advance than decline. They shewed their libraries, which were not very splendid, but some manuscripts were so exquisitely penned that I wished my dear mistress to have seen them. I had an unexpected pleasure, by finding an old acquaintance now professor of physick in the King's College: we were on both sides glad of the interview, having not seen nor perhaps thought on one another for many years; but we had no emulation, nor had either of us risen to the other's envy, and our old kindness was easily renewed. I hope we shall never try the effect of so long an absence, and that I shall always be, Madam, your, *&c.*

LETTER XIX. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Inverness, August 28, 1773.

AUGUST 23d, I had the honour of attending the Lord Provost of Aberdeen, and was presented with the freedom of the city, not in a gold box, but in good Latin. Let me pay Scotland one just praise! there was no officer gaping for a fee; this could have been said of no city on the English side of the Tweed. I wore my patent of freedom *pro more* in my

my hat, from the new town to the old, about a mile. I then dined with my friend the professor of physick at his house, and saw the King's College. Boswell was very angry that the Aberdeen professors would not talk. When I was at the English church in Aberdeen, I happened to be espied by Lady Di. Middleton, whom I had sometime seen in London; she told what she had seen to Mr. Boyd, Lord Errol's brother, who wrote us an invitation to Lord Errol's house, called Slane's Castle. We went thither on the next day (24th of August), and found a house, not old, except but one tower, built upon the margin of the sea upon a rock, scarce accessible from the sea; at one corner a tower makes a perpendicular continuation of the lateral surface of the rock, so that it is impracticable to walk round; the house inclosed a square court, and on all sides within the court is a piazza or gallery two stories high. We came in as we were invited to dinner, and after dinner offered to go; but Lady Errol sent us word by Mr. Boyd, that if we went before Lord Errol came home we must never be forgiven, and ordered out the coach to shew us two curiosities. We were first conducted by Mr. Boyd, to Dunbuys, or the yellow rock. Dunbuys is a rock consisting of two protuberances, each perhaps one hundred yards round, joined together by a narrow neck, and separated from the land by a very narrow channel or gully. These rocks are the haunts of sea-fowl, whose clang, though this is not their season, we heard at a distance. The eggs and the young are gathered here in great numbers at the time of breeding. There is a bird here called a coote, which, though not much bigger than a duck,

a duck, lays a larger egg than a goose. We went then to see the Buller or Boulloir of Buchan: Buchan is the name of the district, and the Buller is a small creek or gulph into which the sea flows through an arch of the rock. We walked round it, and saw it black at a great depth. It has its name from the violent ebullition of the water, when high winds or high tides drive it up the arch into the bason. Walking a little farther I spied some boats, and told my companions that we would go into the Buller and examine it. There was no danger; all was calm; we went through the arch, and found ourselves in a narrow gulf surrounded by craggy rocks, of height not stupendous, but to a Mediterranean visitor uncommon. On each side was a cave, of which the fishermen knew not the extent, in which smugglers hide their goods, and sometimes parties of pleasure take a dinner. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XX. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Skie, Sept. 6, 1773.

I AM now looking on the sea from a House of Sir Alexander Macdonald in the isle of Skie. Little did I once think of seeing this region of obscurity, and little did you once expect a salutation from this verge of European life. I have now the pleasure of going where nobody goes, and seeing what nobody sees. Our design is to visit several of the smaller islands, and then pass over to the south west of Scotland.

I re-

I returned from the sight of Buller's Buchan to Lord Errol's, and, having seen his library, had for a time only to look upon the sea, which rolled between us and Norway. Next morning, August 25th, we continued our journey through a country not uncultivated, but so denuded of its woods, that in all this journey I had not travelled an hundred yards between hedges, or seen five trees fit for the carpenter. A few small plantations may be found, but I believe scarcely any thirty years old; at least, they are all posterior to the Union. This day we dined with a country gentleman, who has in his grounds the remains of a Druid's temple, which, when it is complete, is nothing more than a circle or double circle of stones, placed at equal distances, with a flat stone, perhaps an altar, at a certain point, and a stone taller than the rest at the opposite point. The tall stone is erected I think at the south. Of these circles there are many in all the unfrequented parts of the island. The inhabitants of these parts respect them as memorials of the sculpture of some illustrious person. Here I saw a few trees. We lay at Bamff.

August 26th, We dined at Elgin, where we saw the ruins of a noble cathedral; the chapter-house is yet standing. A great part of Elgin is built with small piazzas to the lower story. We went on to Foris, over the heath where Macbeth met the witches, but had no adventure; only in the way we saw for the first time some houses with fruit-trees about them. The improvements of the Scotch are for immediate profit, they do not yet think it quite worth their while

while to plant what will not produce something to be eaten or sold in a very little time. We rested at Foris.

A very great proportion of the people are barefoot; shoes are not yet considered as necessaries of life. It is still the custom to send out the sons of Gentlemen without them into the streets and ways. There are more beggars than I have ever seen in England: they beg, if not silently, yet very modestly.

Next day we came to Nairn, a miserable town, but a royal burgh, of which the chief annual magistrate is styled Lord Provost. In the neighbourhood we saw the castle of the old Thane of Cawdor. There is one ancient tower with its battlements and winding stairs yet remaining; the rest of the house is, though not modern, of later erection.

On the 28th we went to Fort George, which is accounted the most regular fortification in the island. The major of artillery walked with us round the walls, and shewed us the principles upon which every part was constructed, and the way in which it could be defended. We dined with the governor Sir Eyre Coote and his officers. It was a very pleasant and instructive day, but nothing puts my honoured mistress out of my mind.

At night we came to Inverness, the last considerable town in the North, where we staid all the next day, for it was Sunday, and saw the ruins of what is called Macbeth's castle. It never was a large house, but was strongly situated. From Inverness we were to travel on horseback.

August 30th, we set out with four horses. We had two Highlanders to run by us, who were active, officious,

officious, civil, and hardy. Our journey was for many miles along a military way made upon the banks of Lough Ness, a water about eighteen miles long, but not, I think, half a mile broad. Our horses were not bad, and the way was very pleasant; the rock out of which the road was cut was covered with birch trees, fern, and heath. The lake below was beating its bank by a gentle wind, and the rocks beyond the water on the right stood sometimes horrid and wild, and sometimes opened into a kind of bay, in which there was a spot of cultivated ground yellow with corn. In one part of the way we had trees on both sides for perhaps half a mile.—Such a length of shade perhaps Scotland cannot shew in any other place.

You are not to suppose that here are to be any more towns or inns. We came to a cottage which they call the General's Hut, where we alighted to dine, and had eggs and bacon, and mutton, with wine, rum, and whiskey. I had water.

At a bridge over the river, which runs into the Ness, the rocks rise on three sides, with a direction almost perpendicular, to a great height; they are in part covered with trees, and exhibit a kind of dreadful magnificence;—standing like the barriers of nature placed to keep different orders of being in perpetual separation. Near this bridge is the Fall of Fiers, a famous cataract, of which, by clambering over the rocks, we obtained a view. The water was low, and therefore we had only the pleasure of knowing that rain would make it at once pleasing and formidable; there will then be a mighty flood, foaming along a rocky channel, frequently obstructed by protuberances

tuberances and exasperated by reverberation, at last precipitated with a sudden descent, and lost in the depth of a gloomy chasm.

We came somewhat late to Fort Augustus, where the lieutenant governor met us beyond the gates, and apologised that at that hour he could not, by the rules of a garrison, admit us otherwise than at a narrow door which only one can enter at a time. We were well entertained and well lodged, and next morning, after having viewed the fort, we pursued our journey.

Our way now lay over the mountains, which are not to be passed by climbing them directly, but by traversing; so that as we went forward we saw our baggage following us below in a direction exactly contrary. There is in these ways much labour but little danger, and perhaps other places of which very terrifick representations are made are not in themselves more formidable. These roads have all been made by hewing the rock away with pickaxes, or bursting it with gunpowder. The stones so separated are often piled loose as a wall by the way-side. We saw an inscription importing the year in which one of the regiments made two thousand yards of the road eastward.

After tedious travel of some hours we came to what I believe we must call a village, a place where there were three huts built of turf; at one of which we were to have our dinner and our bed, for we could not reach any better place that night. This place is called Enock in Glenmorrison. The house in which we lodged was distinguished by a chimney, the rest had only a hole for the smoke. Here we had eggs,

and

and mutton, and a chicken and a sausage, and rum. In the afternoon tea was made by a very decent girl in a printed linen; she engaged me so much, that I made her a present of Cocker's arithmetick. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Skie, Sept. 14, 1773.

THE post, which comes but once a week into these parts, is so soon to go that I have not time to go on where I left off in my last letter. I have been several days in the island of Raarsa, and am now again in the isle of Skie, but at the other end of it.

Skie is almost equally divided between the two great families of Macdonald and Macleod, other proprietors having only small districts. The two great lords do not know within twenty square miles the contents of their own territories.

——— kept up but ill the reputation of Highland hospitality; we are now with Macleod, quite at the other end of the island, where there is a fine young gentleman and fine ladies. The ladies are studying Erse. I have a cold, and am miserably deaf, and am troublesome to Lady Macleod; I force her to speak loud, but she will seldom speak loud enough.

Raarsa is an island about fifteen miles long and two broad, under the dominion of one gentleman, who has three sons and ten daughters; the eldest is the beauty of this part of the world, and has been polished at Edinburgh: they sing and dance, and without expence, have upon their table most of what

sea,

sea, air, or earth can afford. I intended to have written about Raarsa, but the post will not wait longer than while I send my compliments to my dear master and little mistresses. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Skie, Sept. 21, 1773.

I AM so vexed at the necessity of sending yesterday so short a letter, that I purpose to get a long letter beforehand by writing something every day, which I may the more easily do, as a cold makes me now too deaf to take the usual pleasure in conversation. Lady Macleod is very good to me; and the place at which we now are is equal, in strength of situation, in the wildness of the adjacent country, and in the plenty and elegance of the domestick entertainment, to a castle in Gothick romances. The sea, with a little island, is before us; cascades play within view. Close to the house is the formidable skeleton of an old castle, probably Danish, and the whole mass of building stands upon a protuberance of rock, inaccessible till of late but by a pair of stairs on the sea side, and secure in ancient times against any enemy that was likely to invade the kingdom of Skie.

Macleod has offered me an island; if it were not too far off, I should hardly refuse it: my island would be pleasanter than Brighthelmstone, if you and my master could come to it; but I cannot think it pleasant to live quite alone.

Oblitusque meorum, obliviscendus et illis.

That

That I should be elated by the dominion of an island to forgetfulness of my friends at Streatham I cannot believe, and I hope never to deserve that they should be willing to forget me.

It has happened that I have been often recognised in my journey where I did not expect it. At Aberdeen I found one of my acquaintance professor of physick; turning aside to dine with a country gentleman, I was owned at table by one who had seen me at a philosophical lecture; at Macdonald's I was claimed by a naturalist, who wanders about the islands to pick up curiosities; and I had once in London attracted the notice of Lady Macleod. I will now go on with my account.

The Highland girl made tea, and looked and talked not inelegantly; her father was by no means an ignorant or a weak man; there were books in the cottage, among which were some volumes of Prideaux's Connection: this man's conversation we were glad of while we staid. He had been *out*, as they call it, in forty-five, and still retained his old opinions. He was going to America, because his rent was raised beyond what he thought himself able to pay.

At night our beds were made, but we had some difficulty in persuading ourselves to lie down in them, though we had put on our own sheets; at last we ventured, and I slept very soundly in the vale of Glenmorrison, amidst the rocks and mountains. Next morning our landlord liked us so well, that he walked some miles with us for our company, through a country so wild and barren that the proprietor does not, with all his pressure upon his tenants, raise more than

than four hundred pounds a year for near one hundred square miles, or sixty thousand acres. He let us know that he had forty head of black cattle, an hundred goats, and an hundred sheep, upon a farm that he remembered let at five pounds a year, but for which he now paid twenty. He told us some stories of their march into England. At last he left us, and we went forward, winding among mountains, sometimes green and sometimes naked, commonly so steep as not easily to be climbed by the greatest vigour and activity: our way was often crossed by little rivulets, and we were entertained with small streams trickling from the rocks, which after heavy rains must be tremendous torrents.

About noon we came to a small glen, so they call a valley, which compared with other places appeared rich and fertile; here our guides desired us to stop, that the horses might graze, for the journey was very laborious, and no more grass would be found. We made no difficulty of compliance, and I sat down to take notes on a green bank, with a small stream running at my feet, in the midst of savage solitude, with mountains before me, and on either hand covered with heath. I looked around me, and wondered that I was not more affected, but the mind is not at all times equally ready to be put in motion; if my mistress and master and Queeney had been there, we should have produced some reflections among us, either poetical or philosophical, for though *solitude be the nurse of woe*, conversation is often the parent of remarks and discoveries.

In about an hour we remounted, and pursued our journey. The lake by which we had travelled for some time

time ended in a river, which we passed by a bridge, and came to another glen, with a collection of huts, called Auknashealds; the huts were generally built of clods of earth, held together by the intertexture of vegetable fibres, of which earth there are great levels in Scotland, which they call mosses. Moss in Scotland is bog in Ireland, and moss-trooper is bog-trotter; there was, however, one hut built of loose stones, piled up with great thickness into a strong though not solid wall. From this house we obtained some great pails of milk, and having brought bread with us, we were liberally regaled. The inhabitants, a very coarse tribe, ignorant of any language but Erse, gathered so fast about us, that if we had not had Highlanders with us, they might have caused more alarm than pleasure; they are called the Clan of Macrae.

We had been told that nothing gratified the Highlanders so much as snuff and tobacco, and had accordingly stored ourselves with both at Fort Augustus. Boswell opened his treasure, and gave them each a piece of tobacco roll. We had more bread than we could eat for the present, and were more liberal than provident. Boswell cut it in slices, and gave them an opportunity of tasting wheaten bread for the first time. I then got some halfpence for a shilling, and made up the deficiencies of Boswell's distribution, who had given some money among the children. We then directed that the mistress of the stone-house should be asked what we must pay her: she, who perhaps had never before sold any thing but cattle, knew not, I believe, well what to ask, and referred herself to us: we obliged her to make some demand,

and

and one of the Highlanders settled the account with her at a shilling. One of the men advised her, with the cunning that clowns never can be without, to ask more; but she said that a shilling was enough. We gave her half a crown, and she offered part of it again. The Macraes were so well pleased with our behaviour, that they declared it the best day they had seen since the time of the old Laird of Macleod, who, I suppose, like us, stopped in their valley, as he was travelling to Skie.

We were mentioning this view of the Highlander's life at Macdonald's, and mentioning the Macraes with some degree of pity, when a Highland lady informed us that we might spare our tenderness, for she doubted not but the woman who supplied us with milk was mistress of thirteen or fourteen milch cows.

I cannot forbear to interrupt my narrative. Boswell, with some of his troublesome kindness, has informed this family, and reminded me, that the 18th of September is my birth-day. The return of my birth-day, if I remember it, fills me with thoughts which it seems to be the general care of humanity to escape. I can now look back upon three score and four years, in which little has been done, and little has been enjoyed; a life diversified by misery, spent part in the sluggishness of penury, and part under the violence of pain, in gloomy discontent or importunate distress. But perhaps I am better than I should have been if I had been less afflicted. With this I will try to be content.

In proportion as there is less pleasure in retrospective considerations, the mind is more disposed to wander forward into futurity; but at sixty-four what promises,

promises, however liberal, of imaginary good can futurity venture to make? yet something will be always promised, and some promises will be always credited. I am hoping and I am praying that I may live better in the time to come, whether long or short, than I have yet lived, and in the solace of that hope endeavour to repose. Dear Queeney's day is next: I hope she at sixty-four will have less to regret.

I will now complain no more, but tell my mistress of my travels.

After we left the Macraes, we travelled on through a country like that which we passed in the morning. The Highlands are very uniform, for there is little variety in universal barrenness; the rocks, however, are not all naked, for some have grass on their sides, and birches and alders on their tops, and in the vallies are often broad and clear streams, which have little depth, and commonly run very quick; the channels are made by the violence of the wintry floods; the quickness of the stream is in proportion to the declivity of the descent, and the breadth of the channel makes the water shallow in a dry season.

There are red deer and roebucks in the mountains, but we found only goats in the road, and had very little entertainment as we travelled either for the eye or ear. There are, I fancy, no singing birds in the Highlands.

Towards night we came to a very formidable hill called Rattiken, which we climbed with more difficulty than we had yet experienced, and at last came to Glanelg, a place on the sea-side opposite to Skie. We were by this time weary and disgusted, nor was

our humour much mended by our inn, which, though it was built of lime and slate, the Highlander's description of a house which he thinks magnificent, had neither wine, bread, eggs, nor any thing that we could eat or drink. When we were taken up stairs, a dirty fellow bounced out of the bed where one of us was to lie. Boswell blustered, but nothing could be got. At last a gentleman in the neighbourhood, who heard of our arrival, sent us rum and white sugar. Boswell was now provided for in part and the landlord prepared some mutton chops, which we could not eat, and killed two hens, of which Boswell made his servant broil a limb, with what effect I know not. We had a lemon and a piece of bread, which supplied me with my supper. When the repast was ended, we began to deliberate upon bed; Mrs. Boswell had warned us that we should *catch something*, and had given us *sheets* for our *security*, for ——— and ———, she said, came back from Skie, so scratching themselves. I thought sheets a slender defence against the confederacy with which we were threatened, and by this time our Highlanders had found a place where they could get some hay: I ordered hay to be laid thick upon the bed, and slept upon it in my great coat: Boswell laid sheets upon his bed, and reposed in linen like a gentleman. The horses were turned out to grass, with a man to watch them. The hill Rattiken and the inn at Glanelg were the only things of which we, or travellers yet more delicate, could find any pretensions to complain.

Sept. 2d, I rose rustling from the hay, and went to tea, which I forget whether we found or brought.

We

We saw the isle of Skie before us, darkening the horizon with its rocky coast. A boat was procured, and we launched into one of the straits of the Atlantick ocean. We had a passage of about twelve miles to the point where ——— resided, having come from his seat in the middle of the island, to a small house on the shore, as we believe, that he might with less reproach entertain us meanly. If he aspired to meanness, his retrograde ambition was completely gratified, but he did not succeed equally in escaping reproach. He had no cook, nor I suppose much provision, nor had the Lady the common decencies of her tea-table; we picked up our sugar with our fingers. Boswell was very angry, and reproached him with his improper parsimony; I did not much reflect upon the conduct of a man with whom I was not likely to converse as long at any other time.

You will now expect that I should give you some account of the isle of Skie, of which, though I have been twelve days upon it, I have little to say. It is an island perhaps fifty miles long, so much indented by inlets of the sea, that there is no part of it removed from the water more than six miles. No part that I have seen is plain; you are always climbing or descending, and every step is upon rock or mire. A walk upon ploughed ground in England is a dance upon carpets compared to the toilsome drudgery of wandering in Skie. There is neither town nor village in the island, nor have I seen any house but Macleod's, that is not much below your habitation at Brightheimstone. In the mountains there are stags and roebucks, but no hares, and few rabbits; nor have I seen any thing that interested me as a

zoologist, except an otter, bigger than I thought an otter could have been.

You are perhaps imagining that I am withdrawing from the gay and the busy world into regions of peace and pastoral felicity, and am enjoying the reliques of the golden age; that I am surveying nature's magnificence from a mountain, or remarking her minuter beauties on the flowery bank of a winding rivulet; that I am invigorating myself in the sunshine, or delighting my imagination with being hidden from the invasion of human evils and human passions, in the darkness of a thicket; that I am busy in gathering shells and pebbles on the shore, or contemplative on a rock, from which I look upon the water, and consider how many waves are rolling between me and Streatham.

The use of travelling is to regulate imagination by reality, and instead of thinking how things may be, to see them as they are. Here are mountains which I should once have climbed; but to climb steeps is now very laborious, and to descend them dangerous; and I am now content with knowing, that by scrambling up a rock, I shall only see other rocks, and a wider circuit of barren desolation. Of streams, we have here a sufficient number; but they murmur not upon pebbles, but upon rocks. Of flowers, if Chloris herself were here, I could present her only with the bloom of heath. Of lawns and thickets, he must read that would know them, for here is little sun and no shade. On the sea I look from my window, but am not much tempted to the shore; for since I came to this island, almost every breath of air has been a storm, and what is worse, a storm with all its severity,

but

but without its magnificence, for the sea is here so broken into channels that there is not a sufficient volume of water either for lofty surges or a loud roar.

On Sept. 6th, we left ——— to visit Raarsa, the island which I have already mentioned. We were to cross part of Skie on horseback; a mode of travelling very uncomfortable, for the road is so narrow, where any road can be found, that only one can go, and so craggy that the attention can never be remitted; it allows, therefore, neither the gaiety of conversation, nor the laxity of solitude: nor has it in itself the amusement of much variety, as it affords only all the possible transpositions of bog, rock, and rivulet. Twelve miles, by computation, make a reasonable journey for a day.

At night we came to a tenant's house, of the first rank of tenants, where we were entertained better than at the landlord's. There were books both English and Latin. Company gathered about us, and we heard some talk of the second sight, and some talk of the events of forty-five; a year which will not soon be forgotten among the islanders. The next day we were confined by a storm. The company, I think, increased, and our entertainment was not only hospitable but elegant. At night, a minister's sister, in very fine brocade, sung Erse songs; I wished to know the meaning; but the Highlanders are not much used to scholastick questions, and no translations could be obtained.

Next day, Sept. 8th, the weather allowed us to depart; a good boat was provided us, and we went to Raarsa under the conduct of Mr. Malcolm Macleod, a gentleman who conducted Prince Charles through the

the mountains in his distresses. The Prince, he says, was more active than himself; they were, at least, one night without any shelter.

The wind blew enough to give the boat a kind of dancing agitation, and in about three or four hours we arrived at Raarsa, where we were met by the Laird and his friends upon the shore. Raarsa, for such is his title, is master of two islands; upon the smaller of which, called Rona, he has only flocks and herds. Rona gives title to his eldest son. The money which he raises annually by rent from all his dominions, which contain at least fifty thousand acres, is not believed to exceed two hundred and fifty pounds: but as he keeps a large farm in his own hands, he sells every year great numbers of cattle, which add to his revenue, and his table is furnished from the farm and from the sea with very little expence, except for those things this country does not produce, and of those he is very liberal. The wine circulates vigorously; and the tea, chocolate, and coffee, however they are got, are always at hand. I am, *&c.*

We are this morning trying to get out of Skie.

LETTER XXIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Skie, Sept. 24, 1773.

I AM still in Skie. Do you remember the song?

Every island is a prison,
Strongly guarded by the sea.

We

We have at one time no boat, and at another may have too much wind; but of our reception here we have no reason to complain. We are now with Colonel Macleod, in a more pleasant place than I thought Skie could afford. Now to the narrative.

We were received at Raarsa on the sea-side, and after clambering with some difficulty over the rocks, a labour which the traveller, wherever he reposes himself on land, must in these islands be contented to endure; we were introduced into the house, which one of the company called the court of Raarsa, with politeness which not the Court of Versailles could have thought defective. The house is not large, though we were told in our passage that it had eleven fine rooms, nor magnificently furnished, but our utensil swere most commonly silver. We went up into a dining-room, about as large as your blue room, where we had something given us to eat, and tea and coffee.

Raarsa himself is a man of no inelegant appearance, and of manners uncommonly refined. Lady Raarsa makes no very sublime appearance for a sovereign, but is a good housewife, and a very prudent and diligent conductress of her family. Miss Flora Macleod is a celebrated beauty; has been admired at Edinburgh; dresses her head very high; and has manners so lady like, that I wish her head-dress was lower. The rest of the nine girls are all pretty; the youngest is between Queeney and Lucy. The youngest boy, of four years old, runs barefoot, and wandered with us over the rocks to see a mill: I believe he would walk on that rough ground without shoes ten miles in a day.

The

The Laird of Raarsa has sometimes disputed the chieftainry of the clan with Macleod of Skie, but being much inferior in extent of possessions, has, I suppose, been forced to desist. Raarsa and its provinces have descended to its present possessor through a succession of four hundred years, without any increase or diminution. It was indeed lately in danger of forfeiture, but the old Laird joined some prudence with his zeal, and when Prince Charles landed in Scotland, made over his estate to his son, the present Laird, and led one hundred men of Raarsa into the field, with officers of his own family. Eighty-six only came back after the last battle. The Prince was hidden, in his distress, two nights at Raarsa, and the king's troops burnt the whole country, and killed some of the cattle.

You may guess at the opinions that prevail in this country; they are however, content with fighting for their king; they do not drink for him. We had no foolish healths. At night, unexpectedly to us who were strangers, the carpet was taken up; the fiddler of the family came up, and a very vigorous and general dance was begun. As I told you, we were two-and-thirty at supper; there were full as many dancers; for though all who supped did not dance, some danced of the young people who did not sup. Raarsa himself danced with his children, and old Malcolm, in his filibeg, was as nimble as when he led the Prince over the mountains. When they had danced themselves weary, two tables were spread, and I suppose at least twenty dishes were upon them. In this country some preparations of milk are always served up at supper, and sometimes in the place of tarts

tarts at dinner. The table was not coarsely heaped, but at once plentiful and elegant. They do not pretend to make a loaf; there are only cakes, commonly of oats or barley, but they made me very nice cakes of wheat flour. I always sat at the left hand of Lady Raarsa; and young Macleod of Skie, the chieftain of the clan, sat on the right.

After supper a young lady, who was visiting, sung Erse songs, in which Lady Raarsa joined prettily enough, but not gracefully; the young ladies sustained the chorus better. They are very little used to be asked questions, and not well prepared with answers. When one of the songs was over, I asked the princess that sat next to me, *What is that about?* I question if she conceived that I did not understand it. For the entertainment of the company, said she. But, Madam, what is the meaning of it? It is a love song. This was all the intelligence that I could obtain; nor have I been able to procure the translation of a single line of Erse.

At twelve it was bed-time. I had a chamber to myself, which, in eleven rooms to forty people, was more than my share. How the company and the family were distributed is not easy to tell. Macleod the chieftain, and Boswell, and I, had all single chambers on the first floor. There remained eight rooms only for at least seven-and-thirty lodgers. I suppose they put up temporary beds in the dining-room, where they stowed all the young ladies. There was a room above stairs with six beds, in which they put ten men. The rest in my next.

LETTER XXIV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Ostich in Skie, Sept. 30, 1773.

I AM still confined in Skie. We were unskilful travellers, and imagined that the sea was an open road which we could pass at pleasure; but we have now learned, with some pain, that we may still wait for a long time the caprices of the equinoctial winds, and sit reading or writing as I now do, while the tempest is rolling the sea, or roaring in the mountains. I am now no longer pleased with the delay; you can hear from me but seldom, and I cannot at all hear from you. It comes into my mind that some evil may happen, or that I might be of use while I am away. But these thoughts are vain; the wind is violent and adverse, and our boat cannot yet come. I must content myself with writing to you, and hoping that you will some time receive my letter. Now to my narrative.

Sept. 9th, Having passed the night as is usual, I rose, and found the dining-room full of company; we feasted and talked, and when the evening came it brought musick and dancing. Young Macleod, the great proprietor of Skie and head of his clan, was very distinguishable; a young man of nineteen; bred a while at St. Andrew's and afterwards at Oxford, a pupil of G. Strahan. He is a young man of a mind as much advanced as I have ever known; very elegant of manners, and very graceful in his person. He has the full spirit of a feudal chief; and I was very ready to accept his invitation to Dunvegan. All

Raarsa's

Raarsa's children are beautiful. The ladies all, except the eldest, are in the morning dressed in their hair. The true Highlander never wears more than a riband on her head till she is married.

On the third day Boswell went out with old Malcolm to see a ruined castle, which he found less entire than was promised, but he saw the country. I did not go, for the castle was perhaps ten miles off, and there is no riding at Raarsa, the whole island being rock or mountain, from which the cattle often fall and are destroyed. It is very barren, and maintains, as near as I could collect, about seven hundred inhabitants, perhaps ten to a square mile. In these countries you are not to suppose that you shall find villages or inclosures. The traveller wanders through a naked desert, gratified sometimes, but rarely, with the sight of cows, and now and then finds a heap of loose stones and turf in a cavity between rocks, where a being born with all those powers which education expands, and all those sensations which culture refines, is condemned to shelter itself from the wind and rain. Philosophers there are who try to make themselves believe that this life is happy, but they believe it only while they are saying it, and never yet produced conviction in a single mind; he, whom want of words or images sunk into silence, still thought, as he thought before, that privation of pleasure can never please, and that content is not to be much envied, when it has no other principle than ignorance of good.

This gloomy tranquillity, which some may call fortitude, and others wisdom, was, I believe, for a long time to be very frequently found in these dens of

of poverty: every man was content to live like his neighbours, and never wandering from home, saw no mode of life preferable to his own, except at the house of the laird, or the laird's nearest relations, whom he considered as a superior order of beings, to whose luxuries or honours he had no pretensions. But the end of his reverence and submission seems now approaching; the Highlanders have learned that there are countries less bleak and barren than their own, where, instead of working for the laird, every man will till his own ground, and eat the produce of his own labour. Great numbers have been induced by this discovery to go every year for some time past to America. Macdonald and Macleod of Skie have lost many tenants and many labourers, but Raarsa has not yet been forsaken by a single inhabitant.

Rona is yet more rocky and barren than Raarsa and though it contains perhaps four thousand acres, is possessed only by a herd of cattle and the keepers.

I find myself not very able to walk upon the mountains, but one day I went out to see the walls yet standing of an ancient chapel. In almost every island the superstitious votaries of the Romish church erected places of worship, in which the drones of convents or cathedrals performed the holy offices; but by the active zeal of Protestant devotion, almost all of them have sunk into ruin. The chapel at Raarsa is now only considered as the burying-place of the family, and I suppose of the whole island.

We would now have gone away and left room for others to enjoy the pleasures of this little court; but the wind detained us till the 12th, when, though it was Sunday, we thought it proper to snatch the oppor-

opportunity of a calm day. Raarsa accompanied us in his six-oared boat, which he said was his coach and six. It is indeed the vehicle in which the ladies take the air and pay their visits, but they have taken very little care for accommodations. There is no way in or out of the boat for a woman, but by being carried; and in the boat thus dignified with a pompous name, there is no seat but an occasional bundle of straw. Thus we left Raarsa; the seat of plenty, civility, and cheerfulness.

We dined at a publick house at Port Re; so called because one of the Scottish kings landed there, in a progress through the Western isles. Raarsa paid the reckoning privately. We then got on horseback, and by a short but very tedious journey came to Kingsburgh, at which the same king lodged after he landed. Here I had the honour of saluting the far-famed Miss Flora Macdonald, who conducted the Prince, dressed as her maid, through the English forces from the island of Lewes; and, when she came to Skie, dined with the English officers, and left her maid below. She must then have been a very young lady; she is now not old; of a pleasing person, and elegant behaviour. She told me that she thought herself honoured by my visit; and I am sure that whatever regard she bestowed on me was liberally repaid. "If thou likest her opinions, thou wilt "praise her virtue." She was carried to London, but dismissed without a trial, and came down with Malcolm Macleod, against whom sufficient evidence could not be procured. She and her husband are poor, and are going to try their fortune in America.

Sic rerum volvitur orbis.

At

At Kingsburgh we were very liberally feasted, and I slept in the bed in which the prince reposed in his distress; the sheets which he used were never put to any meaner offices, but were wrapped up by the lady of the house, and at last, according to her desire, were laid round her in her grave. These are not Whigs.

On the 13th, travelling partly on horseback where we could not row, and partly on foot where we could not ride, we came to Dunvegan, which I have described already. Here, though poor Macleod had been left by his grandfather overwhelmed with debts, we had another exhibition of feudal hospitality. There were two stags in the house, and venison came to the table every day in its various forms. Macleod, besides his estate in Skie, larger I suppose than some English counties, is proprietor of nine inhabited isles; and of his islands uninhabited I doubt if he very exactly knows the number. I told him that he was a mighty monarch. Such dominions fill an Englishman with envious wonder; but when he surveys the naked mountain, and treads the quaking moor; and wanders over the wild regions of gloomy barrenness, his wonder may continue, but his envy ceases. The unprofitableness of these vast domains can be conceived only by the means of positive instances. The heir of *Col*, an island not far distant, has lately told me how wealthy he should be if he could let *Rum*, another of his islands, for two-pence halfpenny an acre; and Macleod has an estate, which the surveyor reports to contain eighty thousand acres, rented at six hundred pounds a year.

While

While we were at Dunvegan, the wind was high, and the rain violent, so that we were not able to put forth a boat to fish in the sea, or to visit the adjacent islands, which may be seen from the house; but we filled up the time as we could, sometimes by talk, sometimes by reading. I have never wanted books in the isle of Skie.

We were invited one day by the Laird and Lady of Muck, one of the Western islands, two miles long and three quarters of a mile high. He has half his island in his own culture, and upon the other half live one hundred and fifty dependents, who not only live upon the product, but export corn sufficient for the payment of their rent.

Lady Macleod has a son and four daughters; they have lived long in England, and have the language and manners of English ladies. We lived with them very easily. The hospitality of this remote region is like that of the golden age. We have found ourselves treated at every house as if we came to confer a benefit.

We were eight days at Dunvegan, but we took the first opportunity which the weather afforded, after the first days, of going away, and, on the 21st, went to Ulinish, where we were well entertained, and wandered a little after curiosities. In the afternoon an interval of calm sunshine courted us out to see a cave on the shore famous for its echo. When we went into the boat, one of our companions was asked in Erse, by the boatmen, who they were that came with him? He gave us characters, I suppose, to our advantage, and was asked, in the spirit of the Highlands, whether I could recite a long series of ancestors?

tors? The boatmen said, as I perceived afterwards, that they heard the cry of an English ghost. This Boswell says, disturbed him. We came to the cave, and clambering up the rocks, came to an arch, open at one end, one hundred and eighty feet long, thirty broad in the broadest part, and about thirty high. There was no echo; such is the fidelity of report; but I saw what I had never seen before, muscles and whilks in their natural state. There was another arch in the rock, open at both ends.

Sept. 23d, We removed to Talisker, a house occupied by Mr. Macleod, a lieutenant-colonel in the Dutch service. Talisker has been long in the possession of gentlemen, and therefore has a garden well cultivated: and, what is here very rare, is shaded by trees: a place where the imagination is more amused cannot easily be found. The mountains about it are of great height, with waterfalls succeeding one another so fast, that as one ceases to be heard another begins. Between the mountains there is a small valley extending to the sea, which is not far off, beating upon a coast very difficult of access.

Two nights before our arrival two boats were driven upon this coast by the tempest, one of them had a pilot that knew the passage, the second followed, but a third missed the true course, and was driven forward with great danger of being forced into the vast ocean, but however gained at last some other island. The crews crept to Talisker, almost lifeless with wet, cold, fatigue, and terror, but the lady took care of them. She is a woman of more than common qualifications; having travelled with her husband, she speaks four languages.

You

You find that all the islanders, even in these recesses of life, are not barbarous. One of the ministers who has adhered to us almost all the time is an excellent scholar. We have now with us the young laird of *Col*, who is heir, perhaps, to two hundred square miles of land. He has first studied at Aberdeen, and afterwards gone to Hertfordshire to learn agriculture, being much impressed with desire of improvement: he likewise has the notions of a chief, and keeps a piper. At Macleod's the bagpipe always played while we were dining.

Col has undertaken, by permission of the waves and wind, to carry us about several of the islands, with which he is acquainted enough to shew us whatever curious is given by nature or left by antiquity; but we grew afraid of deviating from our way home, lest we should be shut up for months upon some little protuberance of rock, that just appears above the sea, and perhaps is scarcely marked upon a map.

You remember the Doge of Genoa, who being asked what struck him most at the French court? answered, "Myself." I cannot think many things here more likely to affect the fancy than to see Johnson ending his sixty-fourth year in the wilderness of the Hebrides. But now I am here, it will gratify me very little to return without seeing, or doing my best to see what those places afford. I have a desire to instruct myself in the whole system of pastoral life; but I know not whether I shall be able to perfect the idea. However I have many pictures in my mind, which I could not have had without this journey, and should have passed it with great pleasure had you, and Master, and Queeney been in the party. We

should have excited the attention and enlarged the observation of each other, and obtained many pleasing topicks of future conversation. As it is, I travel with my mind too much at home, and perhaps miss many things worthy of observation, or pass them with transient notice; so that the images, for want of that re-impression which discussion and comparison produce, easily fade away; but I keep a book of remarks, and Boswell writes a regular journal of our travels, which, I think, contains as much of what I say and do as of all other occurrences together; "for such a faithful chronicler as Griffith."

I hope, dearest Madam, you are equally careful to reposit proper memorials of all that happens to you and your family, and then when we meet we shall tell our stories. I wish you had gone this summer in your usual splendour to Brighthelmstone.

Mr. Thrale probably wonders how I live all this time without sending to him for money. Travelling in Scotland is dear enough, dearer in proportion to what the country affords than in England, but residence in the isles is unexpensive. Company is, I think, considered as a supply of pleasure, and a relief of that tediousness of life which is felt in every place, elegant or rude. Of wine and punch they are very liberal, for they get them cheap; but as there is no custom-house on the island, they can hardly be considered as smugglers. Their punch is made without lemons, or any substitute.

Their tables are very plentiful; but a very nice man would not be pampered. As they have no meat but as they kill it, they are obliged to live while it lasts upon the same flesh. They kill a sheep, and set mutton

mutton boiled and roast on the table together. They have fish both of the sea and of the brooks: but they can hardly conceive that it requires any sauce. To sauce in general they are strangers: now and then butter is melted, but I dare not always take, lest I should offend by disliking it. Barley-broth is a constant dish, and is made well in every house. A stranger, if he is prudent, will secure his share, for it is not certain that he will be able to eat any thing else.

Their meat, being often newly killed, is very tough, and, as nothing is sufficiently subdued by the fire, is not easily to be eaten. Carving is here a very laborious employment, for the knives are never whetted. Table-knives are not of long subsistence in the Highlands: every man, while arms were a regular part of dress, had his knife and fork appendant to his dirk. Knives they now lay upon the table, but the handles are apt to shew that they have been in other hands, and the blades have neither brightness nor edge.

Of silver there is no want, and it will last long, for it is never cleaned. They are a nation just rising from barbarity: long contented with necessaries, now somewhat studious of convenience, but not yet arrived at delicate discriminations. Their linen is, however, both clean and fine. Bread, such as we mean by that name, I have never seen in the isle of Skie. They have ovens, for they bake their pies; but they never ferment their meal, nor mould a loaf. Cakes of oats and barley are brought to the table, but I believe wheat is reserved for strangers. They are commonly too hard for me, and therefore I take potatoes to my

meat, and am sure to find them on almost every table.

They retain so much of the pastoral life, that some preparation of milk is commonly one of the dishes both at dinner and supper. Tea is always drank at the usual times; but in the morning the table is polluted with a plate of slices of strong cheese. This is peculiar to the Highlands; at Edinburgh there are always honey and sweet-meats on the morning tea-table.

Strong liquors they seem to love. Every man, perhaps woman, begins the day with a dram; and the punch is made both at dinner and supper.

They have neither wood nor coal for fuel, but burn peat or turf in their chimnies. It is dug out of the moors or mosses, and makes a strong and lasting fire, not always very sweet, and somewhat apt to smoke the pot.

The houses of inferior gentlemen are very small, and every room serves many purposes. In the bed-rooms, perhaps, are laid up stores of different kinds; and the parlour of the day is a bed-room at night. In the room which I inhabited last, about fourteen feet square, there were three chests of drawers, a long chest for larger clothes, two closet cupboards, and the bed. Their rooms are commonly dirty, of which they seem to have little sensibility, and if they had more, clean floors would be difficultly kept, where the first step from the door is into the dirt. They are very much inclined to carpets, and seldom fail to lay down something under their feet, better or worse, as they happen to be furnished.

The

The Highland dress, being forbidden by law, is very little used; sometimes it may be seen, but the English traveller is struck with nothing so much as the *nudité des pies* of the common people.

Skie is the greatest island, or the greatest but one, among the Hebrides. Of the soil I have already given some account: it is generally barren, but some spots are not wholly unfruitful. The gardens have apples and pears, cherries, strawberries, raspberries, currants, and gooseberries, but all the fruit that I have seen is small. They attempt to sow nothing but oats and barley. Oats constitute the bread corn of the place. Their harvest is about the beginning of October; and being so late, is very much subject to disappointments from the rains that follow the equinox. This year has been particularly disastrous. Their rainy season lasts from Autumn to Spring. They have seldom very hard frosts; nor was it ever known that a lake was covered with ice strong enough to bear a skaiter. The sea round them is always open. The snow falls but soon melts; only in 1771 they had a cold spring, in which the island was so long covered with it, that many beasts, both wild and domestick, perished, and the whole country was reduced to distress, from which I know not if it is even yet recovered.

The animals here are not remarkably small; perhaps they recruit their breed from the main land. The cows are sometimes without horns. The horned and unhorned cattle are not accidental variations, but different species: they will, however, breed together.

October 3d, The wind is now changed, and if we snatch the moment of opportunity, an escape from this

this island is become practicable; I have no reason to complain of my reception, yet I long to be again at home.

You and my master may perhaps expect, after this description of Skie, some account of myself. My eye is, I am afraid, not fully recovered; my ears are not mended; my nerves seem to grow weaker, and I have been otherwise not as well as I sometimes am, but think myself lately better. This climate, perhaps, is not within my degree of healthy latitude.

Thus I have given my most honoured mistress the story of me and my little ramble. We are now going to some other isle, to what we know not; the wind will tell us. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Mull, Oct. 15, 1773.

THOUGH I have written to Mr. Thrale, yet having a little more time than was promised me, I would not suffer the messenger to go without some token of my duty to my mistress, who, I suppose, expects the usual tribute of intelligence, a tribute which I am not now very able to pay.

October 3d, After having been detained by storms many days in Skie, we left it, as we thought with a fair wind; but a violent gust, which Bos. had a great mind to call a tempest, forced us into *Col*, an obscure island; on which

——nulla campis
Arbor æstivâ recreatur aurâ.

There

There is literally no tree upon the island, part of it is a sandy waste, over which it would be really dangerous to travel in dry weather and with a high wind. It seems to be little more than one continued rock, covered from space to space with a thin layer of earth. It is, however, according to the Highland notion, very populous, and life is improved beyond the manners of Skie; for the huts are collected into little villages, and every one has a small garden of roots and cabbage. The laird has a new house built by his uncle, and an old castle inhabited by his ancestors. The young laird entertained us very liberally; he is heir, perhaps, to three hundred square miles of land, which at ten shillings an acre, would bring him ninety-six thousand pounds a-year. He is desirous of improving the agriculture of his country; and in imitation of the Czar, travelled for improvement, and worked with his own hands upon a farm in Hertfordshire, in the neighbourhood of your uncle Sir Thomas Salusbury. He talks of doing useful things, and has introduced turnips for winter fodder. He has made a small essay towards a road.

Col is but a barren place. Description has here few opportunities of spreading her colours. The difference of day and night is the only vicissitude. The succession of sunshine to rain, or of calms to tempests, we have not known; wind and rain have been our only weather.

At last, after about nine days, we hired a sloop; and having lain in it all night, with such accommodations as these miserable vessels can afford, were landed yesterday on the isle of Mull; from which we expect

expect an easy passage into Scotland. I am sick in a ship, but recover by lying down.

I have not good health; I do not find that travelling much helps me. My nights are flatulent, though not in the utmost degree, and I have a weakness in my knees, which makes me very unable to walk.

Pray, dear Madam, let me have a long letter. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXVI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

HONOURED MISTRESS, Inverary, Oct, 24, 1773.

MY last letters to you and my dear master were written from Mull, the third island of the Hebrides in extent. There is no post, and I took the opportunity of a gentleman's passage to the main land.

In Mull we were confined two days by the weather; on the third we got on horseback, and after a journey difficult and tedious, over rocks naked and valleys untracked, through a country of barrenness and solitude, we came, almost in the dark, to the sea-side, weary and dejected, having met with nothing but water falling from the mountains that could raise any image of delight. Our company was the young Laird of Col and his servant. Col made every Maclean open his house where he came, and supply us with horses when we departed; but the horses of this country are small, and I was not mounted to my wish.

At

At the sea-side we found the ferry-boat departed; if it had been where it was expected, the wind was against us, and the hour was late, nor was it very desirable to cross the sea in darkness with a small boat. The Captain of a sloop that had been driven thither by the storm, saw our distress, and as we were hesitating and deliberating, sent his boat, which, by Col's order, transported us to the isle of Ulva. We were introduced to Mr. Macquarry, the head of a small clan, whose ancestors have reigned in Ulva beyond memory, but who has reduced himself, by his negligence and folly, to the necessity of selling this venerable patrimony.

On the next morning we passed the strait to Inch Kenneth, an island about a mile in length, and less than half a mile broad; in which Kenneth a Scottish saint established a small clerical college, of which the chapel walls are still standing. At this place I beheld a scene which I wish you and my master and Queeney had partaken.

The only family on the island is that of Sir Allan, the chief of the ancient and numerous clan of Maclean; the clan which claims the second place, yielding only to Macdonald in the line of battle. Sir Allan, a chieftain, a baronet, and a soldier, inhabits in this insulated desert a thatched hut with no chambers. Young Col, who owns him as his chief, and whose cousin was his lady, had, I believe, given him some notice of our visit; he received us with the soldier's frankness and the gentleman's elegance, and introduced us to his daughters, two young ladies who have not wanted education suitable to their birth, and who, in their cottage, neither forgot their dignity, nor

nor affected to remember it. Do not you wish to have been with us?

Sir Allan's affairs are in disorder by the fault of his ancestors; and while he forms some scheme for retrieving them, he has retreated hither.

When our salutations were over, he showed us the island. We walked uncovered into the chapel, and saw in the reverend ruin the effects of precipitate reformation. The floor is covered with ancient gravestones, of which the inscriptions are not now legible; and without, some of the chief families still continue the right of sepulture. The altar is not yet quite demolished; beside it, on the right side, is a bas relief of the Virgin with her child, and an angel hovering over her. On the other side still stands a handbell, which, though it has no clapper, neither Presbyterian bigotry nor barbarian wantonness has yet taken away. The chapel is thirty-eight feet long, and eighteen broad. Boswell, who is very pious, went into it at night to perform his devotions, but came back in haste, for fear of spectres. Near the chapel is a fountain, to which the water, remarkably pure, is conveyed from a distant hill, through pipes laid by the Romish clergy, which still perform the office of conveyance, though they have never been repaired since Popery was suppressed.

We soon after went in to dinner, and wanted neither the comforts nor the elegancies of life. There were several dishes, and variety of liquors. The servants live in another cottage; in which, I suppose, the meat is dressed.

Towards evening, Sir Allan told us, that Sunday never passed over him like another day. One of the ladies

ladies read, and read very well, the evening service; —and Paradise was opened in the wild.

Next day, 18th, we went and wandered among the rocks on the shore, while the boat was busy in catching oysters, of which there is a great bed. Oysters lie upon the sand, one I think sticking to another, and cockles are found a few inches under the sand.

We then went in the boat to Sondiland, a little island very near. We found it a wild rock, of about ten acres; part naked, part covered with sand, out of which we picked shells; and part clothed with a thin layer of mould, on the grass of which a few sheep are sometimes fed. We then came back and dined. I passed part of the afternoon in reading, and in the evening one of the ladies played on her harpsichord, and Boswell and Col danced a reel with the other.

On the 19th, we persuaded Sir Allan to launch his boat again, and go with us to Icolmkill, where the first great preacher of Christianity to the Scots built a church and settled a monastery. In our way we stopped to examine a very uncommon cave on the coast of Mull. We had some difficulty to make our way over the vast masses of broken rocks that lie before the entrance, and at the mouth were embarrassed with stones, which the sea had accumulated, as at Brighthelmstone; but as we advanced, we reached a floor of soft sand, and as we left the light behind us, walked along a very spacious cavity, vaulted over head with an arch almost regular, by which a mountain was sustained, at least a very lofty rock. From this magnificent cavern went a narrow passage to the right hand, which we entered with a candle, and, though it was obstructed with great stones, clambered over

over them to a second expansion of the cave, in which there lies a great square stone, which might serve as a table. The air here was very warm, but not oppressive, and the flame of the candle continued pyramidal. The cave goes onward to an unknown extent, but we were now one hundred and sixty yards under ground; we had but one candle, and had never heard of any that went farther and came back; we therefore thought it prudent to return.

Going forward in our boat, we came to a cluster of rocks, black and horrid, which Sir Allan chose for the place where he would eat his dinner. We climbed till we got seats. The stores were opened, and the repast taken.

We then entered the boat again; the night came upon us; the wind rose; the sea swelled; and Boswell desired to be set on dry ground: we, however, pursued our navigation, and passed by several little islands in the silent solemnity of faint moon-shine, seeing little, and hearing only the wind and the water. At last we reached the island; the veperable seat of ancient sanctity; where secret piety reposed, and where fallen greatness was reposited. The island has no house of entertainment, and we manfully made our bed in a farmer's barn. The description I hope to give you another time. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXVII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM, Edinburgh, Nov. 12, 1773.

AMONG the possibilities of evil which my imagination suggested at this distance, I missed that which

which has really happened. I never had much hope of a will in your favour, but was willing to believe that no will would have been made. The event is now irrevocable: it remains only to bear it. Not to wish it had been different is impossible; but as the wish is painful without use, it is not prudent, perhaps not lawful, to indulge it. As life, and vigour of mind, and sprightliness of imagination, and flexibility of attention, are given us for valuable and useful purposes, we must not think ourselves at liberty to squander life, to enervate intellectual strength, to cloud our thoughts, or fix our attention, when by all this expence we know that no good can be produced. Be alone as little as you can; when you are alone, do not suffer your thoughts to dwell on what you might have done, to prevent this disappointment. You perhaps could not have done what you imagine, or might have done it without effect. But even to think in the most reasonable manner, is for the present not so useful as not to think. Remit yourself solemnly into the hands of God, and then turn your mind upon the business and amusements which lie before you. "All is best," says Chene, "as it has "been, excepting the errours of our own free will." Burton concludes his long book upon Melancholy with this important precept: "Be not solitary; be "not idle." Remember Chene's position, and observe Burton's precept.

We came hither on the ninth of this month. I long to come under your care, but for some days cannot decently get away. They congratulate our return as if we had been with Phipps or Banks; I am ashamed of their salutations.

I have

I have been able to collect very little for Queeney's cabinet; but she will not want toys now, she is so well employed. I wish her success; and am not without some thought of becoming her school-fellow. I have got an Italian Rasselas.

Surely my dear Lucy will recover; I wish I could do her good. I love her very much; and should love another godchild, if I might have the honour of standing to the next baby. I am, &c.

LETTER XXVIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

MY DEAREST MISTRESS, Edinburgh, Nov. 18, 1773.

THIS is the last letter that I shall write; while you are reading it, I shall be coming home,

I congratulate you upon your boy; but you must not think that I will love him all at once as well as I love Harry, for Harry you know is so rational. I shall love him by degrees.

Poor, pretty, dear Lucy! Can nothing do her good? I am sorry to lose her. But if she must be taken from us, let us resign her with confidence into the hands of Him who knows, and who only knows, what is best both for us and her.

Do not suffer yourself to be dejected. Resolution and diligence will supply all that is wanting, and all that is lost. But if your health should be impaired, I know not where to find a substitute. I shall have no mistress; Mr. Thrale will have no wife; and the little flock will have no mother.

I long to be home, and have taken a place in the coach for Monday; I hope, therefore, to be in London

don on Friday the 26th, in the evening. Please to let Mrs. Williams know. I am, &c.

LETTER XXIX. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, Lichfield, June 23, 1775.

NOW I hope you are thinking, shall I have a letter to-day from Lichfield? Something of a letter you will have; how else can I expect that you should write? and the morning on which I should miss a letter would be a morning of uneasiness, notwithstanding all that would be said or done by the sisters of Stowhill, who do and say whatever good they can. They give me good words, and cherries, and strawberries. Lady **** and her mother and sister were visiting there yesterday, and Lady **** took her tea before her mother.

Mrs. Cobb is to come to Miss Porter's this afternoon. Miss A—— comes little near me. Mr. Langley of Ashbourne was here to-day, in his way to Birmingham, and every body talks of you.

The ladies of the Amicable Society are to walk in a few days, from the town-hall to the cathedral in procession to hear a sermon. They walk in linen gowns, and each has a stick with an acorn, but for the acorn they could give no reason, till I told them of the civick crown.

I have just had your sweet letter, and am glad that you are to be at the regatta. You know how little I love to have you left out of any shining part of life. You have every right to distinction, and should therefore be distinguished. You will see a show with philosophick

losophick superiority, and therefore may see it safely. It is easy to talk of sitting at home contented, when others are seeing or making shows. But not to have been where it is supposed, and seldom supposed falsely, that all would go if they could: to be able to say nothing when every one is talking; to have no opinion when every one is judging; to hear exclamations of rapture, without power to depress; to listen to falsehoods without right to contradict, is, after all, a state of temporary inferiority, in which the mind is rather hardened by stubbornness, than supported by fortitude. If the world be worth winning, let us enjoy it; if it is to be despised, let us despise it by conviction. But the world is not to be despised, but as it is compared with something better. Company is in itself better than solitude, and pleasure better than indolence. *Ex nihilo nihil fit*, says the moral as well as the natural philosopher. By doing nothing, and by knowing nothing, no power of doing good can be obtained. He must mingle with the world that desires to be useful. Every new scene impresses new ideas, enriches the imagination, and enlarges the power of reason, by new topicks of comparison. You that have seen the regatta will have images which we who miss it must want, and no intellectual images are without use. But when you are in this scene of splendour and gaiety, do not let one of your fits of negligence steal upon you. *Hoc age*, is the great rule, whether you are serious or merry; whether you are stating the expences of your family, learning science or duty from a folio, or floating on the Thames in a fancied dress. Of the whole entertainment let me not hear so copi-

ous

ous nor so true an account from any body as from you. I am, dearest Madam, your, &c.

LETTER XXX. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Ashbourne.

I AM sure I write and write, and every letter that comes from you charges me with not writing. Since I wrote to Queeney I have written twice to you, on the 6th and the 9th: be pleased to let me know whether you have them or have them not. That of the 6th you should regularly have had on the 8th, yet your letter of the 9th seems not to mention it; all this puzzles me.

Poor dear ****! He only grows dull because he is sickly; age has not yet begun to impair him; nor is he such a chameleon as to take immediately the colour of his company. When you see him again, you will find him reanimated. Most men have their bright and their cloudy days; at least they have days when they put their powers into action, and days when they suffer them to repose.

Fourteen thousand pounds make a sum sufficient for the establishment of a family, and which, in whatever flow of riches or confidence of prosperity, deserves to be very seriously considered. I hope a great part of it has paid debts, and no small part bought land. As for gravelling and walling and digging, though I am not much delighted with them, yet something, indeed much, must be allowed to every man's taste. He that is growing rich has a right to

enjoy part of the growth his own way. I hope to range in the walk, and row upon the water, and devour fruit from the wall.

Dr. Taylor wants to be gardening. He means to buy a piece of ground in the neighbourhood, and surround it with a wall, and build a gardener's house upon it, and have fruit, and be happy. Much happiness it will not bring him; but what can he do better? If I had money enough, what would I do? Perhaps, if you and master did not hold me, I might go to Cairo, and down the Red Sea to Bengal, and take a ramble in India. Would this be better than building and planting? It would surely give more variety to the eye, and more amplitude to the mind. Half fourteen thousand would send me out to see other forms of existence, and bring me back to describe them.

I answer this the day on which I had yours of the 9th, that is on the 11th. Let me know when it comes. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXXI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

MADAM, Lichfield, August 2, 1775.

I DINED to-day at Stowhill, and am come away to write my letter. Never surely was I such a writer before. Do you keep my letters? I am not of your opinion that I shall not like to read them hereafter; for though there is in them not much history of mind, or any thing else, they will, I hope, always be in some degree the records of a pure and blameless

blameless friendship, and, in some hours of languor and sadness, may revive the memory of more cheerful times.

Why you should suppose yourself not desirous hereafter to read the history of your own mind, I do not see. Twelve years, on which you now look as on a vast expanse of life, will probably be passed over uniformly and smoothly, with very little perception of your progress, and with very few remarks upon the way. The accumulation of knowledge which you promise to yourself, by which the future is to look back upon the present, with the superiority of manhood to infancy, will perhaps never be attempted, or never will be made; and you will find, as millions have found before you, that forty-five has made little sensible addition to thirty-three.

As the body after a certain time gains no increase of height, and little of strength, there is likewise a period, though more variable by external causes, when the mind commonly attains its stationary point, and very little advances its powers of reflection, judgment, and ratiocination. The body may acquire new modes of motion, or new dexterities of mechanick operations, but its original strength receives not improvement: the mind may be stored with new languages, or new sciences, but its power of thinking remains nearly the same, and unless it attains new subjects of meditation, it commonly produces thoughts of the same force and the same extent, at very distant intervals of life; as the tree, unless a foreign fruit be ingrafted, gives year after year productions of the same form and the same flavour.

By intellectual force or strength of thought is meant the degree of power which the mind possesses of surveying the subject of meditation, with its circuit of concomitants, and its train of dependence.

Of this power, which all observe to be very different in different minds, part seems the gift of nature, and part the acquisition of experience. When the powers of nature have attained their intended energy, they can be no more advanced. The shrub can never become a tree. And it is not unreasonable to suppose that they are before the middle of life in their full vigour.

Nothing then remains but practice and experience; and perhaps why they do so little, may be worth enquiry.

But I have just now looked, and find it so late, that I will enquire against the next post night. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXXII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Lichfield, August 5, 1775.

INSTEAD of forty reasons for my return, one is sufficient,—that you wish for my company. I purpose to write no more till you see me. The ladies at Stowhill and Greenhill, are unanimously of opinion, that it will be best to take a postchaise, and not to be troubled with the vexations of a common carriage. I will venture to suppose the ladies at Streatham to be of the same mind.

You

You will now expect to be told why you will not be so much wiser as you expect, when you have lived twelve years longer.

It is said, and said truly, that experience is the best teacher; and it is supposed, that as life is lengthened experience is encreased. But a closer inspection of human life will discover that time often passes without any incident which can much enlarge knowledge or ratify judgment. When we are young we learn much, because we are universally ignorant; we observe every thing, because every thing is new. But after some years, the occurrences of daily life are exhausted; one day passes like another, in the same scene of appearances, in the same course of transactions; we have to do what we have often done, and what we do not try, because we do not wish to do much better; we are told what we already know, and therefore what repetition cannot make us know with greater certainty.

He that has early learned much, perhaps seldom makes, with regard to life and manners, much addition to his knowledge; not only because as more is known there is less to learn, but because a mind stored with images and principles turns inwards for its own entertainment, and is employed in settling those ideas which run into confusion, and in recollecting those which are stealing away; practices by which wisdom may be kept, but not gained. The merchant who was at first busy in acquiring money, ceases to grow richer, from the time when he makes it his business only to count it.

Those who have families or employments are engaged in business of little difficulty, but of great importance,

portance, requiring rather assiduity of practice than subtilty of speculation, occupying the attention with images too bulky for refinement, and too obvious for research. The right is already known: what remains is only to follow it. Daily business adds no more to wisdom, than daily lesson to the learning of the teacher. But of how few lives does not stated duty claim the greater part?

Far the greater part of human minds never endeavour their own improvement. Opinions once received from instruction, or settled by whatever accident, are seldom recalled to examination; having been once supposed to be right, they are never discovered to be erroneous, for no application is made of any thing that time may present, either to shake or to confirm them. From this acquiescence in preconceptions none are wholly free; between fear of uncertainty, and dislike of labour, every one rests while he might yet go forward; and they that were wise at thirty-three, are very little wiser at forty-five.

Of this speculation you are perhaps tired, and would rather hear of Sophy. I hope before this comes, that her head will be easier, and your head less filled with fears and troubles, which you know are to be indulged only to prevent evil, not to encrease it.

Your uneasiness about Sophy is probably unnecessary, and at worst your own children are healthful, and your affairs prosperous. Unmingled good cannot be expected; but as we may lawfully gather all the good within our reach, we may be allowed to lament after that which we lose. I hope your losses

are

are at an end, and that as far as the condition of our present existence permits, your remaining life will be happy. I am, &c.

LETTER XXXIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Lichfield, March 25, 1776.

THIS letter will not, I hope, reach you many days before me; in a distress which can be so little relieved, nothing remains for a friend but to come and partake it.

Poor dear sweet little boy! When I read the letter this day to Mrs. Aston, she said, "Such a death "is the next to translation." Yet however I may convince myself of this, the tears are in my eyes, and yet I could not love him as you loved him, nor reckon upon him for a future comfort as you and his father reckoned upon him.

He is gone, and we are going! We could not have enjoyed him long, and shall not long be separated from him. He has probably escaped many such pangs as you are now feeling.

Nothing remains, but that with humble confidence we resign ourselves to Almighty Goodness, and fall down, without irreverent murmurs, before the Sovereign Distributer of good and evil, with hope that though sorrow endureth for a night yet joy may come in the morning.

I have known you, Madam, too long to think that you want any arguments for submission to the Supreme Will; nor can my consolation have any effect but that of shewing that I wish to comfort you.

What

What can be done you must do for yourself. Remember first, that your child is happy; and then, that he is safe, not only from the ills of this world, but from those more formidable dangers which extend their mischief to eternity. You have brought into the world a rational being; have seen him happy during the little life that has been granted him; and can have no doubt but that his happiness is now permanent and immutable.

When you have obtained by prayer such tranquillity as nature will admit, force your attention, as you can, upon your accustomed duties and accustomed entertainments. You can do no more for our dear boy, but you must not therefore think less on those whom your attention may make fitter for the place to which he is gone. I am, dearest, dearest Madam, your most affectionate humble servant.

LETTER XXXIV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST LADY, Sept. 6, 1777.

IT is true that I have loitered, and what is worse, loitered with very little pleasure. The time has run away, as most time runs, without account, without use, and without memorial. But to say this of a few weeks, though not pleasing, might be borne, but what ought to be the regret of him who, in a few days, will have so nearly the same to say of sixty-eight years? But complaint is vain.

If you have nothing to say from the neighbourhood of the metropolis, what can occur to me in little cities and petty towns; in places which we have both seen,

seen, and of which no description is wanted? I have left part of the company with which you dined here, to come and write this letter; in which I have nothing to tell, but that my nights are very tedious. I cannot persuade myself to forbear trying something.

As you have now little to do, I suppose you are pretty diligent at the Thraliana; and a very curious collection posterity will find it. Do not remit the practice of writing down occurrences as they arise, of whatever kind, and be very punctual in annexing the dates. Chronology you know is the eye of history; and every man's life is of importance to himself. Do not omit painful casualties, or unpleasing passages, they make the variegation of existence; and there are many transactions, of which I will not promise with Æneas, *et hæc olim meminisse juvabit.* Yet that remembrance which is not pleasant may be useful. There is however an intemperate attention to slight circumstances which is to be avoided, lest a great part of life be spent in writing the history of the rest. Every day perhaps has something to be noted, but in a settled and uniform course few days can have much.

Why do I write all this, which I had no thought of when I began? The Thraliana drove it all into my head. It deserves however an hour's reflection, to consider how, with the least loss of time, the loss of what we wish to retain may be prevented.

Do not neglect to write to me, for when a post comes empty, I am really disappointed.

Boswell, I believe, will meet me here. I am, dearest Lady, your, &c.

LETTER

LETTER XXXV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Lichfield, October 3, 1777.

THIS is the last time that I shall write, in this excursion, from this place. To-morrow I shall be, I hope, at Birmingham; from which place I shall do my best to find the nearest way home. I come home, I think, worse than I went; and do not like the state of my health. But, *vive hodie*, make the most of life. I hope to get better, and—sweep the cobwebs. But I have sad nights. Mrs. Aston has sent me to Mr. Green to be cured.

Did you see Foote at Brighthelmstone?—Did you think he would so soon be gone?—Life, says Falstaff, is a shuttle. He was a fine fellow in his way; and the world is really impoverished by his sinking glories. Murphy ought to write his life, at least to give the world a Footeana. Now, will any of his contemporaries bewail him? Will genius change *his sex* to weep? I would really have his life written with diligence.

It will be proper for me to work pretty diligently now for some time. I hope to get through, though so many weeks have passed. Little lives and little criticisms may serve.

Having been in the country so long, with very little to detain me, I am rather glad to look homewards. I am, *&c.*

LETTER

LETTER XXXVI. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, October 13, 1777.

YET I do love to hear from you. Such pretty kind letters as you send. But it gives me great delight to find that my master misses me. I begin to wish myself with you more than I should do, if I were wanted less. It is a good thing to stay away till one's company is desired, but not so good to stay after it is desired.

You know I have some work to do. I did not set to it very soon; and if I should go up to London with nothing done, what would be said, but that I was——who can tell what? I therefore stay till I can bring up something to stop their mouths, and then——

Though I am still at Ashbourne, I receive your dear letters that come to Lichfield, and you continue that direction, for I think to get thither as soon as I can.

One of the does died yesterday, and I am afraid her fawn will be starved; I wish Miss Thrale had it to nurse; but the doctor is now all for cattle, and minds very little either does or hens.

How did you and your aunt part? Did you turn her out of doors to begin your journey? or did she leave you by her usual shortness of visits? I love to know how you go on.

I cannot but think on your kindness and my master's. Life has, upon the whole, fallen short, very short, of my early expectation; but the acquisition

sition of such a friendship, at an age when new friendships are seldom acquired, is something better than the general course of things gives man a right to expect. I think on it with great delight; I am not very apt to be delighted. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XXXVII. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, Lichfield, October 27, 1777.

YOU talk of writing and writing, as if you had all the writing to yourself. If our correspondence were printed, I am sure posterity, for posterity is always the author's favourite, would say that I am a good writer too.—*Anch'io sono pittore.* To sit down so often with nothing to say; to say something so often, almost without consciousness of saying, and without any remembrance of having said, is a power of which I will not violate my modesty by boasting, but I do not believe that every body has it.

Some, when they write to their friends, are all affection; some are wise and sententious; some strain their powers for efforts of gaiety; some write news, and some write secrets; but to make a letter without affection, without wisdom, without gaiety, without news, and without a secret, is, doubtless, the great epistolick art.

In a man's letters, you know, Madam, his soul lies naked, his letters are only the mirrour of his breast; whatever passes within him is shown undisguised in its natural process; nothing is inverted, nothing distorted; you see systems in their elements; you discover actions in their motives.

Of

Of this great truth, sounded by the knowing to the ignorant, and so echoed by the ignorant to the knowing, what evidence have you now before you? Is not my soul laid open in these veracious pages? Do not you see me reduced to my first principles? This is the pleasure of corresponding with a friend, where doubt and distrust have no place, and every thing is said as it is thought. The original idea is laid down in its simple purity, and all the supervenient conceptions are spread over it, *stratum super stratum*, as they happen to be formed. These are the letters by which souls are united, and by which minds naturally in unison move each other as they are moved themselves. I know, dearest Lady, that in the perusal of this, such is the consanguinity of our intellects, you will be touched as I am touched. I have indeed concealed nothing from you, nor do I expect ever to repent of having thus opened my heart. I am, &c.

LETTER XXXVIII. *To the Same.*

DEAR MADAM, November 1, 1777.

AND so, supposing that I might come to town and neglect to give you notice, or thinking some other strange thought, but certainly thinking wrong, you fall to writing about me to Tom Davies, as if he could tell you any thing that I would not have you know. As soon as I came hither, I let you know of my arrival; and the consequence is, that I am summoned to Brighthelmstone through storms, and cold, and dirt, and all the hardships of wintry journeys. You

You know my natural dread of all those evils; yet to show my master an example of compliance, and to let you know how much I long to see you, and to boast how little I give way to disease, my purpose is to be with you on Friday.

I am sorry for poor Nezzy, and hope she will in time be better; I hope the same for myself. The rejuvenescency of Mr. Scrase gives us both reason to hope, and therefore both of us rejoice in his recovery. I wish him well besides as a friend to my master.

I am just come home from not seeing my Lord Mayor's show, but I might have seen at least part of it. But I saw Miss Wesley and her brothers; she sends her compliments. Mrs. Williams is come home, I think a very little better.

Every body was an enemy to that wig.—We will burn it, and get drunk; for what is joy without drink. Wagers are laid in the city about our success, which is yet, as the French call it, problematical. Well, but seriously I think I shall be glad to see you in your own hair; but do not take too much time in combing, and twisting, and papering, and unpapering, and curling, and frizzing, and powdering, and getting out the powder, with all the other operations required in the cultivation of a head of hair; yet let it be combed at least once in three months, on the quarter-day—I could wish it might be combed once at least in six weeks; if I were to indulge my wishes, but what are wishes without hopes, I should fancy the operation performed—one knows not when one has enough—perhaps every morning. I am, dearest Lady, your, &c.

LETTER

LETTER XXXIX. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Ashbourne, June 14, 1779.

YOUR account of Mr. Thrale's illness is very terrible; but when I remember that he seems to have it peculiar to his constitution, that whatever distemper he has, he always has his head affected, I am less frighted. The seizure was, I think, not apoplectical, but hysterical, and therefore not dangerous to life. I would have you however consult such physicians as you think you can best trust. Bromfield seems to have done well, and by his practice appears not to suspect an apoplexy. This is a solid and fundamental comfort. I remember Dr. Marsigli, an Italian physician, whose seizure was more violent than Mr. Thrale's, for he fell down helpless, but his case was not considered as of much danger, and he went safe home, and is now a professor at Padua. His fit was considered as only hysterical.

I hope Sir Philip, who franked your letter, comforts you as well as Mr. Seward. If I can comfort you, I will come to you; but I hope you are now no longer in want of any help to be happy. I am, &c.

The Doctor sends his compliments; he is one of the people that are growing old.

LETTER

LETTER XL. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, Ashbourne, June 14, 1779.

HOW near we are all to extreme danger. We are merry or sad, or busy or idle, and forget that death is hovering over us. You are a dear Lady for writing again. The case, as you now describe it, is worse than I conceived it when I read your first letter. It is still however not apoplectick, but seems to have something worse than hysterical, a tendency to a palsy, which I hope however is now over. I am glad that you have Heberden, and hope we are all safer. I am the more alarmed by this violent seizure, as I can impute it to no wrong practices, or intemperance of any kind, and therefore know not how any defence or preservative can be obtained. Mr. Thrale has certainly less exercise than when he followed the foxes; but he is very far from unwieldiness or inactivity, and further still from any vicious or dangerous excess. I fancy, however, he will do well to ride more.

Do, dear Madam, let me know every post how he goes on. Such sudden violence is very dreadful; we know not by what it is let loose upon us, nor by what its effects are limited.

If my coming can either assist or divert, or be useful to any purpose, let me but know. I will soon be with you.

Mrs. Kennedy, Queeney's Baucis, ended last week a long life of disease and poverty. She had been married about fifty years.

Dr. Taylor is not much amiss, but always complaining. I am, *&c.*

LETTER

LETTER XLI. *To Mr.* THRALE.

DEAR SIR, Ltchfield, June 23, 1779.

TO shew you how well I think of your health, I have sent you a hundred pounds to keep for me. It will come within one day of quarter day, and that day you must give me. I came by it in a very uncommon manner, and would not confound it with the rest.

My wicked mistress talks as if she thought it possible for me to be indifferent or negligent about your health or hers. If I could have done any good, I had not delayed an hour to come to you; and I will come very soon to try if my advice can be of any use, or my company of any entertainment.

What can be done you must do for yourself: do not let any uneasy thought settle in your mind. Cheerfulness and exercise are your great remedies. Nothing is for the present worth your anxiety. *Vivite læti* is one of the great rules of health. I believe it will be good to ride often, but never to weariness, for weariness is itself a temporary resolution of the nerves, and is therefore to be avoided. Labour is exercise continued to fatigue—exercise is labour used only while it produces pleasure.

Above all, keep your mind quiet: do not think with earnestness even of your health; but think on such things as may please without too much agitation; among which I hope is, dear Sir, your, &c.

LETTER XLII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM,

ON Sunday I dined with poor Lawrence, who is deafer than ever. When he was told that Dr. Moisy visited Mr. Thrale, he enquired for what? and said there was nothing to be done, which Nature would not do for herself. On Sunday evening I was at Mrs. Vesey's, and there was enquiry about my master, but I told them all good. There was Dr. Bernard of Eaton, and we made a noise all the evening; and there was Pepys, and Wraxal till I drove him away. And I have no loss of my mistress, who laughs, and frisks, and frolicks it all the long day, and never thinks of poor Colin.

If Mr. Thrale will but continue to mend, we shall, I hope, come together again, and do as good things as ever we did; but perhaps you will be made too proud to heed me, and yet as I have often told you, it will not be easy for you to find such another.

Queeney has been a good girl, and wrote me a letter; if Burney said she would write, she told you a fib. She writes nothing to me. She can write home fast enough. I have a good mind not to let her know, that Dr. Bernard, to whom I had recommended her novel, speaks of it with great commendation, and that the copy which she lent me, has been read by Dr. Lawrence three times over. And yet what a gypsey it is. She no more minds me than if I were a Brangton. Pray speak to Queeney to write again.

I have had a cold and a cough, and taken opium, and think I am better. We have had very cold wea ther;

weather; bad riding weather for my master, but he will surmount it all. Did Mrs. Browne make any reply to your comparison of business with solitude, or did you quite down her? I am much pleased to think that Mrs. Cotton thinks me worth a frame, and a place upon her wall; her kindness was hardly within my hope, but time does wonderful things. All my fear is, that if I should come again, my print would be taken down. I fear I shall never hold it.

Who dines with you? Do you see Dr. Woodward or Dr. Harrington? Do you go to the house where they write for the myrtle? You are at all places of high resort, and bring home hearts by dozens; while I am seeking for something to say about men of whom I know nothing but their verses, and sometimes very little of them. Now I have begun, however, I do not despair of making an end. Mr. Nichols holds that Addison is the most *taking* of all that I have done. I doubt they will not be done before you come away.

Now you think yourself the first writer in the world for a letter about nothing. Can you write such a letter as this? So miscellaneous, with such noble disdain of regularity; like Shakspeare's works, such graceful negligence of transition, like the ancient enthusiasts? The pure voice of nature and of friendship. Now of whom shall I proceed to speak? Of whom but Mrs. Montague? Having mentioned Shakspeare and Nature, does not the name of Montague force itself upon me? Such were the transitions of the ancients, which now seem abrupt, because the intermediate idea is lost to modern understandings. I wish her name had connected itself with

friendship; but, ah Colin, thy hopes are in vain! One thing however is left me, I have still to complain; but I hope I shall not complain much while you have any kindness for me. I am, dearest and dearest Madam, your, *&c.*

London, April 11, 1780.

LETTER XLIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAREST MADAM,

MR. Thrale never will live abstinently, till he can persuade himself to abstain by rule. I lived on potatoes on Friday, and on spinach to-day; but I have had, I am afraid, too many dinners of late. I took physick too both days, and hope to fast to-morrow. When he comes home, we will shame him, and Jebb shall scold him into regularity. I am glad, however, that he is always one of the company, and that my dear Queeney is again another. Encourage as you can, the musical girl.

Nothing is more common than mutual dislike where mutual approbation is particularly expected. There is often on both sides a vigilance, not over benevolent; and as attention is strongly excited, so that nothing drops unheeded, any difference in taste or opinion, and some difference where there is no restraint will commonly appear, it immediately generates dislike.

Never let criticisms operate upon your face or your mind; it is very rarely that an author is hurt by his criticks. The blaze of reputation cannot be blown out, but it often dies in the socket; a very few names

names may be considered as perpetual lamps that shine unconsumed. From the author of Fitzosborne's Letters I cannot think myself in much danger. I met him only once about thirty years ago, and in some small dispute reduced him to whistle; having not seen him since, that is the last impression. Poor Moore the Fabulist was one of the company.

Mrs. Montague's long stay against her own inclination, is very convenient. You would, by your own confession, want a companion; and she is, *par pluribus*, conversing with her you may *find variety in one.*

At Mrs. Ord's I met one Mrs. B———, a travelled lady, of great spirit, and some consciousness of her own abilities. We had a contest of gallantry an hour long, so much to the diversion of the company, that at Ramsay's last night, in a crowded room, they would have pitted us again. There were Smelt, and the Bishop of St. Asaph, who comes to every place; and Lord Monboddo, and Sir Joshua, and ladies out of tale.

The Exhibition, how will you do, either to see or not to see! The Exhibition is eminently splendid. There is contour, and keeping, and grace, and expression, and all the varieties of artificial excellence. The apartments were truly very noble. The pictures, for the sake of a sky-light, are at the top of the house; there we dined, and I sat over against the Archbishop of York. See how I live when I am not under petticoat government. I am, *&c.*

London, May 1, 1780.

LETTER

LETTER XLIV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, London, June 9, 1780.

TO the question, Who was impressed with consternation? it may with great truth be answered, that every body was impressed, for nobody was sure of his safety.

On Friday the good Protestants met in St. George's Fields, at the summons of Lord George Gordon, and marching to Westminster, insulted the Lords and Commons, who all bore it with great tameness. At night the outrages began by the demolition of the mass-house by Lincoln's Inn.

An exact journal of a week's defiance of government I cannot give you. On Monday Mr. Strahan, who had been insulted, spoke to Lord Mansfield, who had I think been insulted too, of the licentiousness of the populace; and his Lordship treated it as a very slight irregularity. On Tuesday night they pulled down Fielding's house, and burnt his goods in the street. They had gutted on Monday Sir George Savile's house, but the building was saved. On Tuesday evening, leaving Fielding's ruins, they went to Newgate to demand their companions who had been seized demolishing the chapel. The keeper could not release them but by the Mayor's permission, which he went to ask; at his return he found all the prisoners released, and Newgate in a blaze. They then went to Bloomsbury, and fastened upon Lord Mansfield's house, which they pulled down; and as for his goods, they totally burnt them.

They

They have since gone to Cane-wood, but a guard was there before them. They plundered some Papists, I think, and burnt a mass-house in Moorfields the same night.

On Wednesday I walked with Dr. Scott to look at Newgate, and found it in ruins, with the fire yet glowing. As I went by, the Protestants were plundering the Sessions-house at the Old Bailey. There were not, I believe, a hundred; but they did their work at leisure, in full security, without sentinels, without trepidation, as men lawfully employed, in full day. Such is the cowardice of a commercial place. On Wednesday they broke open the Fleet, and the King's Bench, and the Marshalsea, and Woodstreet-counter, and Clerkenwell Bridewell, and released all the prisoners.

At night they set fire to the Fleet, and to the King's Bench, and I know not how many other places; and one might see the glare of conflagration fill the sky from many parts. The sight was dreadful. Some people were threatened; Mr. Strahan advised me to take care of myself. Such a time of terror you have been happy in not seeing.

The King said in council, that the magistrates had, not done their duty, but that he would do his own; and a proclamation was published, directing us to keep our servants within doors, as the peace was now to be preserved by force. The soldiers were sent out to different parts, and the town is now at quiet.

What has happened at your house you will know, the harm is only a few butts of beer; and I think you may be sure that the danger is over. There is a body of soldiers at St. Margaret's Hill.

Of

Of Mr. Tyson I know nothing, nor can guess to what he can allude; but I know that a young fellow of little more than seventy, is naturally an unresisted conqueror of hearts.

Pray tell Mr. Thrale that I live here and have no fruit, and if he does not interpose am not likely to have much; but I think he might as well give me a little as give all to the gardener.

Pra make my compliments to Queeney and Burney. I am, *&c.*

LETTER XLV. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, June, 10, 1780.

YOU have ere now heard and read enough to convince you, that we have had something to suffer, and something to fear, and therefore I think it necessary to quiet the solicitude which you undoubtedly feel, by telling you that our calamities and terrors are now at an end. The soldiers are stationed so as to be every where within call; there is no longer any body of rioters, and the individuals are hunted to their holes, and led to prison; the streets are safe and quiet: Lord George was last night sent to the Tower. Mr. John Wilkes was this day with a party of soldiers in my neighbourhood, to seize the publisher of a seditious paper. Every body walks, and eats, and sleeps in security. But the history of the last week would fill you with amazement: it is without any modern example.

Several chapels have been destroyed, and several inoffensive Papists have been plundered, but the high sport

sport was to burn the jails. This was a good rabble trick. The debtors and the criminals were all set at liberty; but of the criminals, as has always happened, many are already retaken, and two pirates have surrendered themselves, and it is expected that they will be pardoned.

Government now acts again with its proper force; and we are all again under the protection of the King and the law. I thought that it would be agreeable to you and my master to have my testimony to the publick security; and that you would sleep more quietly when I told you that you are safe. I am, dearest Lady, your, &c.

LETTER XLVI. *To the Same.*

DEAREST MADAM, London, April 5, 1781.

OF your injunctions, to pray for you and write to you, I hope to leave neither unobserved; and I hope to find you willing in a short time to alleviate your trouble by some other exercise of the mind. I am not without my part of the calamity. No death since that of my wife has ever oppressed me like this. But let us remember, that we are in the hands of Him who knows when to give and when to take away; who will look upon us with mercy through all our variations of existence, and who invites us to call on him in the day of trouble. Call upon him in this great revolution of life, and call with confidence. You will then find comfort for the past, and support for the future. He that has given you happiness in marriage, to a degree of which, without personal know-

knowledge, I should have thought the description fabulous, can give you another mode of happiness, as a mother; and at last the happiness of losing all temporal cares in the thoughts of an eternity in Heaven.

I do not exhort you to reason yourself into tranquillity. We must first pray, and then labour; first implore the blessing of God, and use those means which he puts into our hands. Cultivated ground has few weeds; a mind occupied by lawful business, has little room for useless regret.

We read the will to-day; but I will not fill my first letter with any other account than that, with all my zeal for your advantage, I am satisfied; and that the other executors, more used to consider property than I, commended it for wisdom and equity. Yet why should I not tell you that you have five hundred pounds for your immediate expences, and two thousand pounds a-year, with both the houses, and all the goods?

Let us pray for one another, that the time, whether long or short, that shall yet be granted us, may be well spent; and that when this life, which at the longest is very short, shall come to an end, a better may begin which shall never end. I am, dearest Madam, your, &c.

LETTER

LETTER XLVII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, April 7, 1781.

I HOPE you begin to find your mind grow clearer. My part of the loss hangs upon me. I have lost a friend of boundless kindness at an age when it is very unlikely that I should find another.

If you think change of place likely to relieve you, there is no reason why you should not go to Bath; the distances are unequal, but with regard to practice and business they are the same. It is a day's journey from either place; and the post is more expeditious and certain to Bath. Consult only your own inclination, for there is really no other principle of choice. God direct and bless you.

Mr. C——— has offered Mr. P——— money, but it was not wanted. I hope we shall all do all we can to make you less unhappy, and you must do all you can for yourself. What we, or what you can do, will for a time be but little; yet certainly that calamity which may be considered as doomed to fall inevitably on half mankind, is not finally without alleviation.

It is something for me, that as I have not the decrepitude I have not the callousness of old age. I hope in time to be less afflicted. I am, &c.

LETTER

LETTER XLVIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, London, April 9, 1781.

THAT you are gradually recovering your tranquillity is the effect to be humbly expected from trust in God. Do not represent life as darker than it is. Your loss has been very great, but you retain more than almost any other can hope to possess. You are high in the opinion of mankind; you have children from whom much pleasure may be expected; and that you will find many friends, you have no reason to doubt. Of my friendship, be it worth more or less, I hope you think yourself certain, without much art or care. It will not be easy for me to repay the benefits that I have received; but I hope to be always ready at your call. Our sorrow has different effects; you are withdrawn into solitude, and I am driven into company. I am afraid of thinking what I have lost. I never had such a friend before. Let me have your prayers and those of my dear Queeney.

The prudence and resolution of your design to return so soon to your business and your duty deserves great praise; I shall communicate it on Wednesday to the other executors. Be pleased to let me know whether you would have me come to Streatham to receive you, or stay here till the next day. I am, *&c.*

LETTER

LETTER XLIX. *To the Same.*

Bolt-court, Fleet-street,
DEAR MADAM, June 19, 1783.

I AM sitting down in no cheerful solitude to write a narrative which would once have affected you with tenderness and sorrow, but which you will perhaps pass over now with a careless glance of frigid indifference. For this diminution of regard, however, I know not whether I ought to blame you, who may have reasons which I cannot know; and I do not blame myself, who have for a great part of human life done you what good I could, and have never done you evil.

I have been disordered in the usual way, and had been relieved by the usual methods, by opium and catharticks, but had rather lessened my dose of opium.

On Monday the 16th I sat for my picture, and walked a considerable way with little inconvenience. In the afternoon and evening I felt myself light and easy, and began to plan schemes of life. Thus I went to bed, and in a short time waked and sat up, as has been long my custom, when I felt a confusion and indistinctness in my head, which lasted I suppose about half a minute; I was alarmed, and prayed God, that however he might afflict my body, he would spare my understanding. This prayer, that I might try the integrity of my faculties, I made in Latin verse. The lines were not very good, but I knew them not to be very good: I made them easily, and

and concluded myself to be unimpaired in my faculties.

Soon after I perceived that I had suffered a paralytick stroke, and that my speech was taken from me. I had no pain, and so little dejection in this dreadful state, that I wondered at my own apathy, and considered that perhaps death itself, when it should come, would excite less horror than seems now to attend it.

In order to rouse the vocal organs, I took two drams. Wine has been celebrated for the production of eloquence. I put myself into violent motion, and I think repeated it; but all was vain. I then went to bed, and, strange as it may seem, I think, slept. When I saw light, it was time to contrive what I should do. Though God stopped my speech, he left me my hand: I enjoyed a mercy which was not granted to my dear friend Lawrence, who now perhaps overlooks me as I am writing, and rejoices that I have what he wanted. My first note was necessarily to my servant, who came in talking, and could not immediately comprehend why he should read what I put into his hands.

I then wrote a card to Mr. Allen, that I might have a discreet friend at hand to act as occasion should require. In penning this note I had some difficulty; my hand, I knew not how nor why, made wrong letters. I then wrote to Dr. Taylor to come to me, and bring Dr. Heberden, and I sent to Dr. Brocklesby, who is my neighbour. My physicians are very friendly and very disinterested, and give me great hopes, but you may imagine my situation. I have

have so far recovered my vocal powers, as to repeat the Lord's Prayer with no very imperfect articulation. My memory, I hope, yet remains as it was; but such an attack produces solicitude for the safety of every faculty.

How this will be received by you I know not. I hope you will sympathise with me; but perhaps

> My mistress gracious, mild, and good,
> Cries! Is he dumb? 'Tis time he shou'd.

But can this be possible? I hope it cannot. I hope that what, when I could speak, I spoke of you, and to you, will be in a sober and serious hour remembered by you; and surely it cannot be remembered but with some degree of kindness. I have loved you with virtuous affection; I have honoured you with sincere esteem. Let not all our endearments be forgotten, but let me have in this great distress your pity and your prayers. You see I yet turn to you with my complaints, as a settled and unalienable friend; do not, do not drive me from you, for I have not deserved either neglect or hatred.

To the girls, who do not write often, for Susy has written only once, and Miss Thrale owes me a letter, I earnestly recommend, as their guardian and friend, that they remember their Creator in the days of their youth.

I suppose you may wish to know how my disease is treated by the physicians. They put a blister upon my back, and two from my ear to my throat, one on a side. The blister on the back has done little, and those on the throat have not risen. I bullied and bounced,

bounced, (it sticks to our last sand,) and compelled the apothecary to make his salve according to the Edinburgh Dispensatory, that it might adhere better. I have two on now of my own prescription. They likewise give me salt of hartshorn, which I take with no great confidence, but I am satisfied that what can be done is done for me.

O God! give me comfort and confidence in Thee: forgive my sins; and, if it be thy good pleasure, relieve my diseases for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen.

I am almost ashamed of this querulous letter; but now it is written, let it go. I am, *&c.*

LETTER L. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM,

AMONG those that have enquired after me, Sir Philip is one; and Dr. Burney was one of those who came to see me. I have had no reason to complain of indifference or neglect. Dick Burney is come home five inches taller.

Yesterday in the evening I went to church, and have been to-day to see the great burning glass, which does more than was ever done before by the transmission of the rays, but is not equal in power to those which reflect them. It wastes a diamond placed in the focus, but causes no diminution of pure gold. Of the rubies exposed to its action, one was made more vivid, the other paler. To see the glass, I climbed up stairs to the garret, and then up a ladder to the leads, and talked to the artist rather too long; for

for my voice, though clear and distinct for a little while, soon tires and falters. The organs of speech are yet very feeble, but will I hope be by the mercy of God finally restored: at present, like any other weak limb, they can endure but little labour at once. Would you not have been very sorry for me when I could scarcely speak?

Fresh cantharides were this morning applied to my head, and are to be continued some time longer. If they play me no treacherous tricks, they give me very little pain.

Let me have your kindness and your prayers; and think on me, as on a man, who, for a very great portion of your life, has done you all the good he could, and desires still to be considered, Madam, your, &c.

LETTER LI. *To the Same.*

DEAREST MADAM, London, July 1, 1783.

THIS morning I took the air by a ride to Hampstead, and this afternoon I dined with the club. But fresh cantharides were this day applied to my head.

Mr. Cator called on me to day, and told that he had invited you back to Streatham. I shewed the unfitness of your return thither, till the neighbourhood should have lost its habits of depredation, and he seemed to be satisfied. He invited me very kindly and cordially to try the air of Beckenham, and pleased me very much by his affectionate attention to Miss Vezy. There is much good in his character, and much usefulness in his knowledge.

Queeney seems now to have forgotten me. Of the different appearance of the hills and vallies an ac-

count may perhaps be given, without the supposition of any prodigy. If she had been out and the evening was breezy, the exhalations would rise from the low grounds very copiously; and the wind that swept and cleared the hills, would only by its cold condense the vapours of the sheltered vallies.

Murphy is just gone from me; he visits me very kindly, and I have no unkindness to complain of.

I am sorry that Sir Philip's request was not treated with more respect, nor can I imagine what has put them so much out of humour: I hope their business is prosperous.

I hope that I recover by degrees, but my nights are restless; and you will suppose the nervous system to be somewhat enfeebled. I am, Madam, your, *&c.*

LETTER LII. *To the Same.*

London, October 9, 1783.

TWO nights ago Mr. Burke sat with me a long time; he seems much pleased with his journey. We had both seen Stonehenge this summer for the first time. I told him that the view had enabled me to confute two opinions which have been advanced about it. One that the materials are not natural stones, but an artificial composition hardened by time. This notion is as old as Camden's time; and has this strong argument to support it, that stone of that species is no where to be found. The other opinion, advanced by Dr. Charlton, is, that it was erected by the Danes.

Mr.

Mr. Bowles made me observe, that the transverse stones were fixed on the perpendicular supporters by a knob formed on the top of the upright stone, which entered into a hollow cut in the crossing stone. This is a proof that the enormous edifice was raised by a people who had not yet the knowledge of mortar; which cannot be supposed of the Danes, who came hither in ships, and were not ignorant certainly of the arts of life. This proves likewise the stones not to be factitious; for they that could mould such durable masses could do much more than make mortar, and could have continued the transverse from the upright part with the same paste.

You have doubtless seen Stonehenge; and if you have not, I should think it a hard task to make an adequate description.

It is, in my opinion, to be referred to the earliest habitation of the island, as a druidical monument of at least two thousand years; probably the most ancient work of man upon the island. Salisbury cathedral and its neighbour Stonehenge, are two eminent monuments of art and rudeness, and may shew the first essay, and the last perfection in architecture.

I have not yet settled my thoughts about the generation of light air, which I indeed once saw produced, but I was at the height of my great complaint. I have made enquiry, and shall soon be able to tell you how to fill a balloon. I am, Madam, your, &c.

LETTER LIII. *To Mrs.* THRALE.

DEAR MADAM, London, Dec. 27, 1783.

THE wearisome solitude of the long evenings did indeed suggest to me the convenience of a club in my neighbourhood, but I have been hindered from attending it by want of breath. If I can complete the scheme, you shall have the names and the regulations.

The time of the year, for I hope the fault is rather in the weather than in me, has been very hard upon me. The muscles of my breast are much convulsed. Dr. Heberden recommends opiates, of which I have such horror that I do not think of them but *in extremis*. I was, however, driven to them last night for refuge, and having taken the usual quantity, durst not go to bed, for fear of that uneasiness to which a supine posture exposes me, but rested all night in a chair with much relief, and have been to-day more warm, active, and cheerful.

You have more than once wondered at my complaint of solitude, when you hear that I am crowded with visits. *Inopem me copia fecit*. Visitors are no proper companions in the chamber of sickness. They come when I could sleep or read, they stay till I am weary, they force me to attend when my mind calls for relaxation, and to speak when my powers will hardly actuate my tongue. The amusements and consolations of langour and depression are conferred by familiar and domestick companions, which can be visited or called at will, and can occasionally be quitted or dismissed, who do not obstruct accommoda-

tion

tion by ceremony, or destroy indolence by awakening effort.

Such society I had with Levet and Williams; such I had where—I am never likely to have it more.

I wish, dear Lady, to you and my dear girls many a cheerful and pious Christmas. I am, your, &c.

LETTER LIV. *To Mrs.* Piozzi.

DEAR MADAM, London, July 8, 1784.

WHAT you have done, however I may lament it, I have no pretence to resent, as it has not been injurious to me; I therefore breathe out one sigh more of tenderness, perhaps useless, but at least sincere.

I wish that God may grant you every blessing, that you may be happy in this world for its short continuance, and eternally happy in a better state; and whatever I can contribute to your happiness I am very ready to repay, for that kindness which soothed twenty years of a life radically wretched.

Do not think slightly of the advice which I now presume to offer. Prevail upon Mr. Piozzi to settle in England: you may live here with more dignity than in Italy, and with more security; your rank will be higher, and your fortune more under your own eye. I desire not to detail all my reasons; but every argument of prudence and interest is for England, and only some phantoms of imagination seduce you to Italy.

I am afraid, however, that my counsel is vain; yet Ih ave eased my heart by giving it.

When

When Queen Mary took the resolution of sheltering herself in England, the Archbishop of St. Andrew's, attempting to dissuade her, attended on her journey; and when they came to the irremeable stream that separated the two kingdoms, walked by her side into the water, in the middle of which he seized her bridle, and with earnestness proportioned to her danger and his own affection pressed her to return. The Queen went forward.—If the parallel reaches thus far, may it go no farther.—The tears stand in my eyes.

I am going into Derbyshire, and hope to be followed by your good wishes, for I am, with great affection, your, &c.

PRAYERS,

PRAYERS,

COMPOSED BY

SAMUEL JOHNSON, LL. D.

PRAYERS.

On my Birth-Day.

September $\frac{7}{18}$, 1738.

O GOD, the Creator and Preserver of all mankind, Father of all mercies, I thine unworthy servant do give Thee most humble thanks, for all thy goodness and loving kindness to me. I bless Thee for my creation, preservation, and redemption, for the knowledge of thy son Jesus Christ, for the means of grace and the hope of glory. In the days of childhood and youth, in the midst of weakness, blindness, and danger, Thou hast protected me; amidst afflictions of mind, body, and estate, Thou hast supported me; and amidst vanity and wickedness, Thou hast spared me. Grant, O merciful Father, that I may have a lively sense of thy mercies. Create in me a contrite heart, that I may worthily lament my sins and acknowledge my wickedness, and obtain remission

mission and forgiveness, through the satisfaction of Jesus Christ. And, O Lord, enable me, by thy grace, to redeem the time I have spent in sloth, vanity, and wickedness; to make use of thy gifts to the honour of thy name; to lead a new life in thy faith, fear, and love; and finally to obtain everlasting life. Grant this, Almighty Lord, for the merits and through the mediation of our most holy and blessed Saviour Jesus Christ; to whom, with Thee and the Holy Ghost, Three Persons and One God, be all honour and glory, world without end. Amen.

Transcribed June 26, 1768.

This is the first solemn prayer, of which I have a copy. Whether I composed any before this I question.

Prayer on the Rambler.

ALMIGHTY God, the giver of all good things, without whose help all labour is ineffectual, and without whose grace all wisdom is folly; grant, I beseech Thee, that in this my undertaking, thy Holy Spirit may not be withheld from me, but that I may promote thy glory, and the salvation both of myself and others; grant this, O Lord, for the sake of Jesus Christ. Amen.

Composed

Composed by me on the Death of my Wife, and reposited among her Memorials, May 8, 1752.

DEUS EXAUDI——HEU!

April 24, 1752.

ALMIGHTY and most merciful Father, who lovest those whom Thou punishest, and turnest away thy anger from the penitent, look down with pity upon my sorrows, and grant that the affliction which it has pleased Thee to bring upon me, may awaken my conscience, enforce my resolutions of a better life, and impress upon me such conviction of thy power and goodness, that I may place in Thee my only felicity, and endeavour to please Thee in all my thoughts, words, and actions. Grant, O Lord, that I may not languish in fruitless and unavailing sorrow, but that I may consider from whose hand all good and evil is received, and may remember that I am punished for my sins, and hope for comfort only by repentance. Grant, O merciful God, that by the assistance of thy Holy Spirit I may repent, and be comforted, obtain that peace which the world cannot give, pass the residue of my life in humble resignation and cheerful obedience; and when it shall please Thee to call me from this mortal state, resign myself into thy hands with faith and confidence, and finally obtain mercy and everlasting happiness, for the sake of Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

May

May 6, 1752.

O LORD, our heavenly Father, without whom all purposes are frustrate, all efforts are vain, grant me the assistance of thy Holy Spirit, that I may not sorrow as one without hope, but may now return to the duties of my present state with humble confidence in thy protection, and so govern my thoughts, and actions, that neither business may withdraw my mind from Thee, nor idleness lay me open to vain imaginations; that neither praise may fill me with pride, nor censure with discontent: but that in the changes of this life, I may fix my heart upon the reward which Thou hast promised to them that serve Thee, and that whatever things are true, whatever things are honest, whatever things are just, whatever are pure, whatever are lovely, whatever are of good report, wherein there is virtue, wherein there is praise, I may think upon and do, and obtain mercy and everlasting happiness. Grant this, O Lord, for the sake of Jesus Christ. Amen.

Fl. Lacr.

March 28, in the morning, 1754.

O GOD, who on this day wert pleased to take from me my dear wife, sanctify to me my sorrows and reflections. Grant that I may renew and practise the resolutions which I made when thy afflicting hand was upon me. Let the remembrance of thy judgements, by which my wife is taken away, awaken me to repentance; and the sense of thy mercy, by

by which I am spared, strengthen my hope and confidence in Thee, that by the assistance and comfort of thy Holy Spirit, I may so pass through things temporal, as finally to gain everlasting happiness, and to pass, by a holy and happy death, into the joy which Thou hast prepared for those that love Thee. Grant this, O Lord, for the sake of Jesus Christ. Amen.

Jan. 23, 1759.

The day on which my dear Mother was buried.

ALMIGHTY God, merciful Father, in whose hands are life and death, sanctify unto me the sorrow which I now feel. Forgive me whatever I have done unkindly to my mother, and whatever I have omitted to do kindly. Make me to remember her good precepts and good example, and to reform my life according to thy holy word, that I may lose no more opportunities of good. I am sorrowful, O Lord; let not my sorrow be without fruit. Let it be followed by holy resolutions, and lasting amendment, that when I shall die like my mother, I may be received to everlasting life.

I commend, O Lord, so far as it may be lawful, into thy hands, the soul of my departed mother, beseeching Thee to grant her whatever is most beneficial to her in her present state.

O Lord, grant me thy Holy Spirit, and have mercy upon me for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen.

And, O Lord, grant unto me that am now about to return to the common comforts and business of the world, such moderation in all enjoyments, such diligence

gence in honest labour, and such purity of mind, that, amidst the changes, miseries, or pleasures of life, I may keep my mind fixed upon Thee, and improve every day in grace, till I shall be received into thy kingdom of eternal happiness.

March 25, 1759.

ALMIGHTY God, heavenly Father, who hast graciously prolonged my life to this time, and by the change of outward things which I am now to make, callest me to a change of inward affections, and to a reformation of my thoughts, words, and practices: vouchsafe, merciful Lord, that this call may not be in vain. Forgive me whatever has been amiss in the state which I am now leaving, idleness, and neglect of thy word and worship. Grant me the grace of thy Holy Spirit, that the course which I am now beginning may proceed according to thy laws, and end in the enjoyment of thy favour. Give me, O Lord, pardon and peace, that I may serve Thee with humble confidence, and after this life, enjoy thy presence in eternal happiness.

And, O Lord, so far as it may be lawful for me, I commend to thy Fatherly goodness, my father, my brother, my wife, my mother. I beseech Thee to look mercifully upon them, and grant them whatever may most promote their present and eternal joy.

O Lord, hear my prayers for Jesus Christ's sake, to whom, with Thee and the Holy Ghost, Three Persons and One God, be all honour and glory, world without end. Amen.

O Lord,

O Lord, let the change, which I am now making in outward things, produce in me such a change of manners, as may fit me for the great change through which my wife has passed.

Jan. 1, primâ mane, 1770.

ALMIGHTY God, by whose mercy I am permitted to behold the beginning of another year, succour with thy help, and bless with thy favour, the creature whom thou vouchsafest to preserve. Mitigate, if it shall seem best unto Thee, the diseases of my body, and compose the disorders of my mind. Dispel my terrors; and grant that the time which Thou shalt yet allow me, may not pass unprofitably away. Let not pleasure seduce me, idleness lull me, or misery depress me. Let me perform to thy glory, and the good of my fellow-creatures, the work which Thou shalt yet appoint me; and grant, that as I draw nearer to my dissolution, I may, by the help of thy Holy Spirit, feel my knowledge of Thee increased, my hope exalted, and my faith strengthened; that when the hour which is coming shall come, I may pass by a holy death to everlasting happiness, for the sake of Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

January 1, 2 P.M. 1777.

ALMIGHTY Lord, merciful Father, vouchsafe to accept the thanks which I now presume to offer Thee, for the prolongation of my life. Grant, O Lord, that as my days are multiplied, my good resolutions

lutions may be strengthened, my power of resisting temptations increased, and my struggles with snares and obstructions invigorated. Relieve the infirmities both of my mind and body. Grant me such strength as my duties may require, and such diligence as may improve those opportunities of good that shall be offered me. Deliver me from the intrusion of evil thoughts. Grant me true repentance of my past life; and as I draw nearer and nearer to the grave, strengthen my faith, enliven my hope, extend my charity, and purify my desires; and so help me, by thy Holy Spirit, that when it shall be thy pleasure to call me hence, I may be received to everlasting happiness, for the sake of thy son Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

Our Father—

Sept. 18, 1779.

ALMIGHTY God, Creator of all things, in whose hands are life and death, glory be to Thee for all thy mercies, and for the prolongation of my life to the common age of man. Pardon me, O gracious God, all the offences which in the course of seventy years I have committed against thy holy laws, and all negligences of those duties which Thou hast required. Look with pity upon me, take not from me thy Holy Spirit, but enable me to pass the days which Thou shalt yet vouchsafe to grant me, in thy fear, and to thy glory; and accept, O Lord, the remains of a mispent life, that when thou shalt call me to another state, I may be received to everlasting happiness, for the sake of Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

June

June 22, 1781.

ALMIGHTY God, who art the giver of all good, enable me to remember, with due thankfulness, the comforts and advantages which I have enjoyed by the friendship of Henry Thrale, for whom, so far as is lawful, I humbly implore thy mercy in his present state. O Lord, since thou hast been pleased to call him from this world, look with mercy on those whom he has left; continue to succour me by such means as are best for me, and repay to his relations the kindness which I have received from him; protect them in this world from temptations and calamities, and grant them happiness in the world to come, for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen.

On leaving Mr. Thrale's Family.

October 6, 1782.

ALMIGHTY God, Father of all mercy, help me, by thy grace, that I may with humble and sincere thankfulness remember the comforts and conveniencies which I have enjoyed at this place, and that I may resign them with holy submission, equally trusting in thy protection when Thou givest and when Thou takest away. Have mercy upon me, O Lord, have mercy upon me.

To thy fatherly protection, O Lord, I commend this family. Bless, guide, and defend them, that they may so pass through this world, as finally to enjoy in thy presence everlasting happiness, for Jesus Christ's sake. Amen.

[The following Prayer was composed and used by Doctor Johnson previous to his receiving the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, on Sunday December 5, 1784.

ALMIGHTY and most merciful Father, I am now, as to human eyes it seems, about to commemorate, for the * last time, the death of thy Son Jesus Christ our Saviour and Redeemer. Grant, O Lord, that my whole hope and confidence may be in his merits and thy mercy; enforce and accept my imperfect repentance; make this commemoration available to the confirmation of my faith, the establishment of my hope, and the enlargement of my charity; and make the death of thy Son Jesus Christ effectual to my redemption. Have mercy upon me, and pardon the multitude of my offences. Bless my friends; have mercy upon all men. Support me, by thy Holy Spirit, in the days of weakness, and at the hour of death; and receive me, at my death, to everlasting happiness, for the sake of Jesus Christ. Amen.

* He died the 13th following.

INDEX.

☞ The Roman Numerals refer to the Volume, and the Figures to the Page.

A.

ABERBROTHICK, account of the town of, viii. 212. Of the ruins of the monastery there, 214.

Aberdeen, account of, viii. 217. Dr. Johnson meets with an old acquaintance, Sir Alexander Gordon, there, 217. Account of the King's College, 219. Account of the Marischal College, 220. Account of the Library, 220. The course of education there, 221. Account of the English chapel, 222.

Abilities, the reward of, to be accepted when offered, and not sought for in another place, exemplified in the story of Gelaleddin of Bassora, vii. 300.

Abouzaid, the dying advice of Morad his father to him, vi. 299.

Absence, a destroyer of friendship, vii. 89.

Abyssinia, preface to the translation of Father Lobo's voyage to, ii. 265.

Academical education, one of Milton's objections to it, ix. 88.

Acastus, an instance of the commanding influence of curiosity, vi. 60.

Achilles, his address to a Grecian prince supplicating life, improper for a picture, vii. 180.

Action (dramatick), the laws of it stated and remarked, vi. 97.

Action (exercise), necessary to the health of the body, and the vigour of the mind, v. 81. 87. The source of cheerfulness and vivacity, 86.

Action (in oratory), the want of, considered, vii. 361. Tends to no good in any part of oratory, 362.

Actions, every man the best relater of his own, vii. 259. The injustice of judging of them by the event, iii. 218.

Adam unparadised, a MS. supposed to be the embryo of Paradise Lost, viii. 3.

Adams, Parson, of Fielding, not Edward, but William Young, xi. 339.

Addison, Joseph, supposed to have taken the plan of his Dialogues on Medals from Dryden's Essay on Dramatick Poetry, ix. 322.

His life, x. 73. Born at Milston, in Wiltshire, May 1, 1672, 73. The various schools at which he received instruction, 73. Cultivates an early friendship with Steele, 74. Lends 100 *l.* to Steele, and reclaims it by an execution, 75. Entered at Oxford, 1687, 75. Account of his Latin poems, 76. Account of his English poems, 76. On being introduced by Congreve to Mr. Montague, becomes a courtier, 78. Obtains a pension of 300 *l.* a year, that he might be enabled to travel, 78. Publishes his travels, 79. Succeeds Mr. Locke as Commissioner of Appeals, as a reward for his poem *The Battle of Blenheim*, 81. Went to Hanover with Lord Halifax, 81. Made Under-secretary of State, 81. Writes the opera of Rosamond, 81. Assists Steele in writing the Tender Husband, 81. Goes to Ireland with Lord Wharton as Secretary, 81. Made Keeper of the Records in Birmingham's Tower, 82. The opposite characters of him and Wharton, 82. His reason for resolving not to remit any fees to his friends, 82. Wrote in the Tatler, 83. Wrote in the Spectators, 83. His tragedy of Cato brought on the stage, and supported both by the Whigs and Tories, 89. 91. Cato warmly attacked by Dennis, 92. Other honours and enmities shewed to Cato, 93. Cato translated both into Italian and Latin, 93. Writes in the Guardian, 94. His signature in the Spectator and Guardian, 95. Declared by Steele to have been the author of the Drummer, with the story on which that comedy is founded, 95. Wrote several political pamphlets, 96. Appointed Secretary to the Regency, 98. In 1715 publishes the Freeholder, 98. Marries the Countess of Warwick, Aug. 2, 1716, 99. Secretary of State, 1717, but unfit for the place, and therefore resigns it, 100. Sir J. Hawkins's Defence of the Character he had given of Addison in his History of Musick against the author of the Biog. Brit. 104. Purposes writing a tragedy on the death of Socrates, 100. Engages in his Defence of the Christian religion, 101. Had a design of writing an English dictionary, 101. His controversy with Steele on the Peerage Bill, 102. During his last illness sends for Gay, informs him that he had injured him, and promises, if he recovered, to recompence him, 105. Sends for the young Earl of Warwick, that he might see how a Christian ought to die, 105. Died June 17, 1719, 106. His character, 106. The course of his familiar day, 109. His literary character, 112. Account of his works, 113. Extracts from Dennis's Observations on Cato, 119. Considered as a critick, 137. Commended as a teacher of wisdom, 140. Character of his prose works, 140. Example of his disinterested conduct in disposing of places, 141. A conversation with Pope on Tickell's translation of Homer, 233. Becomes a rival of Pope, xi. 95. Supposed to have been the translator of the Iliad, published under the name of Tickell, 99. His critical capacity remarked, v. 91. 140. 143. Observations on his tragedy of Cato, xi. 99.

Admiration, and ignorance, their mutual and reciprocal operation, v. 25.

Adventurer, No. xxxiv. iii. 109. No. xxxix. 116. No. xli. 123. No. xlv. 129. No. l. 135. No. liii. 141. No. lviii. 147. No. lxii. 155. No. lxvii. 162. No. lxix. 170. No. lxxiv. 177. No. lxxxi. 183. No. lxxxiv. 190. No. lxxxv. 197. No. xcii. 203. No. xcv. 212. No. xcix. 218. No. cii. 225. No. cvii. 232. No. cviii. 238. No. cxi. 244. No. cxv. 250. No. cxix. 257. No. cxx. 263. No. cxxvi. 269. No. cxxviii. 275. No. cxxxi. 282. No. cxxxvii. 288. No. cxxxviii. 295.

Adversaries, the advantage of contending with illustrious ones, xii. 194.

Adversity, a season fitted to convey the most salutary and useful instruction to the mind, vi. 58. The appointed instrument of promoting our virtue and happiness, 60.

Advertisements, on pompous and remarkable, vii. 160.

Advice, good, too often disregarded, v. 97. The causes of this assigned, 98. Vanity often the apparent motive of giving it, 99. When most offensive and ineffectual, vi. 90.

Affability, the extensive influence of this amiable quality, vi. 2.

Affectation, the vanity and folly of indulging it, iv. 131. 133. Wherein it properly differs from hypocrisy, 134. The great absurdity of it exposed in the character of Gelasimus, vi. 228.

Afflictions, proper methods of obtaining consolation under them, iv. 113. 332. Inseparable from human life, vi. 268. The benefits of, 270.

Africa, progress of the discoveries made on that coast by the Portuguese, ii. 273.

Age, the present an age of authors, iii. 251.

Agriculture, its extensive usefulness considered, vi. 28. Thoughts on, both ancient and modern, ii. 440. Productions of, alone sufficient for the support of an industrious people, 440. In high consideration in Egypt, 441. The many antient writers on that subject, 444. The enrichment of England, 445. A proper subject for honorary rewards, 447. Superior to trade and manufactures, 448. Danger to be apprehended from the neglect of, 453. An art which government ought to protect, every proprietor of lands to practise, and every enquirer into nature to improve, 453. Account of, at Raasay, one of the Hebrides, ix. 283. Bad state of, at Ostig, in Sky, 305. The raising of the rents of estates in Scotland considered, 326.

Ajut; his history, vi. 267. 276.

Akenside, Dr. *Mark*, his opinion of Dyer's Fleece, xi. 275. His life, 335. Son of a butcher at Newcastle-upon-Tyne, born 1721. Designed for a dissenting minister, but turns his mind to physick, 335. Pleasures of Imagination published, 1744, 356. Studies at Leyden, and becomes M. D. 1744, 356. An enthusiastick friend to liberty, and a lover of contradiction, 357. Practises physick at Northampton and Hampstead, 358. Settles at London, 358. Allowed 300 *l.* a year by Mr. Dyson, 358. By his writings obtains the name both of a wit and scholar, 359. Died 1770, 359. Character of his works, 359

Alabaster, Roxana, commended, ix. 87.

Alacrity, the cultivation of it the source of personal and social pleasure, v. 18, 19.

Albion, in lat. 30, account of the friendly inhabitants found there by Drake, xii. 137.

Alexandrian Library, its loss lamented, vii. 263.

Aliger, his character, vi. 354.

Allen, Mr. of Bath, praised by Pope in his Satires, xi. 135.

All's Well that Ends Well, observations on Shakspeare's, ii. 147.

Almamolin, the dying speech of Nouradin, his father, to him, v. 314. His thoughtless extravagance, 316. The excellent advice which the sage gave him, 318.

Altilia, her coquetry described, vi. 246.

Amazons, observations on the history of the, vii. 351. Old maids in England most like Amazons, 352.

Amazons, of the Pen, iii. 252.

Ambition, generally proportioned to capacity, xii. 17. A quality natural to youth, iv. 97. The peculiar vanity of it in the lower stations of life, 420, 421. A destroyer of friendship, vii. 90. Characterized, viii. 268.

America, Taxation no Tyranny, or, an answer to the Resolutions and Address of the American Congress [1775], x. 155. Motives urged by patriots against the taxation of, 157. Examination into our claim to the right of taxing it, and of their objections to be taxed, 162. The plea of want of representation examined, 172. Their claims of exemption from taxation from their charters examined, 179. Objection to taxation made by an *old member*, examined, 181. Proceedings of the congress of Philadelphia examined, 185. Pleas of the Bostonians exposed, 188. Their resolutions and address exposed, in a supposed address from the Cornish men, 194. Some of the arguments made use of against our taxing it examined, 199. First incited to rebellion from European intelligence, 202. Considerations on the Indians granting their lands to foreign nations, 211. Difficulty of ascertaining boundaries, 282. The power of the French there, 1756, 287. Colonies first settled there in the time of Elizabeth, 294. Continued in the reign of James I. 299. Colony first sent to Canada by the French, 301. The first discovery of Newfoundland by Cabot, and the settlement from thence to Georgia considered, 314. The encroachment of the French on our back settlements examined, 315.

Amicus, his reflections on the deplorable case of prostitutes, v. 231.

Amoret, Lady Sophia Murray celebrated by Waller under that name, ix. 233.

Amusements, by what regulations they may be rendered useful, v. 113.

Anacreon, Ode ix. translated, i. 351.

Anatomy, cruelty in anatomical researches reprobated, vii. 66.

Andrew's, St. account of the city of, viii. 207. The ruins of the cathedral, 209. Account of the university, 210. Expence of

education there for a scholar of the highest class, for the term of 7 months, 15 *l.* for the lower class, 10 *l.* 210.

Angelo, Michael, observations on his style of painting, vii. 318.

Anger, the necessity of checking and regulating it, iv. 66. A tumultuous and dangerous passion, derived from pride, 68. Exposed to contempt and derision, 70. The pernicious effects of it, 71, 72.

Animal food, on the choice and rejection of various sorts of, viii. 277.

Anningate and Ajut, the Greenland lovers, their history, vi. 267, 276.

Anoch, account of, viii. 244. Consists only of three huts, 244. Account of the landlord and his house, 245.

Anson, Lord, little advantage to have been expected, had his voyage succeeded to the extent of his wishes, viii. 100.

Anthea, her disagreeable character, iv. 220, 225.

Antony and Cleopatra, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 214.

Application, desultory, injurious to our improvements in knowledge and virtue, v. 388. Active and diligent, strongly enforced by a view of the shortness and uncertainty of human life, 400.

Arbuthnot, Dr. with Pope, supposed to have assisted Gay in writing Three Hours after Marriage, x. 239. Sketch of his character, xi. 133. The first volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus published by him, in conjunction with Pope and Swift, 136.

Arcades, written by Milton, about 1637, ix. 92.

Archery, the importance of, in former times, xii. 314.

Arches, considerations on elliptical and semicircular, which is to be preferred, ii. 431.

Architecture, the degenerate state of at Rome, ii. 436.

Argatio, his character, iv. 179.

Ariosto, some lines of, from which Pope seems to have borrowed the sentiments of his own epitaph, xi. 216.

Aristophanes, licentiousness of his writings exorbitant, iii. 3. The only author from whom a just idea of the comedy of his age may be drawn, 5. History of, 16. Praise and censure of, 17. Plutarch's sentiments upon, 23. Justification of, 25.

Aristotle, his sentiments of what is requisite to the perfection of a tragedy, v. 429. Account of a MS. translation of his politics in the library at Aberdeen, viii. 224.

Armidel, in the Isle of Sky, account of, viii. 262.

Arms of the Highlanders, account of, viii. 347.

Army, causes of the superiority of the officers of France to those of England, ii. 373. Made formidable by regularity and discipline, ii. 427.

Art, terms of, the necessity of, vii. 280.

Ascham, Roger, his life, xii. 308. Born at Kirby Wiske, near North Allerton, 1515, 308. Educated with the sons of Mr. Wingfield, and entered at Cambridge, 1530, 309. Applied to the study of Greek, 309. A favourer of the Protestant opinion, 309. Chosen Fellow of St. John's, 1534, 310. M. A. and tutor, 1537, 312. Not less eminent as a writer of Latin than as a teacher of Greek, 313. Fond of archery, 323. Published his Toxophilus 1544,

1544, 314. Receives a pension of 10*l.* from Henry VIII. 317. The equivalent value of his pension, at this time, considered, 317. Orator of the university, 319. Taught prince Edward, princess Elizabeth, and many of the nobility, writing, 319. Receives a pension from Edward VI. 319. Tutor to the princess Elizabeth, which he quits without consent, 319. Secretary to Sir Richard Morisine, ambassador to Germany, 320. On the death of Edw. VI. loses his pension and places, 321. Latin Secretary to Philip and Mary, 322. Enquiry how he could as a Protestant hold the place under Philip and Mary, 322. Favoured by Card. Pole, 324. Continued in the same employment under Elizabeth, 324. Prebend of Westwang, in the church of York, 324. Died 1574, 327. His character, 327.

Assurance, not always connected with abilities, vi. 114.

Astrology, the credit given to it in the last century, ix. 198.

Astronomer, the cause of uneasiness in an, iii. 418. Supposes himself to have the power of the winds, rain, and seasons, 419. Leaves his directions to Imlac, 421. Pekuah wishes to become his scholar, 422. His opinion of the choice of life, 424. His superstition removed, by entering into the amusements of life, 433.

As you like it, observations on Shakspeare's, ii. 202.

Athanatus, his just reflections on the near prospect of death, iv. 344. 350.

Atheists, their industry in spreading their opinions, x. 304.

Atterbury, Bp. his inscription on the monument of Philips, ix. 297. Pope examined before the Lords on the trial of the Bishop, xi. 104. Presents Pope with a Bible at their last interview, 105.

Avarice, the vanity of, i. 216. Fatal effects of insatiable, iv. 249. Always poor, vii. 293.

Aubigney, Lady, carries a commission from Charles I. to Sir Nicholas Crispe, ix. 243.

Auchinleck, Lord, his seat at Auchinleck described, viii. 408.

Augustus, review of Blackwell's Memoirs of the Court of, ii. 375.

Augustus Fort, account of, viii. 243.

Auknasheals, account of the village of, viii. 252.

Aurantius, his unjust and abusive treatment of Liberalis, vi. 141.

Aureng Zebe, a tragedy, remarks upon some improprieties in it, v. 347.

Austerities, and mortifications, their use in religion, v. 251.

Authors, have a desire of appearing to have done every thing by chance, x. 187. Criticism a proper check on bad ones, xi. 187. The impropriety of editors in altering the posthumous works of authors, iv. 227. Character of, not to be collected from their works, 228. The complaint of surreptitious editions enquired into, xii. 274. The difficulty of his first address, iv. 1. By what methods he may be introduced with advantage to the public, 3, 4. Often deluded by the visionary and vain anticipations of happiness, 11. The neglect of him the most dreadful mortification, 12. The folly of endeavouring to acquire fame merely by writing, 13. Some peculiar discouragements to which he

he is exposed, 13. His proper task is to instruct and entertain, 14. The difficulty of executing it with advantage, 14. Increase by the caprice and ill nature of his readers, 14. His acquisition of fame difficult, and his possession of it precarious, 139. The great difference between the productions of the same author accounted for, 141. Naturally fond of their own productions, 362. Many deluded by the vain hope of acquiring immortal reputation, v. 221. Their literary fame destined to various measures of duration, 223. vi. 35. Their being esteemed, principally owing to the influence of curiosity or pride, v. 224. Their proper rank and usefulness in society, 411. Characters of the manufacturers of literature, 32. As they grow more elegant become less intelligible, vii. 143. Difficulties they find in publishing their works, 222. The precarious fame of, 236. Who write on subjects which have been pre-occupied by great men generally sink, 265. Journal of an, 267. Seldom write their own lives, 405. Their lives full of incident, 406. Signs of knowing how a publication is received, 406. Writing their own lives recommended, 408. Their misfortune in not having their works understood by the readers, iii. 149. Not to be charged with plagiarism merely for similarity of sentiment, 213. Who communicate truth with success, among the first benefactors to mankind, 213. Hints for them to attract the favour and notice of mankind, 215. No want of topick whilst mankind are mutable, 217. The present age an age of authors, 251. Want of patronage complained of, 253. Qualifications necessary for an, 254. Their importance to the welfare of the publick, 288. The good they do to mankind compared to a single drop in a shower of rain, 291. Who provide innocent amusement, may be considered as benefactors to life, 292. Their condition with regard to themselves, 295. Their expectation before publication considered, 296. The pleasure and difficulties of composition, 297. After all, the publick judgement frequently perverted from the merit of his work, 299. The merit of his works ascertained by the test of time which they have retained fame, ii. 133. A century the term fixed for the test of literary merit, 135. The genius of the age to be considered in order to fix the abilities of, 69. The expectation they form of the reception of their labours, 312. Should not promise more than they can perform, 375. May compile new works with old materials, 375. Some supposed to write for the sake of making sport for superior beings, viii. 47. No longer master of a book which he has given to the publick, ii. 389.

Authority, the accidental prescriptions of it often confounded with the laws of nature, vi. 96.

Authority, parental, frequently exerted with rigour, vi. 45.

Autumn, an ode, i. 329.

B.

BACON, Francis, Lord, the life prefixed to the edition of his works, 1740, written by Mallett, xi. 350. His severe reflection on beautiful women, iv. 246. Was of opinion that his moral essays would be of longer duration than his other works, v. 226. Observations on his character, iii. 282.

Bail, the danger of becoming, exemplified in the character of Serenus, iii. 155.

Baillet, his collection of critical decisions remarked, v. 138.

Bamff, account of that town, viii. 226.

Bards, uncertainty in the account of them, viii. 344.

Bargains, the folly of buying bargains exposed, vii. 138.

Barra, Island of, account of, viii. 364. Horses there not more than twenty-six inches high, 364.

Barratier, John Philip, his life, xii. 149. Son of a Calvinist minister, and born at Schwabach, 1720-21, 149. His early acquirements of learning, 150. In his ninth year could speak Latin, German, and French, equally well, 150. In his eleventh year translated the Travels of Rabbi Benjamin from the Hebrew into French, with notes, 151. The method by which his father taught him the languages, 153. Published Anti-Artemonius, 1735, 156. Patronized for his learning by the king of Prussia, 1735, 156. Died 1740, 159.

Bashfulness, sometimes the effect of studious retirement, vi. 106. 114. Frequently produced by too high an opinion of our own importance, 116.

Barretti, translation of some lines at the end of his Easy Phraseology, v. 163.

Bavaria, Elector of, invested with the imperial dignity, xii. 244. Died 1745, 268.

Baxter, Mr. Richard, incitement he often urged to the present exercise of charity, v. 4.

Bayes, that character designed for Dryden, ix. 350. That character also supposed to be designed for Davenant and Sir Robert Howard, 350.

Beaumont and Fletcher, their plots in Spanish stories, ix. 230.

Beauty, disgustingly described, ix. 35. A mental quality, merely relative and comparative, v. 128. The disadvantages incident to such as are celebrated for it, 377. The folly of anxiety and solicitude upon account of it, 378. The natural principle of, vii. 330. The most general form of nature the most beautiful, 330. Depends much on the general received ideas, 332. Novelty said to be one of the causes of beauty, 333. Misfortunes which frequently attend it, 25.

Beggars, the best method of reducing the number, ii. 399. As numerous in Scotland as in England, viii. 216. Account of, in the Hebrides, 366.

Bellaria, her character, vi. 293.

Bellarmine, Card. writes in defence of Paul V. against the Venetians, xii. 6.

Bemoin (a Prince of Africa), account of him, ii. 281. Is driven from his kingdom, visits Portugal, and becomes a Christian, 282. On his return to regain his kingdom, through the assistance of the Portuguese, is stabbed by the Portuguese commander, 283.

Beneficence, mutual, the great end of society, iv. 358. The extent and proportion of it to be adjusted by the rules of justice, v. 63.

Ben Hannase Rabbi Abraham, his account of the power of the magnet in the detection of incontinence, vi. 341.

Benserade, Mons. translation of his lines, *a son lit*, i. 356.

Bentley, Dr. his saying on Pope's translation of Homer, xi. 184.

Bernardi, John, account of him, xi. 203. Died in Newgate in 1736, after being confined near forty years, for being concerned with Rookwood in his plot against K. William, without being brought to a trial, 203.

Betterton, a picture of him painted by Pope, xi. 74.

Bible, the veneration always paid to sacred history, ix. 55.

Biography, impediments in the way of, ix. 104. By what means it is rendered disgustful and useless, v. 385. A species of writing entertaining and instructive, 386. Most eagerly read of any kind of writing, vii. 339. More useful than history, 339. Every man the best writer of his own story, 340. Difficulties in writing the life of another, 341. Few authors write their own lives, whilst statesmen, generals, &c. frequently do, 405. The necessity of adhering to truth in, xi. 198.

Biographia Britannica, many untruths in that publication in the life of Dr. E. Young, xi. 335.

Birch, Thomas, Εις Βιρχιον, i. 378.

Black Friars Bridge, considerations on the plans offered for the construction of, ii. 431.

Blackmore, Sir Richard, charged by Dryden with stealing the plan of Prince Arthur from him, ix. 365. Libels Dryden in his Satire upon Wit, 379. His life, x. 202. Born at Corsham, in Wiltshire, 202. Educated at Westminster, and entered at Oxford 1668, 202. Made Doctor of physick at Padua, 202. For a short time a schoolmaster, 203. Fellow of the College of Physicians April 12, 1687, 203. Resided at Sadler's Hall, Cheapside, 203. Wrote for fame, or to engage poetry in the cause of virtue, 204. Published his Prince Arthur 1695, 204. Made Physician in ordinary to K. William, and knighted, 205. His Paraphrase of Job 1700, 206. His Satire on Wit, the same year, 207. Creation, a philosophical poem, 1712, 208. His account of wit, 212. Observations on the Tale of a Tub, 214. Extract from his Essay on the Spleen, 215. Censor of the College of Physicians 1716, 216. His New Version of Psalms 1721, 216. His Alfred 1723, 217. Becomes despised as a poet, and neglected as a physician, 217. Wrote many books on physick, 217. His censure of Hippocrates's Aphorisms, 218. His opinion of learning, 219. Died Oct. 8, 1729. His character, and as an author, 220. Extract from his Prince Arthur, 223.

Blackwell,

Blackwell, Thomas, review of his Memoirs of the Court of Augustus, ii. 375. His vanity censured, 376.

Blake, Robert, Admiral, his life, xii. 41. Son of a merchant, and born at Bridgewater 1598, 41. Entered at Oxford 1615, where he continued to 1623, 41. On being refused a fellowship of Wadham College, retires to the country, 42. Chosen Member for Bridgewater, by the Puritan party, 1640, 42. Declares for the Parliament, and raises a troop of dragoons, 43. Governor of Taunton 1645, which he defends against Lord Goring, 43. Commissioner of the Navy 1648-9, 43. Sent in pursuit of Prince Rupert, whom he drives into the Tagus, 44. Takes seventeen and burns three Portuguese ships, 44. Takes a French man of war, valued at one million, 44. Drives Prince Rupert into Carthagena, 45. Attacks the Prince in the harbour of Malaga, 45. Takes a French man of war in the Mediterranean, 45. His conduct in the war with Holland 1652, 46. His opinion that it is not the business of a seaman to mind state affairs, 54. Sent with a fleet into the Mediterranean 1654, 56. Forces Algiers to submission 1656, 56. Obliges Tunis and Tripoli to submit to him, 56. Obliges the Governor of Malaga to give up a priest who had beat some sailors for paying no respect to a procession of the host, 57. Destroys the plate fleet of Spain 1656, 58. Died at sea, and buried in Henry VIIth's Chapel, 60. After the Restoration, his body taken up, and thrown into a pit in St. Margaret's Church-yard, 60. His military character, by Lord Clarendon, 61. His moral character, by the author of Lives English and Foreign, 61. Got his brother discharged from the command of a ship for not having done his duty, 62.

Blank Verse, characterized, xi. 360.

Blount, Martha, some account of her acquaintance with Pope, xi. 143.

Bluster, Squire, some account of his infamous character, vi. 9.

Body Natural and Body Politick, the parallel between, vii. 135.

Boerhaave, Herman, M. D. his life, xii. 11. Born at Voorhout, near Leyden 1668, 11. His character of his father, 12. Designed for the ministry, 12. A stubborn ulcer on his thigh the cause of his turning his thoughts to medicine, 13. His progress in learning at Leyden, 14. Loses his father 1682, 14. His diligence at the University, 15. Continues in the study of Divinity, 16. His fortune being exhausted by his education, he reads Lectures in Mathematicks, 17. Begins to study Physick, 17. Engages in the practice of Chemistry, 18. Makes researches in botanical knowledge, 19. Takes the M. D. degree at Hardwich 1693, 19. Designs to obtain a licence to preach, but finds difficulties, from being suspected of atheism, 20. Cause of that suspicion, 20. Begins the practice of Physick, 21. Invited to settle at the Hague, but refuses it, 22. Elected professor of Physick 1701, 23. Recommends the study of Hippocrates, and reads Lectures as well in Chemistry as Physick, 23. Invited to the Professorship of Physick at Gottengen, which he refuses, 24. Recommends Mathematicks in the science of Physick,

Physick, 24. Advanced to the highest degrees of the University 1714, 25. Makes an Oration, recommending the attaining to certainty in Natural Philosophy, 25. This Oration opposed by the Professor of Francker, who at length submits to him, 26. Elected member of the Academy of Sciences at Paris 1728, 27. Professor of Chemistry at Leyden 1718, 27. Violently afflicted with the gout 1722, 28. Seized with a violent fever 1727, 29. Resigns his Professorships of Botany and Chemistry 1726, 30. Visited by patients from all parts of Europe, 31. His readiness at discovering disorders, 31. His own account of his last illness, 31. His opinion of the soul, 33. Died 1738, 34. His person described, 34. His character, 34. Catalogue of his works, 39. His serious reflection on the execution of criminals, v. 272.

Boerhaave, James, character of him, by his son Herman Boerhaave, xii. 11.

Boetius, Hector (First President of the King's College, Aberdeen), account of him, viii. 219. His revenue, as President, forty Scottish marks, about 2 *l.* 4 *s.* 6 *d.* 219.

Boileau, his opinion of Epick Poetry, ix. 364. His sentiments on the power of diction, vi. 164.

Bolingbroke, Lord, supposed to have declared his opinions to Mr. Hooke, though he concealed them from Pope, xi. 127. Pope leaves his MS papers to him, 145. Burns 1500 copies of the Patriot King, printed by Pope without his knowledge, 146. Employs Mallett to traduce the memory of Pope, and Warburton defends it, 146. Leaves his works to Mallett, 352.

Bombasine, Mrs. her character, iv. 74.

Books, the study of them not sufficient to constitute literary eminence, vi. 86. Observations on the multiplication of, vii. 343. Compilations in general useless, 343. Multiplication of books distracts choice, and disappoints enquiry, 376. Of travels, most generally read of any, and in general disappoint their readers, 386. How they tend to the civilization of mankind, ix. 150. The various motives to reading, 152.

Booksellers, their treatment of authors complained of, vii. 223.

Bower, Archibald, patronized by Lord Lyttleton, xi. 384.

Boyle Robert, philosophy much improved by his discoveries, v. 225. His opinion of the best expedients for promoting manufactures, vi. 352.

Bracelet, observations on the re-appearance of it, vii. 155. Proposal to make them a mark of distinction of the character or temper of the wearer, 156. Proper emblems for soldiers to wear on bracelets, 158.

Braidwood, Mr. account of his academy at Edinburgh for the deaf and dumb, viii. 410.

Brazil, account of the Indians on that coast, xii. 108.

Brevity, on what occasions it is necessary and useful in an author, iv. 5.

Bridges, considerations on the strength of arches for bridges, ii. 432.

Bristol and London, delineated by Savage, x. 386.
Britain, Great. See *Great Britain.*
Brodæus, Græcorum epigrammatum versiones metricæ, i. 384.
Brogues, those made use of in the isles of Sky, described, viii. 267.
Broom, Betty, history of her life, vii. 100. Educated in a charity school, 100. Objected to as a servant, because she could read and work, 101. Goes to London, and an account of the various places she engaged in there, 102, 113. Five hundred pounds left her by her mistress, with which she resolves to retire into the country, and teach poor girls to read and write, 116.
Broome, William, born in Cheshire, xi. 49. Educated upon the foundation at Eton, and sent to St. John's College, 49. In conjunction with Ozell and Oldisworth, translates the Iliad, 50. Assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, 50. Some pieces of his poetry in Pope's Miscellanies, 50. Assists Pope in the translation of the Odyssey, 50. Wrote all the notes to the Odyssey, 51.
Browne, Edward, M. D. his life, xii. 271. Son of Sir T. Browne, born at Norwich 1642, 271. Educated at Norwich, first entered at Cambridge, and removed to Oxford, 272. Travelled through Germany, Austria, Hungary, and Thessaly, 1668 and 1669, 293. Published his Travels, 293. Physician to Charles II. and Bartholomew Hospital, 294. Assists in the translation of Plutarch's Lives, 294. President of the College of Physicians, and died 1708, 294.
Browne, Thomas, answers Dryden's Hind and Panther, ix. 360. Some account of him, 361.
Browne, Sir Thomas, his life, xii. 271. Descended from a family in Cheshire, and born at London 1605, 271. Educated at Winchester, 271. Deprived of part of his fortune by a guardian, 272. Entered Gentleman Commoner at Oxford 1623, 272. Practised Physick in Oxfordshire, 272. Goes to Ireland with his father-in-law, 272. Travels through France and Italy, 272. Created M. D. at Leyden, 273. Returns to London about 1634, 273. Wrote Religio Medici 1635, 273. History of that publication, 274. Translated into Latin, Italian, German, Dutch, and French, 278. Settled at Norwich 1636, 279. Incorporated M. D. at Oxford 1637, 279. Married Mrs. Mileham 1641, 279. Printed his Enquiry into Vulgar Errors 1646, 280. Writes his Hydriotaphia 1658, 282. His account of the belief of the Antients of a Future State, 283. His Treatise on the Garden of Cyrus, 284. His partiality to quincunx figures, 284. Two collections of his posthumous works, one published by Dr. Tenison, the other 1722, 286. Account of these collections, 286. Chosen Honorary Fellow of the College of Physicians 1665, 291. Knighted by Charles II. 1671, 291. Died at Norwich 1682, 292. His epitaph, 292. His character by Mr. Whitefoot, 294. Remarks on his style of writing, 303. Some expressions in his works tending to deism and atheism accounted for, 304.
Browny (the fairy), account of, viii. 338.

Brumoy's Greek theatre, general conclusion to, iii. 1.

Brun, Le, saying of Prior to the king of France on the paintings of, x. 160.

Buccarelli, the propriety of his attack of Fort Egmont considered, viii. 113.

Buckingham, Edmund, Duke of, Pope's epitaph on him, with the Visitor's criticisms, xi. 157.

Buckinghamshire, John Sheffield, Duke of, characterizes Dryden under the character of Bayes, in the Rehearsal, ix. 349. His life, x. 148. Son of Edmund Earl of Mulgrave, was born 1649, 148. Not satisfied with his tutor, undertakes his own education at twelve years of age, 148. Served under Prince Rupert, in the war against the Dutch, 148. Commanded an independent troop of horse, 149. Had a quarrel with the Earl of Rochester, 149. Served at sea in the Dutch war 1672, 149. Obtains a Garter, and made Gentleman of the bedchamber, 150. Entered into the French service, 150. Lieutenant of Yorkshire, and Governor of Hull, 150. Sent with 2000 men to the relief of Tangier, 150. Accepts places under King James, whom he attends to mass, 151. Acquiesces in the Revolution, 152. Made Marquis of Normanby 1694, 152. Received into the Cabinet council, with a pension of 3000l. 152. Said to have courted Queen Anne, when young, 153. Made Lord Privy Seal, 153. Lord Lieutenant of the North Riding of Yorkshire, 153. Made Duke of Normanby, and after of Buckinghamshire, 153. Joined the Tories, 153. Offered the Chancellorship, 153. Lord Chamberlain of the Household, 153. After the Queen's death opposed the Court, 153. Died Feb. 24, 1720-21, 153. His character, 154. His character as a writer, 154.

Bucolus, his account of Mrs. Busy's economical character and conduct, v. 426.

Budgel, Eustace, writes the Epilogue to Philips's translation of Racine's Andromache, xi. 251.

Buller of Buchan, account of the extraordinary cavity there, viii. 223.

Burman, Peter, his life, xii. 168. Born at Utrecht 1668, 168. Educated at Utrecht, and admitted into the University in his thirteenth year, 168. His quick acquirement of learning, 169. Becomes a pupil under Grævius, 170. Studied philosophy at Leyden, 171. Doctor of Laws, 1688, 172. Travelled into Switzerland and Germany, 172. Collector of the Tenths 1691, 172. Visits Paris 1714, where he is introduced to Montfaucon, 173. Professor of History, Eloquence, and the Greek language, at Leyden, 1715, 175. Chief Librarian at Leyden, 176. Died March 31, 1741, 176. His character, 176. Catalogue of some of his works, 179.

Burnet, Gilbert, Observations on Dryden's Answer to his Remarks on Varillas, ix. 358.

Business, the neglect of it foolish and pernicious, vi. 240. The folly of a man's attempting to do too much business himself, by

by which all is neglected: exemplified in the history of Jack Whistler, vii. 72. Very seldom reckoned a pleasure, 405.

Bustle, Lady, her character expressive of the active scenes of a country life, iv. 325.

Busy, Mrs. the particularities of her character, v. 426.

Butler, Samuel, assisted Buckingham in writing the Rehearsal, ix. 349. His life, 183. The son of a farmer at Strensham, Worcestershire, born 1612, 183. Not known whether he was of either University, 184. Clerk to a Justice of the Peace in Worcestershire, 185. Amused himself in Musick and Painting, 185. Taken into the family of the Countess of Kent, 185. Afterwards into the family of Sir S. Luke, 185. Secretary to the Earl of Carbury, and Steward of Ludlow Castle, 186. Married Mrs. Herbert, 186. Part I. of Hudibras published 1663, Part II. 1664, 186. Supposed to have been secretary to the Duke of Buckingham, when Chancellor of Cambridge, 187. Story of his being to be introduced to the Duke of Bucks, by Mr. Wycherley, 187. Part III. of Hudibras published 1678, 188. Died 1680, and interred in the church-yard of Covent-Garden, 188. Reported to have received 100*l.* a year of the Treasury, 189. Copy of his monument in Westminster-Abbey, 189. Three volumes of his posthumous Works published, 189. Two volumes more, lately, by Mr. Thier of Manchester, 189. He ridiculed the establishment of the Royal Society, 190. Character of his Hudibras, 190.

C

CADENCY in poetic numbers considered, v. 143.

Cairne, in Sky, a burying-place, described, viii. 268.

Calder Castle, account of, viii. 232.

Calumnies, the difficulty in suppressing, xii. 21.

Camilla, her affected disrelish of the dispositions and conduct of her own sex exposed, v. 279, 281.

Canaries, Islands of, account of the first discovery and settlement of, ii. 214. John de Cerda crowned king of the Canaries, 215.

Candidus, his history, iii. 157.

Cannon, two observations on the danger of, x. 149.

Cantilenus, his low taste censured, vi. 218.

Capel, Edward, observations on his edition of Shakspeare, ii. 177.

Captator, a legacy hunter, his history, vi. 327, 332.

Castles in the Hebrides, account of, viii. 398. Evidences of the fictions of chivalry having had the manners of feudal times for their basis, 402.

Catalogue of the Harleian Library, plan of the catalogue, ii. 227. General use of catalogues, 228.

Cato, rather a poem in dialogue than a play, x. 118. Extracts from Mr. Dennis's Observations, 119.

Cattle, importance of breeding, ii. 443. Progress of breeding, from the time of Abraham, 444. Account of those bred in the islands of Sky, viii. 304.

Cave, Edward, his life, xii. 210. Born in Warwickshire 1691, 210. Educated at Rugby school, 210. At first encouraged by his master, but afterwards, being charged with stealing a cock, loses all his master's favour, 211. Lives with a collector of Excise, 212. Comes to London, and lives some time with a timber-merchant, 212. Apprenticed to Collins, a printer, 212. After two years sent to conduct a printing-house, and manage a weekly paper, at Norwich, 213. Writes in Mist's Journal, 213. Gets a small place in the Post-Office, 213. Engaged in several small publications, 213. Loses his place in the Post-Office, 214. Purchases a small printing-office, and begins the Gentleman's Magazine, 214. Spent much money in projects, 215. Died 1754, 216. Inscription at Rugby, written by Dr. Hawkesworth, to the memory of Cave's father, himself, and brother, 217. His character, 218.

Caves, some remarkable ones in the isles of Sky, described, viii. 295. Account of a remarkable one in the island of Inch Kenneth, 388.

Caution, the connection of it with hope, v. 306.

Cecilia, St. Pope's Ode on St. Cecilia's Day, xi. 173.

Celibacy, no pleasures in a state of, iii. 374.

Cellini, Benvenuto, account of a book called his Life, ii. 250. After lying a century and an half in MS. published at Naples in 1730, 250. His extraordinary character, 251.

Censure, our fondness for it derived from an imagined superiority, iv. 8. On what occasions it becomes equitable and laudable, 319.

Chairman, his complaint on charging the fat people no more than thin ones, vii. 112.

Character, not to be drawn from a person's own letters, xi. 156.

Characters, the general inclination to copy those of other persons considered, vi. 145. The variety of, in England, exemplified by the company in a stage-coach, iii. 191. The folly of assuming, 193.

Chariessa, her reflections upon the fashionable follies of modish life, v. 183, 188.

Charity, the discharge of its duties should be regulated and adjusted by the rules of justice, v. 62. Introduced by Revelation, vii. 13. No account of it in antient times transmitted to us, 13. Roman donatives rather popular than virtuous, 13. Of Mahometans transplanted from Christianity, 14. Of the present age, commended, 14. Danger of its abating, 15. Danger from the competitions between different hospitals, 16. If no want, no charity, 359.

Charity Schools, the false notion of the mischief of them, vii. 100.

Charles I. tries the *Sortes Virgilianæ*. Charged with inserting a prayer in the *Icon Basilike*, taken from Sidney's Arcadia, which is, however, supposed to have been interpolated by Milton, ix. 107.

Charles II. employs Salmasius to write in defence of Charles I. and Monarchy, ix. 108. Passes an act of oblivion to all except the Regicides, 122.

Charles XII. of Sweden, the vanity of a warrior exemplified in him, i. 213.
Charters, their extent and authority, viii. 169.
Chartophylax, his character, vi. 218.
Charybdis, her disposition to profuse expences, v. 282.
Chaucer, Geoffry, January and May, and the Prologue to the Wife of Bath, put into modern English, by Pope, xi. 58.
Cheerful man characterized, ix. 155.
Cheynel, Francis, his life, xii. 190. Born at Oxford 1608, 190. Entered at that university 1623, 190. Fellow of Merton College, 191. Takes orders in the Church of England, 191. Refused his degree of B. D. for disputing concerning Predestination, 191. Account of the disputes at Merton College, 193. Presented to a valuable living near Banbury, 193. Has a dispute with Archbishop Laud, 193. Declares himself a Presbyterian, and a friend of the Parliament, 194. His house plundered, and living forfeited, 194. Retires into Sussex, 195. His behaviour to Chillingworth when a prisoner to the Parliament's troops, 196. In the army of Essex, shews himself equally brave as learned, 197. Is presented by Parliament to the living of Petworth, 198. Sent by the Parliament, with six others, to reform the University, 198. Fixes a Scruple-shop at Oxford, 199. His disputes with Earbury and the Independents, 199. His controversy with Mr. Hammond, on his Practical Catechism, 203. His further proceedings at Oxford, 204. President of St. John's College, and Lady Margaret Professor, 206. Writes in defence of the Trinity against the Socinians, 207. Retires from Oxford to his living at Petworth, 208. Loses Petworth at the Restoration, 209. Supposed to have died distracted, 1665, 209.
Chillingworth, Dr. for a short time embraced Popery, ix. 356. Account of his sickness and death, in the hands of the Parliament's troops, xii. 197.
Chinese, account of a man of that country at the island of Ternate, xii. 141.
Christianus perfectus, i. 367.
Chrysalus, the fatal effects of his peevishness, v. 261.
Cibber, Mr. the lives of the poets not written by him but by one Robert Shiels, x. 274. Appointed Poet Laureat, 344. Takes umbrage at the Volunteer Laureat, 346. Celebrated by Pope in his last book of the Dunciad, xi. 139. He resents the affront in a pamphlet, 139.
Cicero, his reflections upon the vanity of transitory applause, v. 300 His remarks upon the importance of being acquainted with past transactions, vi. 85.
Clarendon, Lord, the story of Smith being employed to alter his history, false, x. 23. His character of Waller, with observations on it, xi. 260. His character of Admiral Blake, xii. 59. The peculiar excellency of his History of the Rebellion, v. 330. Thoughts on the publication of the sequel to his History, vii. 259. Doubts of the unfaithful publication of his History, 261.
Cleobulus, his maxim on the excellence of mediocrity, iv. 245.

Cleora, her Letter on Gaming, iv. 96, 100.
Clergy, Milton's objections to entering into the ministry, ix. 90.
Clifford, Martin, attacks Dryden's Conquest of Grenada, with a specimen, ix. 333. Assisted Buckingham in writing the Rehearsal, 349.
Climate, has no influence on freedom and slavery, or virtue and vice, vii. 41.
Coach, provided by marriage-articles without horses, vii. 218.
Coal-pit compared to the sun, ix. 32.
Coins, observations on the collectors of, vii. 226.
Col, island of, account of, viii. 355. Account of Grissipol in Col, 357. Account of the castle of Col, 359. Turnips introduced there, 360. Account of the violent tempests there, 361. The inhabitants attempt to supply their own wants, 368. Malt-tax of the island only 20*s.* a year, 396. No emigrations from, 370. Their funerals, 371. Amusements on New Year's Eve, 372. Account of the custom of protecting murderers there, 372. Account of the custom of fosterage there, 374.
Collier, Jeremy, account of his dispute on the entertainments of the stage, x. 190.
Collins, William, his life, xi. 265. Born at Chichester 1720, 165. Admitted at Winchester College 1733, 265. Came to London, about 1744, a literary adventurer, 266. His uncle leaves him about 2000 *l.* 266. Troubled with disease and insanity, 267. His character, 269. Died 1756, 269. His works characterized, 270.
Colonies, observations on the settlement of, x. 357. More politick to remove grievances than to drive men to seek shelter in foreign countries, 357. Crimes committed by the discoverers of new regions, 358. Considerations how they are constituted, viii. 164. Constitution of English colonies, 168. Their power from their charters, 168. Compared to a member of the body, 169. Ought to be bound by statutes of the Mother-country, 169. The plea of want of representation examined, 171. Advantages of to the Mother-country, 171.
Columbus, little advantage to Europe from his discoveries, viii. 166.
Comedy, ridicule the business of, iii. 4. History of, 7. Origin of, 8. Three ages of, 11. The slave of its subject and the reigning taste, 37. Tragedy more uniform than, 41. General rules of, 44. Purpose of is to divert, 56. Character of ancient, 61. Critical remarks upon the manner of composing it, v. 345.
———, Greek, dissertation upon the, iii. 1.
Commendation, false claims to it censured, vi. 282.
Commentators, the difficulties they meet with, ii. 122.
Commerce, Preface to Rolt's Dictionary of, ii. 312. The present predilection of mankind to, 312. Difficulties in acquiring the knowledge of, 314. One of the daughters of fortune, 447. Must owe its success to agriculture, 449.
Commonwealths, governors of, rule those that think themselves the rulers, iii. 63.
Companions, different classes of them described, vi. 280.

Compassion, supposed by some to be a selfish passion, vii. 14.
Competitions, often supported by interest and envy, vi. 249. Their different influence on this occasion stated, 250, 251.
Complainers, incessant, represented as the screech-owls of mankind, iv. 376.
Complaint, little got by it, vii. 378.
Complaints of the Conduct of others, what principles will support our claim to it, iv. 319, 320.
Composition, different methods of, xi. 165.
Compton, Sir Spencer, presents Thomson with twenty guineas, having dedicated *Winter* to him, xi. 223.
Comus, the Masque of, first acted in 1634, ix. 91. Derived from Homer's Circe, 91. The fact on which it was founded, 91. Supposed by the editor to be derived from the Comus of Erycius Puteanus, 92. Acted April 5, 1750, for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, 150. Characterized, 157. Prologue to, when acted for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, i. 323.
Conduct, the absurdity of it, whence it ariseth, v. 407.
Congo, island of, first discovered by the Portuguese, ii. 288.
Congreve, William, his life, x. 185. Descended from a family in Staffordshire, 185. Born about 1672, the place uncertain, 185. First educated at Kilkenny, afterwards at Dublin, 186. Entered at the Middle-Temple, but paid little attention to Statutes or Reports, 186. The Old Batchelor, his first dramatick labour, 1693, 187. This play procured him the patronage of Halifax, who made him a Commissioner for licensing coaches, and places in the Pipe-office and Customs, 188. Account of this comedy, 188. The Double Dealer 1694, 189. Love for Love 1695, 189. Mourning Bride 1697, 190. Defends the stage against Collier, 191. Writes The Way of the World, 193. Retires from the world as a writer, 193. Made Secretary for the Island of Jamaica, 194. Wished to be considered rather as a gentleman than an author, 194. His conversation with Voltaire, 194. Loses his sight, 194. Died Jan. 29, 1728-9, buried in Westminster Abbey, and a monument erected by the Dutchess of Marlborough, to whom he left 10,000*l.* 195. His character as an author, 196.
Consolation under afflictions, by what methods it may be obtained, iv. 332. On what occasion it may be drawn from a view of the afflictions of others, 333. Its useful influence against the depressions of melancholy, 334. The tendency of it to strengthen patience and fortitude, 336.
Constantia and Philetus, written by Cowley at twelve years of age, ix. 3.
Constantius, his history and character, vi. 299, 304.
Contentment with the situation in life assigned us, recommended, iv. 400.
Controversies of the learned, a moderator recommended in them, ii. 254.
Controversy, the writers of it, their short-lived fame soon succeeded by disrelish and neglect, v. 225.

Convenience, progress from rudeness to, vii. 252.
Conversation, the pleasures and distastes of it, iv. 274, 297. The importance of acquiring it, vi. 217. The art of it difficult to be attained, 277. What methods are most proper for this end, 278. The errors in sentiment and practice relating to this, into which many are led. 279. Requires the same ingredients as punch, vii. 135. The ingredients of both compared, 136.
Conway, Lord, taken up for being concerned in Waller's Plot, ix. 246. After being examined several times by the Lords is admitted to bail, 249.
Coot, account of a bird in Scotland so called, viii. 224.
Corbet, Mrs. Pope's Epitaph on her, with the Visitor's remarks, xi. 206.
Coriatachan, in Sky, account of, viii. 267.
Coriolanus, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, ii. 214.
Cornelia, her account of lady Bustle's employment, iv. 325, 331.
Cornice, Bob, his history, iii. 144.
Cornish men, a supposed Address from them, in order to shew the false Arguments in the American Resolutions and Address, viii. 193.
Country Life, the pleasures expected to be met with in it seldom prove so, exemplified in the history of Frank Shifter, vii. 284.
Court, the danger of dangling after places there, exemplified in the character of Lentulus, iii. 159.
Courtier, his manner described, vi. 39, 44.
Courtly, Mrs. her character, iv. 78.
Cowley, Abraham, his life, ix. 1. Dr. Sprat's Life of Cowley rather a Funeral Oration than an History, 1. The son of a Grocer, and born in 1618, 1. Became a poet from reading Spenser's Fairy Queen, 2. Educated at Westminster School, 2. Could not retain the rules of Grammar, 2. A Volume of Poems printed in his thirteenth year, 3. Wrote Pyramus and Thisbe at ten years of age, and Constantia and Philetus at twelve, 3. Removed to Cambridge in 1636, 3. Ejected from Cambridge, and takes shelter at St. John's College, Oxford, in 1643, 5. Employed in cyphering and decyphering the letters between the King and Queen, 5. Writes his *Mistress* without being in love, 5. Secretary to Lord Jermyn at Paris, 7. Some of his letters preserved in Brown's *Miscellanea Aulica*, 7. His opinion of the Scotch Treaty, 8. Sent back from Paris, under pretence of privacy and retirement, 10. Seized by the usurping powers, and obliged to give a security of 1000*l.* 10. Supposed to relax from his loyalty, 10. Purposes to retire to America, 16. Takes up the character of Physician, 11. Writes a Copy of Verses on the Death of Oliver, 11. Made Dr. of Physick at Oxford 1657, 12. Writes in the Philosophical Transactions, 12. Studies Botany, and writes several Books on Plants in Latin, 13. Superior to Milton in Latin Poetry, 13. Retires into Surrey, 16. Obtains a lease of the Queen's lands, 17. His letter to Dr. Sprat, 17. Died at Chertsey 1667, and buried

buried with great pomp, near Chaucer and Spenser, 18. Charles II. said, Cowley had not left behind him a better man in England, 19. Was at one time too much praised, at another too much neglected, 19. Critical remarks on his Poems, 23. The best metaphysical poet, 37. Represents that spirits operate on the mind by suggestion, 60. Describes Heaven negatively, 61. Read much and borrowed little, 61. His character as a poet, 71. Character of, by Sir John Denham, 72. A passage in his writings illustrated, iv. 36. His epitaph, with observations on it, ii. 330.

Cradock, Zachary, elected provost of Eton, ix. 257.

Craggs, James, Pope's Epitaph on him, with the Visitor's criticisms on it, xi. 204.

Credulity, the common failing of unexperienced virtue, vi. 208. Described, vii. 37. Of political zealots the most obstinate, 37. Of the bigots of philosophy examined, 37.

Crispe, Sir Nicholas, assisted the king with 100,000*l.* ix. 243. Forms a plot in favour of the king, 244.

Criticism, not criminal, xi. 187. A proper restraint on bad writers, 129. Genuine, the offspring of labour, truth, and equity, iv. 16. The art of it regulated by precarious and fluctuating principles, 153. vi. 107. The proper end to which it should be applied, 214. Minute, censured and exploded, 214. The importance of that study, vii. 238. Story of Dick Minim, a critick, 239. Plan for an academy, 244.

Criticks, their true character, iv. 15. The different dispositions and measures of the candid and the severe, 151, 152. Remarks on their censures of other writers, v. 140. They are often misled by interest, 140. The different classes of criticks assigned, and their arts and insults exposed, vi. 211, 213. The methods by which their malevolent designs may be defeated, 214. Their character, vii. 12. Their duty to young actors, 97. Observations on, 305. Their use to the world, ii. 192.

Cromwell, O. commenced Protector with kingly power, ix. 111. Instance of Milton's flattery of, 112. Versed in ancient history, 251. Character of Waller's panegyrick on, 252. Desirous of the title of king, 252. His dissolution of parliament recommended as a proper subject for an historical painting, vii. 181.

Crowell, Mr. an early correspondent of Pope, xi. 61.

Crousaz, a view of the controversy between him and Warburton on Pope's Essay on Man, ii. 254.

Crowns, thoughts on the influence of, x. 321.

Cruelty, in experimental philosophy and anatomy reprobated, vii. 66.

Cuddy fish, account of, viii. 296.

Culloden, the tradition of the inhabitants being burnt in the church by the Macdonalds, viii. 263.

Cunning characterised, vii. 368.

Cupidus, his observations on the folly of visionary opulence, v. 15.

Curiosity,

Curiosity, the danger of indulging an injudicious, v. 68. A principle of powerful and extensive operation, 196, 304. The folly of being solely influenced by it in the pursuit of knowledge, 204. To be indulged with caution and judgment, 205. The great folly of it when extravagant, 206. The first and last passion in great and generous minds, vi. 59. An instance of its commanding influence, 60. A strong principle of action, 123.

Curiosities, the extravagant love of, exposed, vii. 224. Arts practised by collectors, 225. The advantage of collections made with prudence, 227.

Curll, Mr. called before the Lords for publishing letters between Pope and several noblemen, and discharged, xi. 116.

Custom, to conquer it requires the utmost efforts of fortitude and virtue, v. 92. The folly of continuing bad ones, and the difficulty of breaking them, vii. 109.

Cymbeline, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 218.

D.

DAVENANT, Sir William, his life saved by the intercession of Milton, who is afterwards saved by the intercession of Davenant, ix. 123. In conjunction with Dryden, alters Shakspeare's Tempest, 323. The quickness of his fancy, 323.

Davideis, written by Cowley when at Cambridge, ix. 4. Designed to be extended to twelve books, only four of which were completed, 53. Various specimens of, 53. Said by Rymer to be superior to the Jerusalem of Tasso, 60.

Deaf and Dumb, account of Braidwood's academy at Edinburgh for, viii. 410.

Death, a voyage, ix. 32. The due contemplation of, a proper method for suppressing fear, iv. 113. The instructions arising from the near views of it, 345. The dispositions of mind suitable to that instructive and awful season, 347, 349. The different sentiments we then form of men and things; and particularly as to friends, rivals, and enemies, 349, 350. The immediate effects of death awful and important, v. 44. The impressions made by it too generally transient, 46. The remembrance of it when it predominates in our minds a great and animating incentive to virtue, 47. Considerations on it, vii. 164. The desire of the most decrepid to live one year longer, and the credit they give to it, iii. 170. As described by the author of the Origin of Evil, viii. 42.

Debtors, considerations on the imprisonment of, vii. 84. Creditors reasons for imprisonment of, 85. Should be obliged to surrender their property, 86. Frequently occasioned by compulsive traffick, 86. He who trusts a man he designs to sue is criminal, 87. Loss to the community by their imprisonment computed, 150. More confined in England than in the monasteries in other countries, 152. Other mischiefs of imprisonment, 153. The infamy ought to be transferred from the unfortunate

fortunate debtor to the remorseless creditor, 154. The miserable life they lead, iii. 147. The danger of being bail for, exemplified in the character of Serenus, 176.

Dedications, iii. 81. Kennedy's Chronology, 83. Gwynn's London and Westminster improved, 84. Adams on the Globes, 85. Bishop Pearce's Works, 86. Hoole's Tasso, 87. Dr. James's Dictionary, 88. The Female Quixote, 89. Shakspeare illustrated, 90. Payne's Game of Draughts, 94. Evangelical History of Christ, 95. Angell's Stenography, 100. Baretti's Dictionary, 101. Ascham's Works, 103.

Definition, in what respect not the province of man, v. 344. The neglect of it prejudicial to the writers of plays, 345.

Dejection of spirit frequently increased by vain terrors, iv. 377.

Demochares, his character, v. 191.

Denham, Sir John, born at Dublin in 1615, ix. 72. Son of Sir John Denham of Essex, Chief Justice of the Exchequer in Ireland, and afterwards one of the Barons of the Exchequer in England, 72. Educated in London, and went to Oxford 1631, 72. More given to dice and cards than study, 72. Removed to Lincoln's Inn, 73. Divides his study between law and poetry, 73. Employed in carrying on the king's correspondence, 74. Conveys James Duke of York from London into France, 74. Resides in France, 74. The remains of his estate sold by parliament, 75. Rewarded for his loyalty by being made surveyor of the King's buildings, and Knight of the Bath, 75. Died March 19, 1688, and buried in Westminster Abbey near Cowley, 76. A father of English poetry, 76. His character as a poet, 76.

Dennis, John, enraged by Pope's Essay on Criticism, xi. 63. Attacks the Rape of the Lock, and the Temple of Fame, 72. Pope writes a narrative of his frenzy, 73. Attacks Addison's Cato, x. 92. Pope writes a narrative of his madness, 92. The respect to be paid to the opinion of an audience, 120. Savage's epigram on him, 322.

Dentatus, his address to Tranquilla described, v. 311.

Dependence, perpetual, contrary to the dignity of wisdom, vi. 129.

Depravation of the mind by external advantages not so universal as is apprehended, vi. 188.

Desires of mankind more numerous than their attainments, v. 210. A perpetual conflict with natural desires the lot of our present state, 255.

Desires, excessive, restrained by the attentive prospect and contemplation of death, iv. 111.

Despair, considerations proposed for preventing it, v. 374.

Dicaculus, his affectation of the character of a wit, vi. 199, 204.

Diction, the attractive power of its charms in the conveyance of truth to the mind, vi. 154. See *Language*.

Dictionaries, writers of, characterized, ii. 31.

Dictionary, English. See *English Dictionary*.

Diffidence, the advantageous influence of this quality in managing a debate, vi. 114.

Digby, Sir Kenelm, embraced popery, ix. 356. Account of his animadversions on Brown's Religio Medici, xii. 275.
Digby, Hon. Robert, and his sister Mary, Pope's Epitaph on them, with the Visitor's criticisms, x. 208.
Dilatoriness and indolence in managing important affairs, their fatal effects, v. 401.
Diligence, too frequently relaxed and abated by applause, v. 256. Often obstructed by friendship, 256.
Discord, little things often produce it, v. 183.
Discontent, attendant on every state of life, iv. 372. v. 387.
Dispute and controversy, the fatal effects of, when ill conducted, v. 153. Frequently influenced by the dispositions of pride and vanity, 154.
Distinction, the folly of attaining it by ridicule or censure, vii. 67.
Divorce. See *Marriage.*
Dobson, Mr. attempts to translate Pope's Essay on Man into Latin verse, xi. 127.
Dodsley, Mr. summoned before the Lords for publishing Whitehead's poem called *Manner,* xi. 135.
Dæmonologie, system of, adopted by such as courted the favour of King James, ii. 72.
Domestic conduct, the importance of regulating it by the dictates of wisdom and goodness, iv. 431. The danger of betraying our weakness to our servants, one motive to a regular life, 433. See *Servants.*
Domestic discord enquired into, iii. 372.
Donne, Dr. specimens of his metaphysical poetry, ix. 24. Some of his Satires published by Pope, xi, 133.
Dorset, Charles Sackville Earl of, life of, ix. 287. Born January 24, 1637, 287. Educated under a private tutor, and travelled through Italy, 287. Member for East Grinstead in the first parliament after the Restoration, 287. One of his frolicks, 287. A volunteer in the fleet under the Duke of York, 288. Receives favourable notice from King James, 288. Concurs to the Revolution, 288. A favourite of King William, Chamberlain of the Household and Knight of the Garter, 288. Died at Bath Jan. 19, 1705-6, 289. His character, 289. Applauded as good-natured, though angry, iv. 71.
Dorset, Charles Duke of, Pope's Epitaph on him, with criticisms on it, xi. 199.
Double, Tom, his story, vii. 369.
Douglas, Rev. Mr. (now Bishop of Carlisle) letter to, written for William Lauder, viii. 7.
Dragon, story of the Isle of Rhodes being ravaged by one, vii. 30. The story applied, vii. 31.
Drake, Sir Francis, his life, xii. 63. Son of a clergyman in Devonshire, 63. Apprenticed to the master of a small vessel trading to France and the Netherlands, 63. His master dying, leaves him his little vessel, 64. Sells his vessel, and enters into the West India trade, 64. Loses his all in Captain Hawkins's expedition, 65. Account of his expedition against the Spaniards

niards in America, 1572, 66. Enters into treaty with the Symerons or fugitive negroes, 76. Returns to Plymouth August 9, 1573, 99. Sails with five ships to the South Seas 1577, 100. A design formed at Port Julian to murder him, 116. Arrives at Plymouth September 26, 1580, 144. Receives a visit from Queen Elizabeth on board his ship at Deptford, when he is knighted, 145. Commands a fleet of twenty-five ships against the Spaniards 1585, 145. His success against the Spaniards, 146. In conjunction with Sir John Hawkins sent with a fleet to the East Indies 1595, 147. Died 1597, and buried in the sea, 147.

Drama. See *Stage.*

Drowsy, Tom, his history, iii. 174.

Drugget, Ned, his history, vii. 60. His false conceptions of pleasure such as pursued by mankind in general, 68.

Dryden, John, his life, ix. 315. Born at Aldwincle, Northamptonshire, August 9, 1631, 315. Said to have inherited an estate of 200*l.* a year, and to have been bred an Anabaptist, 315. Educated at Westminster school under Dr. Busby, 316. Admitted Batchelor at Cambridge 1653, 316. His first poem on the death of Lord Hastings, 316. Wrote a Stanza on the death of Cromwell, and on the Restoration *Astrea Redux,* 317. Commenced a writer for the stage about 1663, 318. His first play the Wild Gallant, 319. Published the Rival Ladies 1664, 319. Joins Sir Robert Howard in writing the Indian Queen, 319. The Indian Emperor published 1667, 319. Published his *Annus Mirabilis 1667,* 320. Has a controversy with Sir Robert Howard on dramatic rhyme, 321. Succeeds Sir W. Davenant as Poet Laureat, 322. Publishes his Essay on Dramatick Rhyme, 322. Secret Love, or the Maiden Queen, 322. Sir Martin Mar-all, 322. In conjunction with Davenant, alters Shakspeare's Tempest, 323. His quiet disturbed by Settle's Empress of Morocco, 323. His character of Settle, with remarks on the Empress of Morocco, 324. His Mock Astrologer, dedicated to the Duke of Newcastle, 330. Tyrannick Love, or the Virgin Martyr, 331. Conquest of Grenada, 331. That play attacked by Martin Clifford, 333. Settle vindicates himself, 334. His Marriage A-la-mode, dedicated to the Earl of Rochester, 339. The Assignation, or Love in a Nunnery, dedicated to Sir Charles Sedley, 340. Amboyna, 340. Troilus and Cressida, altered from Shakspeare, 340. The Spanish Fryar, 340. The Duke of Guise, written in conjunction with Lee, 341. Albion and Albanius, with some account of the plan, and a ballad upon it, 342. State of Innocence and Fall of Man, 343. Many hundred copies in MS. before it was printed, 343. Aureng Zebe, 343. All for Love, or the World well Lost, founded on the story of Antony and Cleopatra, 344. Limberham, or the Kind Keeper, 345. Œdipus, formed by him and Lee from Sophocles, 345. Don Sebastian, 345. Amphytrion, derived from Plautus and Moliere, 346. Cleomenes, 346. King Arthur, 346. Love Triumphant, 346. Did not raise

raise his fortune by the number of his pieces, 347. Used to add a preface of criticism to his plays, 348. Wrote Prologues to many plays, the price of which was two guineas, and afterwards raised to three guineas, 348. Contracted to furnish four plays a year, 348. In 1678, produced six full plays, 348. Attacked by criticks, and opposed by rivals, 349. Characterised by the name of Bayes in the Rehearsal, 349. Criticks nor rivals did him no harm, 351. Repels censure by an adamantine confidence, 351. Waylaid and beaten for being supposed to have been the author of an Essay on Satire, 352. His name thought necessary for the success of every poetical and literary performance, 352. He wrote the lives of Polybius, Lucian, and Plutarch, and translated the first book of Tacitus, 352. Assisted in translating Ovid's Epistles, and adds a preface on translation, 353. Writes Absalom and Achitophel, which is several times answered, 353. Medal, which is answered by Settle and others, 355. After the accession of James, declared himself a convert to Popery, 356. Engaged to defend the papers found in the strong box of Charles II. 357. Translates Maimburg's History of the League, and the Life of Francis Xavier, 358. Supposed to have undertaken to translate Varillas's History of Heresies, and to have answered Burnet, 358. Burnet's observation on the Answer, 358. Publishes the Hind and Panther, which is answered by the Earl of Halifax, Prior, Tom Brown, &c. 360. Writes on the birth of a prince, 362. At the Revolution loses the place of Laureat, 362. Celebrates Shadwell's inauguration in Mac Flecknoe, 362. Lord Dorset is said to have continued the salary of Laureat to him, 363. In 1690, writes Don Sebastian, and in 1691 four other dramas, 363. In 1693, publishes his translation of Juvenal and Persius, 364. Purposes writing an Epick poem either on Arthur or the Black Prince, 364. He charged Blackmore with stealing his plan, 365. In 1694, begins his translation of Virgil, which he publishes in 1697, 365. Translates Fresnoy's Art of Painting into English prose, 365. Fables, his last work, published 1699, 366. Doubts respecting the person who first set the Ode on St. Cecilia's Day, to musick, 366. Died in Gerard-street May 1, 1701, 366. A wild story respecting his funeral, 367. Buried amongst the Poets in Westminster Abbey, 371. A monument erected to his memory by the Duke of Buckinghamshire, 371. Account of his descendants, 371. His character as described by Congreve, 372. Differently described by Dr. Johnson, 373. Copy of the agreement with Jacob Tonson, to pay him 250 guineas for 10,000 verses, 382. Said to have received 500*l.* from the Dutchess of Ormond, as a compliment for his Fables, 384. Said to have received forty pounds from a musical society for the use of Alexander's Feast, 384. In his younger years put confidence in judicial astrology, 385. His character as a poet and critick, 386. The father of English Criticism, 386. Criticisms on various passages of his poems, 397. Specimen of Milborne's criticism on Dryden's Translation

Translation of Virgil, 426. His observations on Rymer's remarks on the tragedies of the last age, 447. Copy of a Letter to his sons in Italy, 458. His opinion of Lord Roscommon's Essay on translated Verse, 218. Milton thought him a good rhymist, but no poet, 146. Declares that Swift will never be a poet, xi. 6. Compared with Pope, 167. Wrote merely for the people, 167. His prose works characterised, 169. Composed without consideration, and published without correction, 169. His inattention and inaccuracy remarked, iv. 201. His character of Shakspeare, ii. 194.

Dryden, John, jun. writer of The Husband his own Cuckold, ix. 371.

Duke, Richard, his life, x. 29. Bred at Westminster, and took his Master's Degree at Cambridge 1682, 29. Prebendary at Gloucester, and chaplain to Queen Anne, 30. Died February 10, 1710-11, 30.

Dumb and Deaf, account of Braidwood's academy at Edinburgh for, viii. 410.

Dun or Borough, in the Isle of Sky, described, viii. 291. Supposed to have been places of safety for the cattle, 292.

Dun Bay, account of, viii. 224.

Dunciad, the part Savage was supposed to have in publishing it, x. 321.

Dutch War of 1652, account of the engagement at sea between the Dutch Admirals and Admiral Blake, xii. 47.

Dutch, their revolt the power of Spain, ii. 351. Raised to power by their plan of commerce, 352. Their increasing power, 356.

Dyer, John, his life, xi. 372. Born in 1700, at Aberglasney, in Caermarthenshire, 272. Educated at Westminster, and designed for the law, 272. Becomes itinerant painter, 272. Travels to Italy, and on his return publishes the Ruins of Rome, 273. Enters into the Church, 273. His preferments, 273. Publishes The Fleece 1757, 273. Died 1758, 274. His works characterised, 274. Akenside's opinion of The Fleece, 275.

E.

EARBURY, Mr. account of him, and his pretending to prophecy, xii. 201. His disputes with Mr. Cheynel, 201.

Earse Language, used in a kirk at Inverness, viii. 235. Account of, 349. No MS. of that language more than 100 years old, 349. Many dialects of, 351.

Earse Poetry, understood by Miss Maclean of Mull, viii. 377.

Earth, advantages from the position of it, vii. 171.

Editors, the impropriety of their altering works of authors left to their care, xi. 227. The duty of, ii. 173.

Education, the difficulty attending it, xii. 149. Those who make the avenues to it easier are the friends of mankind, 150. The method used by Barretier for instructing his son in the languages, 154. The importance of conducting it aright, v. 78, 88.

88. Errors in the conduct thereof censured, 243, 388, 393. vi. 294. The pernicious effects of wrong management in this affair, v. 255. Some instances of remissness and irregularity specified, v. 388, vii. 280, 327. The folly of employing girls on useless needlework, and neglecting every other part of their education, vii. 50. The importance of, ii. 291. Want of variety and novelty in books designed for, 292. Plan of the Preceptor, 297. Considerations on the education of the children of the poor, viii. 35. Expence of a scholar of the highest class in the University of St. Andrew's, for the term of seven months, 15*l.*; for the lower class, 10*l.* 210. The course of in the University of Aberdeen, 221.

Egmont Port. See *Falkland Islands.*

Elgin, account of, viii. 229.

Eloquence, that false sort which only confuses the reader, ridiculed, vii. 144.

Elwood the Quaker, some account of, ix. 126.

Eminent Men, least eminent at home, vii. 202.

Embalming, on the practice of, iii. 439.

Emigration, state of, from the Hebrides, considered, viii. 323.

Eminence, a proof of it in having many enemies as well as friends, iv. 58.

Employment, the necessity of, vii. 291.

Enemies, the duty and charity of relieving them, ii. 426.

England, supposed by Milton to be too cold a climate for flights of imagination, ix. 131.

English, remarkably barren of historical genius, v. 329. The little proficiency made by them in civil wisdom, viii. 66. On the bravery of their common soldiers, ii. 427. Arises very much from the dissolution of dependence which obliges every man to regard his own character, 429.

English Dictionary, plan of that work addressed to the Earl of Chesterfield, ii. 3. Original motives, only from the patronage of the Proprietors, 3. Difficulties in fixing the plan, 7. from the words to be omitted, 7. from the accents, 10. from the uncertainty of orthography, 27. from the pronunciation, 8. from the etymology, 10, 14. from the syntax, 18. from explanation with brevity, 19. from the various meaning of the same word, 20. from antiquated words, 25. from impure words, 25. Preface to the English Dictionary, 31. Writer of Dictionaries characterised, 31.

English Language, the progress of, vii. 255. Richer than commonly supposed, 365. Contains sufficient information in every branch of science, 366.

Ennius, his epitaph written by himself, ii. 333.

Enterprises, the various opponents to, xi. 99.

Envy, its malignant influence described, vi. 252. Will often sacrifice truth and friendship to weak temptations, 253.

Epaminondas, his death a proper subject for a picture, vii. 181.

Epick Poetry, what it is, ix. 160. Requisites in a writer of, 161. Boileau's opinion of, 364.

Epictetus, his salutary instructions for preserving the mind from the elevation of vanity, and the dejection of grief, iv. 12. His excellent sentiments on the advantage of being influenced by the fears of poverty and death, 111. His epitaph, ii. 335. Epigramma, i. 403.

Epigram — de Sacerdote furem consolante epigramma, x. 180.

Episcopacy, Mr. Waller's speech against it, ix. 237.

Epistolary Writing, its difficulty and excellence, v. 70. It ought to bear a strict conformity to nature, and the various purposes designed by it, 72, 74.

Epitaphs. Essay on, ii. 326. Enquiry into what the perfection of consists 327. Intended to perpetuate examples of virtue, 328. The name alone sufficient for eminent men, 328. All allusions to Heathen mythology absurd, 330. Impropriety of addressing the passenger in, 332. First rule in writing, not to omit the name, 333. Regard for truth to be observed, 334. Private virtue the best subject for, 335. For Mr. Hogarth, xi. 164.

Erasmus, his diligent and unwearied improvement of time applauded, v. 237.

Eriphile, her excessive peevishness censured, v. 162.

Errol, Earl of, invites Dr. Johnson to his seat at Slanes Castle, viii. 223.

Error, the aversion of most persons to be convinced of it, iv. 201, 203. Their attempts to justify it generally the effect of obstinacy or pride, 201, 203.

Etymology, difficulties in settling it, ii. 14.

Essays, the extensiveness and variety of this kind of writing, vi. 254. The advantages and inconveniences of it, 254.

Essence of Things, less regarded than their external and accidental appendages, vi. 130.

Eubulus, his character, iv. 168, 180.

Evening, an Ode to Stella, i. 335.

Events, some of the most considerable often produced by casual and slender causes, vi. 1.

Evil, thoughts on the origin of, vii. 357. The cause of all good, 358. Review of a Free Enquiry into the Nature and Origin of, viii. 23. The folly of lamenting evils which may never happen, iii. 378.

Eumathes, his free censure of the errors of modern education, v. 388, 393. His judicious conduct in the tuition of a young nobleman, vi. 310. His narrative of the low insidious arts by which his good designs were obstructed and defeated, 313. The mean adventures of his pupil related, 317.

Eumenes, his character, iv. 404.

Euphelia, an account of her rural amusements, iv. 273, 298.

Euphemia, her character, iv. 80.

Euphues, his character, iv. 160.

Euripides, parody of a translation from the Medea, i. 353.

Expeditions and Voyages in search of new countries, abstract account of, viii. 97.

Eutropius, his account of the indecent and insulting conduct of Triphcrus, v. 175, 176, 177.

Excellence, the desire of it laudable, iv. 421. Practical and ideal, widely different, v. 259.
Exercise, its necessity to the health and vigour of the body, v. 86.
Existence, every stage and period of it should be distinguished by some improvement, vi. 94.
Expectation, the torment of it greatest in the early seasons of life, v. 255. The practice of disappointing the expectations of others inconsistent with true friendship, vi. 235. This instance of wrong conduct exemplified in the case of Liberalis, 140, 141. Our expectations often visionary and disappointing, 323, 324.
External Appearances frequently delusive, vi. 323.
Extravagance, some instances of it related, vi. 299.

F.

FAILINGS, the detection of them too generally received with disgust, iv. 156.
Falkland, Lord, tries the *Sortes Virgilianæ*, ix. 13.
Falkland Islands, thoughts on the late transactions respecting them (1771), viii. 96. Supposed to have been first discovered by Captain Davis, 1592, 98. Visited, 1594, by Sir Richard Hawkins, and called Hawkins's Maiden Land, 99. Discovered by the Dutch 1598, and called Sebald's Islands, 99. Obtained the name of Falkland Islands, 1698, from Captain Strong, 99. Said by Strong to have no wood, and by Dampier to have no water, 99. Called the Malouines by the Spaniards, 100. A settlement recommended on Pepys Island by Anson, 100. An expedition for the further discovery of purposed in 1748, but opposed and put off by the Spaniards, 102. Capt. Byron sent to take possession of them 1765, with his favourable account of the Island, and called the harbour Port Egmont, 104. Captain Macbride sent 1766, 105. His unfavourable account of the Island, 105. A garrison stationed at Port Egmont, 106. Messages and replies between the governor of Port Egmont and the Spanish Port Solidad, 107. Port Egmont attacked by a fleet from Buenos Ayres, and taken, 110. A fleet prepared by England, and negotiations opened to settle the differences, 112. The Spaniards agree to restore Port Egmont, 116. Consequences to be expected had a war taken place, 123.
Fall of Piers, account of, viii. 241.
False Alarm (1770), viii. 65. Former general causes of removed, 66. Through want of proficiency in civil learning, 66.
Falsehood, its guilt widely extended, v. 159. Often imitates truth, 160. The influence of it on the passions, 162. The artifices of it exploded, vi. 284.
Falstaff, Sir John, Prince Henry's tender reflexions on his death, v. 10.
Fame, the love of it when irregular and dangerous, iv. 315. When laudable, 315. The only recompence mortals can bestow on virtue,

virtue, 317. The ill economy of it the effect of stupidity, 359. The acquisition and loss of it considered, v. 360. That of authors casual, precarious, and short-lived, vi. 37, 38. Of a short duration when it is not properly founded, 87. The ascent to it obstructed by envy and competition, 148. That of authors very precarious, vii. 236. The vain desires of the lovers of, xi. 337.

Famine, how different countries are affected by it, viii. 378.

Farmer, English, the honour due to, ii. 446.

Fate, the practice of seeking it in books, ix. 8.

Fear, the distresses of it obviated and alleviated by the contemplation of death, iv. 113. Superstitious, censured and exploded, 377. In what cases it characterises a coward, v. 353. Not intended to overbear reason, but to assist it, 353. The pernicious effects of an irrational indulgence of it, 402.

Fenton, Elijah, his life, x. 226. Born near Newcastle, in Staffordshire, 226. Educated at Cambridge, 226. Refused to take the oaths, 227. Secretary to Charles Earl of Orrery, and tutor to his son, 228. Schoolmaster at Sevenoaks in Kent, 228. Writes in praise of Queen Anne, and extols the Duke of Marlborough, 228. Undertakes to instruct Secretary Craggs, 229. Assists Pope in translating the Odyssey, 229. Gains near 1000*l.* by his tragedy of Mariamne, 229. Died at Lady Trumbull's in 1730, 231. His character, 231. Account of his works, 232. Pope's letter to Mr. Broome on the Death of Fenton, 234. Assisted Pope in the translation of the Odyssey, xi. 50. Pope's Epitaph on him, with the Visitor's criticisms, 211.

Farocula, her ungoverned passions described and censured, v. 268.

Ferratus, his favourite passion, vi. 218.

Fiction, the works formed upon the plan of it, wherein useful and defective, iv. 20. They too frequently corrupt the mind of youth, 22. 26.

Fire arms, the introduction and progress of, xii. 315.

Firebrace, Lady, verses to her, at Bury assizes, i. 341.

Flatterer, character of an insidious, vi. 134.

Flattery, the fatal and mischievous effects of, iv. 407. The principal causes of it described, v. 212. It is often profusely addressed to the unworthiest objects, 213. The peculiar infamy of such prostitution, 213. Most successful when accommodated to particular circumstances or characters, v. 221. vi. 193. 234. 285. Openness to it the disgrace of declining life, 133. The influence of it to quiet conviction and obtund remorse, 192.

Flavia, her agreeable character, v. 71.

Flavilla, her levity and inconstancy displayed, vi. 245.

Fleet Prison, history of several persons confined there, iii. 141.

Flirtilla, instructed upon the subject of masquerades, iv. 64.

Florentius, his character, iv. 120.

Florentulus, his education conducted upon an irregular and injurious plan, v. 241. 245.

Flosculus, the manner of his addresses to Tranquilla, v. 310.

Fludda, account of the island of, viii. 276.

Flying, attempts to discover the art of, iii. 317.
Flying Fish, account of, xii. 105.
Follies, fashionable, particularly described, v. 184. The modern round of favourite weekly diversions regarded as the most important end of human life, 186.
Fontenelle, his Dialogues of the Dead translated by Mr. Hughes, x. 144.
Fores (the town to which Macbeth was travelling), account of, viii. 231.
Forgetfulness, the necessity of, vii. 289.
Fortitude of woman described, i. 271.
Foster, Mrs. Elizabeth, grand-daughter of Milton, subscriptions solicited for, viii. 6.
Fosterage, account of the custom of, in the isle of Col, viii. 374.
Foundling-Hospital, care of the morals and religion of the children there, recommended, ii. 401.
Fox, Mr. lampooned by Pope in his Satires, xi. 135.
France, proceedings of the army of, in the war with the Queen of Hungary, xii. 247. The power of that nation in America 1756, ii. 350. The polity of that nation, 351. Their advance to power, 296. First turns its thoughts to traffick, 357. Sends a colony to Canada, 357. Perceives the advantage of commerce and a naval force, 362. Makes encroachments on the back settlements of the English in America, 371. Causes of the superiority of French officers to the English, 373.
Fraud, those persons who are most addicted to it, generally the most suspicious, iv. 408.
Freeholder, account of that periodical publication, x. 99.
Free Masonry allowed in Prussia, xii. 229.
French, just to the memory of learned men, by writing their lives, ix. 303.
French Prisoners of War, Introduction to the Proceedings of the Committee appointed to manage the Contributions begun at London, Dec. 18, 1758, for clothing them, ii. 424. Examination of the arguments used against this charity, 425.
Friend, the difficulty of finding a faithful and able one, iv. 184. The essential ingredients of that amiable character, 406. Thoughts on the loss of a, vii. 164. Poem to a, i. 337.
Friendship, the progress of the abatement of, xi. 95. The firmest too often dissolved by openness and sincerity, iv. 261. The qualities requisite to form and establish it, 406. vi. 121. Envy and flattery most injurious to its interests, iv. 406. Esteem and love essential to its composition, 408. Virtue its most lasting support, 408. The most common obstructions to it, 410, 411. The measures necessary to maintain and continue it, v. 180. The partialities with which it is often attended, 182. Characterized, vii. 88. Accidents to which it is liable, 88. Absence, interest, ambition, disputes begun in jest, &c. 89.
Frolick, Mr. his character, as exhibiting a striking specimen of vanity, iv. 390.
Frugality, the excellence of it, iv. 365. Sophron's letter in recommendation

commendation of it, 364. Cautions and rules for directing the practice of it, 367.
Fruition, the limits of it fixed by immovable boundaries, vi. 221.
Fugitive Pieces, their origin and importance, ii. 240.
Fungosa, his addresses to Tranquilla described, v. 310.
Furia, her character, iv. 120.
Future State, Sir T. Browne's account of the belief of the antients, xii. 283.
Futurity, the prospects of it fitted to influence and regulate our present conduct, iv. 9. Anxiety about it censured, 190, 376, 381. The folly of building our hopes upon it, vi. 366.

G.

GABRIEL, his dress described, ix. 58.
Gaming, Cleora's letter concerning it, iv. 96, 100. Its pernicious effects, 101. Destructive of the peace, harmony, and pleasures of domestick life, 102.
Garret, the advantages of it for contemplation and improvement, v. 293. Subservient to gaiety and sprightliness, 297. The history and antiquities of several inhabitants of a, vi. 125, 126.
Garth, Sir Samuel, his life, x. 54. Descended from a family in Yorkshire, 54. Student at Cambridge, 54. Admitted Fellow of the College of Physicians, London, July 26, 1692, 54. Writes the Dispensary, a Poem, 56. Spoke the Harveian Oration 1697, 57. Censor of the College, 57. Member of the Kit Cat Club, 57. Knighted, and made Physician in Ordinary to the King, and Physician General to the Army, 58. Died Jan. 18, 1717-18, and buried at Harrow on the Hill, 58. His character, and that of his works, 59.
Gay, John, his life, x. 236. Born in Devonshire in 1688, 236. Educated under Mr. Locke, 236. Apprentice to a Silk Mercer in London, 236. Secretary to the Dutchess of Monmouth, 237. Inscribes his first publication to Pope, 237. Secretary to the Earl of Clarendon, 238. Dedicates his Shepherd's Week to Bolingbroke, 238. Pope and Arbuthnot supposed to have assisted him in writing Three Hours after Marriage, 239. Gained 1000l. by publishing his Poems, 240. Became possessed of the value of 20,000l. in the South Sea Stock, which he lost, 240. Appointed Gentleman Usher to the Princess Louisa, which he refuses, and is afterwards neglected by the Court, 242. Pope's account of the origin and success of the Beggar's Opera, 242. His Polly prohibited by the Lord Chamberlain, 245. Patronized by the Duke and Dutchess of Queensberry, 245. Died Dec. 4, 1732, and buried in Westminster-abbey, 245. His character, 246. Account of his works, 247.
Gelaleddin, of Bassora, the story of, vii. 300.
Gelasimus, his character, vi. 228.
Gelidus, his character, iv. 158.
Generosa, her complaint of want of attention to enquiries made by women, v. 356.

Genius, true, what, ix. 2. The expediency and importance of consulting it in chusing our station in life, iv. 129, 130, v. 287.
Gentle, Miss, her history, vii. 397.
Gentle, Phil. his story, vii. 337.
Gentleman's Magazine, acknowledgment to the author of the, viii. 4. History of that publication, xii. 215.
George, Fort, account of, viii. 232.
Germany, Emperor of, account of the confusions occasioned by his death, 1740, xii. 232. The Elector of Bavaria invested with the Imperial dignity, 244. State of the war between the King of Prussia and the Queen of Hungary, in defence of the election, 259.
Ginger, Debora (wife of a city wit), her complaint, vii. 186.
Glasgow, account of, viii. 406. Account of the University, 407.
Glenelg, account of, viii. 260. Bad accommodations there, 261.
Glensheals, account of the valley of, viii. 252.
Gluttony, the indulgence of this vice freely censured, vi. 381, 382.
God, frequent reflections on his wisdom and goodness the chief security against the anguish of impatience, iv. 212. His placability an essential principle of all religion, v. 246.
Godliness defined, vii. 359.
Gold, the general ill effects of, i. 208. Not so valuable as iron for the use of man, vii. 146. Necessaries of life plentiful as iron, superfluities scarce as gold, 146.
Goldsmith, Oliver, character of as a writer, x. 49.
Good Company, mischiefs of, vii. 210. Different definitions of, 210.
Good Hope, Cape of, first discovered by the Portuguese 1487, ii. 287.
Good Nature and affability, the extensive influence of these amiable qualities, vi. 2.
Good-natured Man, Prologue to, i. 324.
Goodness, the effect of evil, vii. 258. Female, too easily vanquished, iv. 445.
Good Sense, characterized, xi. 163.
Good sort of Woman, characterized, vii. 400.
Government, on the imperfections and abuses of, viii. 58. The difficulty of preventing oppressions, iii. 324.
Granville, Greenville, or *Grenville, George*, his life, x. 250. Born about 1667, 250. Educated at Cambridge, 250. True to the King and Church, 251. Letter to his father, requesting leave to enter into the service of James II. 252. Lived retired during the reign of William III. 254. Member of Parliament in the reign of Queen Anne, 255. Secretary at War 1710, 256. Created Lord Landsdown 1712, 256. Comptroller of the Household and Privy Counsellor 1712, 256. Treasurer of the Household 1713, 256. At the accession of Geo. I. lost his places, and soon after sent to the Tower, but released, 256. Writes in defence of General Monck and Sir R. Greenville, 257. Published a splendid edition of his works 1732, 257. Died Jan. 30, 1735, 257. His character, 258. His works characterized, 259,
Gratitude, the effects of resentment more certain than, x. 336.

Gray, Thomas, his life, xi. 364. Son of a Scrivener of London, born 1716, 364. Educated at Eton, and entered at Peterhouse, Cambridge, 364. Travels through France into Italy with Mr. Horace Walpole, 364. They quarrel at Florence, and finish their travels separately, 365. Retires to Cambridge, where he becomes Bachelor of Civil Law, 365. Loses his friend Mr. West, 365. Applies seriously to poetry 1742, 366. Intended to excel in Latin poetry, 366. Removes to Pembroke Hall, 366. Several of his pieces published with Bentley's Designs 1753, 367. Refuses the place of Poet Laureat, 368. Asks for the place of Professor of Modern History, but is refused, 368. Takes a journey into Scotland 1765, 368. Is appointed Professor of History, 369. Visits Westmoreland and Cumberland 1769, 369. Died 1771, 369. His character by the Rev. Mr. Temple, 369. Additions by Mr. Mason, 370. His account of Lord Shaftesbury, 370. His works characterized, 371.

Great Britain, observations on the affairs of, 1756, ii. 337. Introduction to the political state of, 1756, 350. The present system took its rise in the reign of Elizabeth, 350. State of at the death of Elizabeth, 354. The critical time of the Union, 354. State of under James I. 355. State of under Charles I. 356. State of under Cromwell, 358. State of under Charles II. 361. State of under James II. 365. State of under William and Mary, 366. State of under Anne, 367.

Greatness, disquisition upon, iii. 375.

Greek, began to be studied in England about 1530, xii. 309.

Gregory, Mr. convicted with Savage of the murder of James Sinclair, x. 306.

Greenville, George. See *Granville.*

Greogach, or the Old Man with the Long Beard, account of, viii. 338.

Grey, Dr. observations on his notes on Shakspeare, ii. 181.

Grief, immoderate, assuaged by the contemplation of our latter end, iv. 113. On the transient impressions of, 351. Of short duration in the decline of life, iii. 312. Time the best remedy for, 401.

Grissipol, in Col, account of, viii. 357.

Guardian, account of that periodical publication, x. 94.

Guardian (Cowley's comedy of), first published without the consent of the author, ix. 4. Altered to Cutter of Colman-street, 14. Character of that comedy, 15.

Guardians, their duty in preventing the improper marriage of their wards, xi. 69.

Gulosulus, his criminal indulgence to excessive feeding exposed, vi. 382.

H

HABITS, their uncommon influences and effects, v. 42.

Hachò King of Lapland, his history, vii. 382.

Hale, Sir Matthew, his prudent concern for securing the reputation of virtue, iv. 92. The mutilation which his Pleas of the Crown suffered, vii. 260.

Halifax, Charles Montague, Earl of, his life, x. 43. Born at Horton in Northamptonshire, April 16, 1661, 43. King's Scholar at Westminster, 43. Solicited to be removed to Cambridge, on account of his friendship with Mr. Stepney, 43. Joined Prior in the City Mouse and Country Mouse, 44. Signed the invitation to the Prince of Orange, and sat in the Convention, 44. Married the Countess Dowager of Manchester, 44. Chanceller of the Exchequer, 1694, 45. Completed a recoinage, 45. Projected the general Fund, and raised the credit of the Exchequer, 45. Impeached by the Commons, but the articles were dismissed by the Lords, 45. Dismissed from the Council by Queen Anne, 46. Again attacked by the Commons, and protected by the Lords, 46. Negociated the Union with Scotland, 46. Appointed one of the Regents at the death of the Queen, 46. Created Earl of Halifax, by Geo. I. 46. Flattered by all the poets of the time, except Swift and Pope, 47. Fed with Dedications, and no Dedicator went unrewarded, 47. Rather a pretender to taste than really possessed of it, xi. 92. Story of Pope's reading his translation of the Iliad to him, 92.

Hamet, the Indian, the moderation and modesty of his desires, iv. 250.

———, the poet, his ingratitude, vi. 292.

Hammond, Dr. Henry, his dispute with Cheynel in defence of the Practical Catechism, xii. 203.

———, *James,* his life, x. 274. Born about 1710, and educated at Westminster, 275. Equerry to the Prince of Wales, 275. A companion of Cobham Lyttleton, and Chesterfield, 275. Member of Parliament for Truro, 275. Died in June, 1741, 276. The preface to his elegies, written by the Earl of Chesterfield, 276.

Hamlet, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, ii. 223.

Hanmer, Sir Thomas, observations on his edition of Shakspeare's Works, ii. 176. *Epitaphium,* i. 344. Epitaph paraphrased by Dr. Johnson, 346.

Hanway, Jonas, Review of his Eight Days Journey from Portsmouth to Kingston upon Thames, with an Essay on Tea, ii. 389. Reply to a Paper of his in the Gazeteer of May 26, 1757, 405.

Happiness, not promoted by fortune, rank, or capacity, x. 281. Our indulging chimerical wishes of it, often productive of great disappointment, iv. 27. When dependant upon external circumstances, precarious and delusive, 33. Chimerical provision for it exploded, 35, 36. Of mankind, dependant not upon opinion, but on practice, 174. The insufficiency of sensual pleasures to procure it, 345. The folly of repining at it in others, 401. The anxieties by which it is often disturbed in females, v. 341. The fruition of it dependant on our own sensations, vi. 60. The highest we can enjoy in this life derived from self-approbation, and the applauses of conscience, 61. The methods by which it may be often destroyed, 209. Distant and lasting, secured only by the forbearance of present grati-

gratifications, 223. Human schemes of promoting it visionary and delusive, 359, 386. The general pursuit of it at a distance, iii. 171. To be acquired only by industry, 172. The folly of a tradesman seeking it in rural retirement, 223. The folly of beholding it at a distance, 240. How advanced by comparison with misery, 247. Not to be found in idleness, 249. Generally found in labours of great and laudable undertakings, 249. The happiest man who is in want of the fewest things, 258. The false pursuit of, censured, 261. The uncertainty of, 257. No man to be concluded happy before he dies, 257. Enquiry into the value and importance of, viii. 37. Not well enjoyed without a knowledge of the miseries of life, iii. 309. Enquiry into, 336. Not to be found in the company of young men of spirit and gaiety, 352. Not in pastoral life, 357. Not in the greatest prosperity, 359. Not in a state of solitude, 361. Not in living according to nature, 364. Not in high stations, 368. Not in private life, 372. Not often found between parents and children, 373. Not in the single life, 374.

Harcourt, Hon. Simon, Pope's Epitaph on him, with the visitor's criticisms on it, xii. 204.

Hard Words, on the use of, vii. 279.

Harley, Lord, character as a minister, xi. 11.

Harleian Library, account of it, ii. 227. Plan of the Catalogue, 227. General use of Catalogues, 229. The care and expence with which this collection was made, 232. General idea of the contents, 232.

Harleian Miscellany, introduction to that work, ii. 240.

Harmony, the end of poetical measures, v. 117.

Harmony and friendship, by what methods maintained and secured, vi. 122.

Hawkesworth, Dr. Inscription written by him, and put up at Rugby, to the memory of Joseph Cave and his two Sons, xii. 217.

Hawkins, Capt. John, his unfortunate expedition to Mexico, xii. 65.

Hawkin's Maiden Land. See *Falkland Islands.*

Health, the necessity of it to the duties and pleasures of life, iv. 308. The folly and wickedness of squandering it, 308. The anxious care of it in the valetudinarian, vain and ridiculous, 308. The disadvantages attending the loss of it, 308. The power of it in exalting the happiness of life, 309. Neglected by the votaries of business and the followers of pleasure, 311. By what methods to be preserved, v. 258.

Hearne, Mr. Thomas, the antiquary, his just reflections on the fragility of human life, v. 4.

Heartless, Peggy, a young Lady just married, her complaint of living in a second floor, when she came to London, because Mr. Quick found objections to all other lodgings, vii. 346.

Hebrides, Johnson's Journey to, viii. 205. Set off from Edinburgh, Aug. 18, 1773, 205. Account of Inch Keith, 205. Account of St. Andrew's, 207. Account of Aberbrothick, 212. Account of Montrose, 215. Account of Aberdeen, 217. Account

count of Slane's Castle, and the Buller of Buchan, 223. Account of Banff, 226. Account of Elgin, 229. Account of Fores, Calder, and Fort George, 231. Account of Inverness, 233. Account of Lough Ness, 236. Account of the Fall of Fiers, 241. Account of Fort Augustus, 243. Account of Anoch, 244. Account of Glensheals, 252. Account of the Highlands, 254. Account of Glenelg, 260. Account of Sky and Armidel, 262. Account of Coriatachan, in Sky, 267. Account of the Island of Raasay, 274. Account of Dunvegan, 285. Account of Ulinish, 291. Account of Talisker, in Sky, 297. Account of Ostig, in Sky, 299. Account of the Island of Col, 355. Account of Grissipol, in Col, 357. Account of the Isle of Mull, 376. Account of the Isle of Ulva, 382. Account of Inch Kenneth, 384. Account of Icolmkill, 391. Account of Lochbuy, 401. Account of Inverary, 405. Account of Glasgow, 406.

Heedful Sophia, her history, vii. 390.

Henry II. Story of the publication of his life, by Lord Lyttelton, xi. 385.

Henry IV. observations on Shakspeare's plays of, ii. 206.

Henry V. observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 208.

Henry VI. observations on Shakspeare's plays of, ii. 209.

Henry VIII. observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 213.

Henry, King of France, observations on the epitaph on his heart, ii. 332.

Hercules, his death cannot well be painted, vii. 180.

Hermeticus, his secret for detecting incontinence, vi. 344.

Hermit, history of an, iii. 361. His directions for the choice of life, 362.

Hertford, Countess of, obtains Savage's pardon for the murder of Sinclair, x. 312.

Hesiod, his distribution of mankind into three classes, iv. 441.

Hesitation, the effect of indolence and divided attention, v. 403.

Hickman, Miss, Verses to her, playing on the Spinnet, i. 348.

Highlands of Scotland, account of, viii. 254. Mountainous countries commonly contain the oldest inhabitants, 254. A robber sheltered from justice, any man of the same clan might be taken in his place, 256. Used to have the execution of the laws amongst themselves, 258. Their lairds supported their claims in the field, to makes treaties, and form alliances, 259. Origin of clans, 260. Great improvement in their manners, 273.

Highlanders, civility a part of their national character, viii. 236. One of their huts described, 239. Chiefly acquire the English language from the army or navy, 245. The most savage clans live next the Lowlands, 245. Raising of rents one of the means of driving them to emigration, 245. Definition of whom are intended by that name, 263. Uncertainty of the information received from them, 264. The plaid rarely worn in the islands, 265. Unwillingness of the Highlanders to lay aside the plaid, 266. The law which deprived them of arms considered, 316. State of Justice there considered, 318. Causes of their emigration considered, 322. Their habitations described,

described, 329. Their food, 331. Their bagpipes and pipers, 333. Their schools, 334. Their religion, 335. Their superstition much abated, 338. Account of their bards, 344. Their domesticks paid by particular pieces of beef, 346. Their arms, 347. Their funerals, 348.

Hill, Aaron, a friend to Savage, x. 300. Corrects Savage's tragedy of Sir T. Overbury, and writes the Prologue and Epilogue, 300. Encourages a volume of Savage's Miscellany of Poems, by publishing his story in the Plain Dealer, and by which seventy guineas was left for him in a few days, 301.

Hints, the folly of giving orders to servants by hints, vii. 182.

Hippocrates, Sir R. Blackmore's censure of his Aphorisms, x. 218.

Hirsutus, his character, vi. 217.

History, the writers of it often chargeable with the depravation of mankind, v. 52. The difficulty of writing a good one, 329. England remarkably barren of historical genius, 329. Not to be written in the style of poetry, vii. 318. Presses on the mind with the weight of truth, 339. Not so useful to make a man wise as biography, 339. Many of the relations of historians would not be credited unless well authenticated, 350.

Hogarth, W. Epitaph for him, i. 356.

Homer, the Iliad translated by Broome, Ozell, and Oldesworth, xi. 50. A play formed from the Iliad by Pope, when at school, xi. 56. A translation of the Iliad proposed to be published by subscription, by Pope, 76. History of the notes, 81. His life written by Parnell, 81. 654 copies subscribed for, and the money received by Pope, 5320*l.* 4*s.*, 83. History of Pope's translation of the Iliad, 83. Extracts from the first translation, 84. Proposals published by Pope for a translation of the Oddyssey, 104. Pope's translation in the British Museum, 105. The translation completed in 1725, 106. 819 copies subscribed for, 106. The translation criticised by Spence, 106. Pope's translation of the Iliad considered, 183. Observations on the notes, 186. Pope's translation of the Odyssey considered, 186. Remarks on the propriety of his versification, v. 130, 181. 144. 147. Why reckoned inferior to Virgil, by Scaliger, 140.

Honours, transitory, Cicero's reflections upon them, v. 300.

Hope, described by Cowley, ix. 37. The strong influence of it upon our resolutions and actions, iv. 9. Of remote advantages should be indulged with caution, as it often vitiates the human understanding, 11, 12. Frequently attended with discontent and impatience, 27. Fallacious and afflictive, necessary in some degree in every condition of life, 423. 427. The rational advantages of it acquired by wisdom and fortitude, 428. The visionary and delusive amusements of it subside in age and want, 429. It ought to be cherished when it operates as an excitement of industry, v. 292. It predominates amidst frequent disappointments, vii. 323. In what respect the chief happiness of man, 367. Its frustration less dreadful than its extinction, vii. 234.

Horace, remarks on several passages of, iii. 149. Lib. iv. Ode. vii. translated, i. 349.

Horses, account of those in the island of Sky, viii. 305. In the island of Barra not more than 26 inches in height, 364.

Horse-Racing, the folly of, iii. 141.

Hospitals for the Sick, the use and advantages of, vii. 15. Their being made permanent recommended, 15. Danger from the competitions between different hospitals, 16.

Howard, Sir Robert, joins Dryden in writing the Indian Queen, ix. 312. Has a controversy with Dryden on dramatick rhyme, 319. 321.

Hudibras, Part I. published 1663. Part II. 1664. Part III. published 1678, ix. 186. The idea taken from Don Quixote, 190. The characters compared, 191. Being written on a temporary subject, is now nearly forgotten, vii. 237.

Hughes, John, his life, x. 142. Born at Marlborough, in Wiltshire, 142. Educated in a dissenter's academy, 142. Became skilled in poetry and musick, 142. Held a place in the office of Ordnance, 142. Translated Fontenelle's Dialogues of the Dead, and added two new ones, which he dedicates to Lord Wharton, who promised to provide for him in Ireland, 144. Assisted in the Tatler, Spectator, and Guardian, 144. Made secretary to the Commissioners of Peace, 1717, 146. Died in 1719-20, 147. Account of his works, 147. His character according to Swift and Pope, 147.

Hum, story of Burnet and Sprat respecting the practice of humming, when sermons were approved of, x. 41.

Human Wishes, the Vanity of, in imitation of the Tenth Satire of Juvenal, i. 207.

Humour, good, the peculiar value of this quality, v. 7, 8.

Humourist, considerations on that character, iii. 285.

Hungary, Queen of, opposes the King of Prussia's claim on Silesia, xii. 235. Surrenders half of Silesia to the King of Prussia, 237. Opposed on every side, prepares for resistance, 245. 500,000*l.* voted to her by the English Parliament, 246. Makes peace with the King of Prussia, and surrenders the remaining half of Silesia to him, 250. Proceedings against the army of France, 252.

Hunt, Arabella, account of her, x. 200.

Hymenæus, his account of the disagreeable qualities of some ladies, v. 265. 271. 278. 284. His marriage with Tranquilla, and the happiness connected with it, vi. 159.

Hyperboles, examples of, enormous and disgusting, ix. 29.

Hyperdulus, account of his treatment by his relations, vi. 51.

Hypertatus, his reflections upon the conveniences and advantages of a garret, v. 292. 299.

Hypocrisy, not always to be charged upon such as are zealous for virtues which they neglect to practice, iv. 90. Wherein it differs from affectation, 134.

I. and J

JAMAICA characterized, ii. 359.

James I. King, a remarkable conversation between him and the Bishops of Durham and Winchester, ix. 230. Wrote in defence of Witchcraft, iii. 72. Characterized, ii. 354.

Ianthe, her character, iv. 121.

Java, island of, account of, and of the inhabitants, xii. 143.

Icolmkill, account of, viii. 395.

Idleness, its fatal effects, v. 89. Its competition with pride, vii. 121. Character of the true votaries of, 121. Under the appearance of business, ridiculed, 191.

Idler, definition of an, vii. 1. The peculiar characteristick of man, 2. Has no rivals or enemies, 3. His privilege to form schemes, 3. Always inquisitive, and seldom retentive, 3. Naturally censorious, 4. May sometimes be stimulated to vigour and activity, 4. Invites correspondents, 4. Laments his not having received any essays, 6. A genuine one described, 34. Enemies to the Idler, 36. Journal of a genuine one, 129. His farewell, 408.

Idlers, the various employment of, vii. 64. Cruel Idlers reprobated, 65.

Jenyns, Soame, review of his Free Enquiry into the Nature and Origin of Evil, viii. 23.

Ignorance of ourselves, the source of most errors in human conduct, iv. 158. And admiration, their mutual and reciprocal operation, v. 25.

Images, how the same images strike the mind in a similar manner, as Spring, Night, Grove, &c. iii. 238.

Imagination, the danger of indulging the excursions and amusements of it, iii. 422. v. 110.

Imitation of others, when attended with servility, highly censurable, vi. 145.

Imlac, the history of, ii. 323. Son of a merchant at Goiama, 324. Receives 10,000 pieces of gold of his father, for the purpose of trading, 325. Resolves on travelling instead of trading, 326. Arrives at Surat, and is plundered by his servants and dependants, 327. Arrives at Agra, the capital of Indostan, 328. Proceeds through Persia and Arabia, 329. Becomes a poet, 330. Resides three years in Palestine, 334. Becomes impatient to return to his native country, 338. His disappointment of finding happiness, on his return, his father being dead, and divided his estate amongst his brothers, they left the country, and he found hardly a person who knew him, 339. His retreat to the happy valley, 340. Leaves the happy valley with Rasselas and Nekayah, 347.

Impatience of study, the mental disease of the present generation, vi. 82.

Imperia, her ambition and pride, v. 283.

Inch Keith, island of, account of, viii. 205.
Inch Kenneth, account of, viii. 384. Account of a remarkable cave there, 388.
Inconsistency, distinguished from diversity, iii. 325.
Incontinence, the effect of the magnet in the detection of, v. 341. A scheme for the detection of it proposed, 344.
Independents and Presbyterians, account of the disputes between them at Oxford, on the authority of ministers, xii. 200.
Indian, speech of an Indian on the European encroachments, vii. 325.
Indians of America, considerations on their granting their lands to foreign nations, ii. 338. The English and French both to be considered as robbers quarrelling for the spoil, 340.
Indians on the coast of Brazil, their method of taking ostriches, xii. 108. Account of them, 109.
Indolence, the difficulty of being reformed from it, vi. 93.
Industry, necessary, as well as genius, to acquire an eminence in literary productions, iv. 165. 167.
Ingratitude, the peculiar baseness and infamy of it, vi. 51. The effect of great depravity of mind, 51.
Injuries, the forgiveness of them necessary to happiness, vi. 260. When easiest to be practised, 261. The motives to encourage it, 261.
Innocence, the great prerogative of this excellent quality, iv. 434.
Interest, the influence of it upon the resolutions and actions of life, vi. 250. A destroyer of friendship, vii. 90.
Inverary, account of, viii. 405.
Inverness, account of, viii. 233. Account of the castle of Macbeth, 233.
Jocularity, must be caught at a particular point, iii. 4.
John, King, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 149.
Johnson, his Tour to the Western Islands. See *Hebrides*.
Johnson, Dr. life of, i. 1. Is presented with the freedom of Aberdeen, viii. 222. Conceived the first thoughts of the Journey to the Hebrides whilst resting by the side of a river in the Highlands, 251. His opinion of the authenticity of the poems of Ossian, 351. Select letters of, from Mrs. Piozzi's collection, xii. 331. Select prayers and meditations, 441. Prayers and devotional exercises, 449.
Johnson, Mr. (of the Lay Monastery), his character, x. 210.
———, *Mrs.* See *Stella*.
Iona, account of, viii. 390.
Jonson, Ben, made his own plots, ix. 330. Characterized as a writer of plays, 344.
Jortin, Mr. assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, xi. 81.
Journal, of a senior fellow of a college, vii. 129. Of a scholar, 267.
Journey into Devonshire, exaggeratingly related, vii. 198.
Ireland, may date its riches and prosperity from the patronage of Dean Swift, xi. 37.
Irene, a tragedy, i. 223.
Iron, every where to be found, vii. 146. More valuable for the use

use of man than gold, 146. Necessaries of life plentiful as iron, superfluities scarce as gold, 146.
Julian Port, account of the inhabitants of, xii. 113.
Julius Cæsar, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, ii. 214.
Junius, his writings characterized, viii. 129.
Junius (the Grammarian), account of his writings, ii. 39.
Justice, the measure of it prescribed to us, clear and comprehensive, v. 60. A strict regard to it ought to regulate the distributions of mercy, 61. The exercise of it should be softened by prudence and lenity, 271. First impelled by injustice, vii. 358. State of the administration of, in the Hebrides, viii. 319.
Juvenal, Satire III. imitated, in London, a poem, i. 191. Satire X. imitated, in the Vanity of Human Wishes, i. 207.

K.

KAIL, account of that plant, viii. 234.
Kelp, account of the manufacture of, in Sky, viii. 304.
King, William, his life, x. 31. Born in London, 1663, and allied to Clarendon, 31. Scholar at Westminster, and elected to Christ-Church, 31. Was said to have read over and made his remarks on more than 22,000 books and MSS. before he was of eight years standing, 31. Took his Master's degree as Grand Compounder, 31. Admitted Advocate at Doctor's Compounder, 32. Wrote a confutation of Varillas's Account of Wickliffe, 32. Translates several books from the French, 32. Answers Molesworth's Account of Denmark, 32. Mingled in the controversy between Boyle and Bentley, 32. In 1699, writes A Journey to London, 32. Satirizes Sir Hans Sloane in the Transactioneer, 32. Signalizes himself in the defence of the Earl of Anglesea against his lady, 33. Made Judge of the Admiralty, and Keeper of the Records in Birmingham's Tower, 33. Finds an idle and thoughtless friend in Upton, 33. Returns to London in 1708, 33. Account of his works, 33. Made Gazetteer, which he soon resigned, 34. Died on Christmas-day, 1712, 35.
Kings, advantages from their being acquainted with the lower lines of life, xii 226.
Kneller, Sir Godfrey, Pope's Epitaph on him, with the Visitor's criticisms, xi. 209.
Knolles, Sir Francis, the peculiar excellence of his History of the Turks, v. 331.
Knowledge, its greatest importance, when useful to virtue and happiness, v. 72. The desire of acquiring it should be subservient to some nobler principle. 202. The desire of it, in many, of feeble and transient influence, vi. 223. The failures to which men devoted to the study of it are peculiarly exposed, 233. The difficulty in obtaining it, vii. 364. The folly of searching for it in foreign languages, and neglecting our own, 365.

Knowledge of ourselves, its great use and importance, iv. 158. The indiscretions and disadvantages which arise from the neglect of it, 158, 159. Necessary to preserve us from crimes as well as follies, 181. Promoted by scenes of adversity, 186.
Knowledge, Tree of, metaphysically described, ix. 24.

L.

LABOUR and Rest the parents of health and vigour, iv. 218. The necessity of it considered, viii. 40.
Ladies, many of their indiscretions and errors arise from unacquaintance with themselves, iv. 161. Some of their appropriate virtues related, v. 165. Several of their degrading qualities described in the characters of Ferocula, Misothea, and Sophronia, 268. The folly of rendering themselves cheap, v. 171.
Lady, unfortunate, on whom Pope wrote verses, story of, xi. 69.
Lairds, in Sky, described, viii. 309.
Landsdown, Lord. See *Granville, George.*
Language, a plan for a society for the reformation, formed by the Earl of Roscommon assisted by Dryden, ix. 214. The plan revived by Dr. Swift, 215. The probable consequences of such a society, 216. Remarks on the purity and propriety of it, vi. 165. The progress of, vii. 253. The impossibility of reducing it to a fixed standard, ii. 52. Refinement in, obtained only from books, viii. 349.
Last, the general dread of the last, vii. 408. Reflections on the use to be made of the last of any human action, 409.
Latrona, her character, vi. 247.
Laud, Abp., account of a dispute between him and Cheynel, xii. 193.
Lauder, William, Letter from, to Mr. Douglas, written by Johnson, viii. 9.
Laurence, Th. M. D. ad, cum filium peregre agentem desiderio nimis tristi persequereter, i. 372.
Lay Monastery, account of a periodical paper of that name, published as a sequel to the Spectator, x. 209.
Laziness, commonly associated with timidity, v. 402.
Lear, King, observations on Shakspeare's tragedy of, ii. 218.
Learned Men, their complaints of ill treatment and neglected merit examined, v. 36. The neglect of some occasioned by their own inconsistency of conduct, 38. Such become objects of just contempt, who by their writings seduce others to vice, 41. By various actions exposed to contempt, 420. Their condescension and affability sources of great esteem, 422. Advantages from their living in societies, iii. 133.
Learning, Sir R. Blackmore's opinion of, x. 220. Eminence in, not to be obtained without labour, iv. 139. The possession of applause on that account, a precarious tenure, 140. Its origin and excellence, 144. Wherein it differs from wit, 145. The mutual advantages from an union with wit, 145. The proper business of youth, v. 238. Degraded by promiscuous

cuous and indecent dedications, 413. Wherein the chief art consists, 418. Literary eminence not to be acquired from the study of books, vi. 86. Advanced by adhering to a settled plan, vii. 266. Sometimes improved by accident, 266. Obstructions to, 375. Not confined to time or place, 376. The advantages of, iii. 197, 198. Persius's opinion of, 199. History of a man of, 415.

Leasowes, rendered elegant by the taste of Shenstone, xi. 279.

Lee, Nath. in conjunction with Dryden wrote the Duke of Guise and Œdipus, ix. 343.

Legacy-Hunter, his character represented in the history of Captator, vi. 327.

Legendary Tales, burlesque on the modern versification of, i. 354.

Lentulus, his history, iii. 159.

Letters, characters not to be established from them, xi. 156.

Leviculus, his character, vi. 244.

Levet, Dr. Robert, verses on his death, i. 342.

Liar, characterized, iii. 135. Lie of vanity defined, 137. Ought to be punished at the whipping-post or in the pillory, 140.

Liberalis, the wit, some account of the disagreeable treatment he met with, vi. 137.

Liberty of the Press, reflections on, x. 320.

Library of the Marischal College, Aberdeen, account of, viii. 220.

Lies, once uttered, sullenly supported, x. 186.

Life, human, the tediousness of, to those who are averse to the pleasures of solitude, iv. 29. The shortness and uncertainty of it should determine us to moderate our passions and contract our desires, 114. The miseries incident to it designed for the exercise and improvement of virtue, 209. Instinct and passion the first springs and motives of action in it, 313. Often distressed by new desires and artificial passions, which strongly operate, and produce avarice, vanity, and ambition, 314. The main of it composed of small incidents, 429. The great end of prudence is to direct some of its principal scenes, 430. The shortness of it not duly regarded, v. 3. The fragility of it not duly regarded, 4. Exact calculations of the value of it more useful in traffick than in morality, 4. The duties of it commensurate to its duration, 6. Described under the similitude of the ocean, 195. The numerous dangers which attend our passage through it, 197. The gulph of intemperance peculiarly dangerous and fatal, 199. The numerous blessings of it to be esteemed and improved as means of happiness, 257. A conviction of the shortness of it should repress our projects, and limit our expectations, vi. 147. Of multitudes compared to a lottery, 244. The general plan of it should be formed from reflections, 255. On the uncertainty of, vii. 164. Compared to a day and a year, 172. Plans laid down seldom put in practice, exemplified in the history of Omar, 402. Possidippus's account of, iii. 234. Metrodorus's account of, 235. Succession of seasons in, as represented by Soame Jenyns, viii. 42. Theodore's Vision on the progress of, ii. 454.

Life, choice of, observations on, iii. 352. The hermit's directions, 361.
Life, country, the busy scenes of it described in the character of lady Bustle, iv. 325.
Life, fashionable, or modish, disgraced by numerous and detestable follies, v. 286.
Light, the poetical propagation of, ix. 33.
Linger, Dick, the story of, vii. 80.
Listlessness characterized, in the story of Dick Linger, vii. 80.
Literary Property, the villainy of piracy in, ix. 308. Never heard of but in England, 308. Stupidity the surest title to an author's writings, 309.
Literature, the manufacturers of it, account of their characters, vi. 32. State of, in Scotland, from the middle of the sixteenth century, viii. 234.
Lobo, Father, Preface to the Translation of his Voyage to Abyssinia, ii. 321.
Lochbuy, account of, viii. 401.
Lofty, Lady, her character, iv. 76.
London and Bristol, delineated by Savage, x. 386. Happiness of the great on their return to London, vii. 322. Happiness of virgins going there to try their fortunes, 322. Their happiness generally ends in disappointment, 324. A Poem, in imitation of the Third Satire of Juvenal, i. 195.
London Chronicle, Preliminary Discourse to it, Jan. 1, 1757, ii. 259. Plan of that newspaper, 260.
Longueville, William, some account of, ix. 184.
Lottery, the life of multitudes compared to it, vi. 244. The passionate and ensnaring hopes of gain by them, vii. 238, 239. Most commonly visionary and fallacious. 239. The imaginary prospects of fortuitous riches, injurious to trade, and the sources of perpetual delusion, 240, 241.
Love, metaphysically described, ix. 26. In geographical poetry compared to travels through various countries, 26. Described according to the laws of augury, 27. A lover neither dead nor alive, 32. A lover's heart, a hand grenado, 33. A mistress beloved is fairer in idea than in reality, 34. Meditations of a lover, 35. Described by Dryden, 437. Negatively described, 277. Success in it most easily obtained by indirect approaches, iv. 3. The various arts of, in different ages, iii. 215. The universal agent of the stage, except in Shakspeare, ii. 138. The physical cause of, x. 216. Man inspired to honour and glory by it, i. 321.
Love of Excellence, natural, ix. 10.
Love's Labour Lost, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 201.
Love's Riddle, written by Cowley, when at schoool, ix. 3.
Lover of his Country, characterized, viii. 145.
Lough Ness, account of, viii. 236. Twenty-four miles long, and two miles broad, 237. Reported never to freeze, 238.
Louisbourg, the English and French account of the capture of it, contrasted, vii. 76.

Lucan, his Pharsalia translated by Christopher Pitt, before he was twenty years of age, xi. 217.
Lucas Family, all the brothers valiant, all the sisters virtuous, vii. 47.
Lucia, St. Island of, the conduct of the French when the English attempted to make a settlement there, ii. 346.
Lucifer, described by Cowley, ix. 55.
Luxury, united with indolence produceth the most pernicious effects, v. 217. The veterans of it strongly addicted to sallies and excess of resentment and fury, v. 259. Its fatal effects exemplified in the history of Hacho, King of Lapland, vii. 382.
Lyce, an elderly lady, verses to, i. 341.
Lycidas, written by Milton, in 1637, ix. 91. Character of that poem, 148.
Lyttelton, George Lord, his life, xi. 380. Son of Sir Thomas Lyttelton of Hagley, Worcestershire, born 1709, 380. Educated at Eton, and removed to Christ Church, 380. An early writer both in verse and prose, 380. Leaves Oxford 1728, and travels through France and Italy, 381. An opponent in parliament to Sir R. Walpole, 381. Secretary to the Prince of Wales, 381. Introduces Thomson and Mallet into the suit of the Prince of Wales, 381. Lord of the Treasury 1744, 382. Writes observations on the conversion of St. Paul, 1747, 383. His father's letter to him on that publication, 383. Succeeds his father to the title of Baronet 1751, 383. Becomes Cofferer and Privy Counsellor 1754, 384. Chancellor of the Exchequer 1755, 384. Travels into Wales, 384. Patronises Archibald Bower, 384. Publishes Dialogues on the Dead, 384. Created Lord Lyttelton, 385. Story of the publication of his life of Henry II. 385. Account of his last illness and death 1763, by his physician, 388. His Epitaph, 388. His poetical works characterized, 389.

M.

MACBETH, a tragedy, remarks on the impropriety, as well as energy of its diction, vi. 166. Observations on Shakspeare's tragedy, iii. 68. Account of the castle of, at Inverness, viii. 233.
Macclesfield, Earl and Countess of, account of their divorce, x. 283. The Countess marries Col. Brett, 283. Gives 50*l.* to Savage, 295. Disappointed in her South Sea traffic, 295. Continues to persecute her son, 297.
Macdonald, Sir Alexander, account of his house at Armidel in the Isle of Sky, viii. 262. The tradition of one of his predecessors burning the inhabitants of Culloden in a church, 263.
Macdonald, Hugh, account of his conspiracy against his chief to whom he was heir, in the time of James VI. viii. 293.
Mackinnon, account of his house at Coriatachan in Sky, viii. 268.
Maclean of Col, account of himself and family, viii. 355.

Maclean, Dr. of Mull, account of him and his family, viii. 379.
Maclean, Sir Allen, account of his family, viii. 385.
Maclean, Donald, (heir of the laird of Col,) spent a considerable time in Hertfordshire and Hampshire, in order to acquire the knowledge of agriculture, viii. 297.
Macleod, account of that happy family, proprietors of the island of Raasay, viii. 274. Account of that family and their house at Dunvegan, 286.
Macleod, Col. of Talisker, in Sky, account of his house and family, viii. 296.
Macquarry, account of the Clan of, viii. 383.
Macrae, account of that Clan in the Highlands, viii. 252.
Magnet, the pretended and imaginary influence of it, vi. 341. First discovered 1299, ii. 265.
Mallet, David, writes part of the prologue to Sophonisba, xi. 226. In conjunction with Thomson, writes the Masque of Alfred, 229. His Life, 347. Of the Clan of Macgregors, his father took the name of Malloch, 347. Janitor of the High School at Edinburgh, 347. Tutor to the sons of the Duke of Montrose, 347. Travels with his pupils, and on his return to London, is introduced to persons of the highest rank and character, 348. William and Margaret, his first production, 1724, 348. His other works, 348. Changes his name to Mallet, 349. Becomes acquainted with Pope, 349. Writes the Life of Bacon prefixed to his works, 1750, 350. Undertakes the Life of Marlborough, 350. Under-secretary to the Prince of Wales, with a pension of 200*l.* a year, 350. In conjunction with Thomson, writes the Masque of Alfred, 350. His conversation with Garrick on introducing his name in the life of Marlborough, 350. Dutchess of Marlborough leaves him 1000*l.* 351. Leaves no historical labours behind him, 351. Mustapha acted at Drury Lane, 1739, 351. Sells the copy of Amynta and Theodore for 120*l.*, 352. Introduced to the friendship of Lord Bolingbroke, 352. Lord Bolingbroke leaves him his works, 352. Masque of Britannia, acted 1753, 353. Elvira acted 1763, 353. Keeper of the book of entries for ships in the port of London, 353. Writes a letter of accusation against Admiral Byng, under the character of a Plain Man, for which he receives a pension, 353. Died 1765, 353. Character of him and his works, 353.
Malouines. See *Falkland Islands.*
Man, a good man, a telescope, ix. 28. All he has to do is to live and die, 34. Who travels, compared with his wife who stays at home, 38. Characters of a cheerful and pensive man, 155. Lord Rochester's satire criticised, 207. Diversified by various tastes, iv. 31. In the different classes have desires and pleasures peculiar to themselves, 441. Their desires more numerous than their attainments, v. 210. Ranged under the two classes of merely animal and reasonable beings, 226, 227. These qualities expressive of their constitutional and habitual characters, 226, 227. The importance of every one in his

own eyes, vii. 45. Most men struggle for fame, 45. The difficulty of getting a name, 45. The necessity of his being acquainted with himself, 105. The difficulty of such enquiries, 105. His desires encrease with his acquisitions, 117. Money and time the heaviest burthens of life, 118. The similar condition in all situations of life, 203. Few opportunities of shewing great powers, 204. The necessity of the enquiry, "*What have ye done?*" 355. The characters of a reading man, a ready man, and of an exact man, considered, iii. 197. Enquiry how far he was first created perfect, viii. 56. Of the islands of Sky described, 307. Different ranks of, there, 309. Theodore's vision on the progress of the life of, ii. 454.

Man and Wife, on disputes between, vii. 49.

Manna, metaphysically described, ix. 24.

Manuscripts, the propriety of placing them in some publick library, vii. 201. The loss of knowledge, by the loss of old libraries, lamented, 263.

Marino, metaphysical poetry borrowed from him, ix. 23.

Marlborough, Duke of, his life undertaken by Mallet, xi. 350. The old Duchess leaves Mallet 1000*l.* as a reward for writing the life, 351. At Mallet's death, he left no historical labours, 351.

Marlborough, Henrietta, Duchess of, her partiality for Congreve, x. 195. Congreve leaves her 10,000*l.*, 195. Erects a monument to his memory, 195. Had his image in wax on her toilet, 195. Stole his picture from Jacob Tonson, 195.

Marlborough, Sarah, Duchess of, celebrated by Pope in his characters of women, under the character of Atossa, xi. 132. Severe reflections on her conduct, iv. 84.

Marriage, the divorce of the Earl and Countess of Macclesfield by the Lords, considered as a bad precedent, x. 283. The dictate of nature, and the institution of Providence, iv. 116. General observations concerning it, 226. The source of those infelicities which frequently attend that state, 117, 253. Why so many are unsuitable, 292. Contracts of it begun in fraud, end in disappointment, 294. The afflictions incident to it how to be alleviated, 291. The officiousness of some in promoting them censured, v. 278. The folly of publishing them in newspapers, vii. 46. Praises on that occasion generally fallacious, 47. Proposal for an office for writing matrimonial panegyricks, 48. Has many pains, but celibacy no pleasures, iii. 374. On the happiness and unhappiness of that state, 379. Early marriages characterised, 381. Misfortunes of late marriages, 384. Early marriages best pleased with their partners, late ones with their children, 384.

Martin (who wrote the history of the Hebrides,) account of him, viii. 281.

Marvel, Will, story of his journey into Devonshire, vii. 194.

Mason, Mr. additions to Mr. Temple's character of Gray, xi. 371.

Masquerades, their pernicious influence and effects, iv. 64.

Matter,

Mutter, considerations on the hypothesis of, by Sir Isaac Newton, ii. 384.
May, Thomas, superior both to Cowley and Milton in Latin poetry, ix. 13.
Maypole, Miss, her observations on the imprudent conduct of her mother, iv. 351.
Measure for Measure, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 209.
Mediocrity, a quality essential to happiness as well as virtue, iv. 245.
Melanthia, her character, iv. 255.
Melcombe, Lord, his *Tusculan la Trappe*, sent to Dr. Young, xi. 331. His Letter to Young, 331.
Melissa, her character, v. 25. Her vanity excited by a general veneration, 25. By an unexpected reduction of her fortune, subject to various mortifications, 29.
Melissus, his character, iv. 121.
Memory, the peculiar exercise of that faculty of the mind, iv. 265. Characterised, vii. 175. Collection and distribution the two offices of, 175. Collection the most agreeable part, 175. Themistocles wish to learn the art of forgetfulness, 178. Observations on the improvement of, 288. The mother of the Muses, 296. The necessity of, in the acquisition of knowledge, 296. Nature seldom sparing in the gifts of, 296. Few examples of enormous, wonderful, and gigantic memory, 297. Methods of improvement, 298.
Menander, style of, clear and natural, iii. 18. Plutarch's sentiment upon, 23.
Mercator, his history, iii. 225.
Merchant, the knowledge necessary for a merchant, ii. 317. The necessity of, between the manufacturer and consumer, explained, viii. 311.
Merchant of Venice, observations on Shakspeare's, ii. 202.
Merchant, Mr. in company with Savage and Gregory when James Sinclair was murdered, x. 305.
Merit, the complaints of the neglect of it often ill-grounded, iv. 378. The persecutors of real merit distinguished into various classes, vi. 24.
Merriment, preconcerted, seldom answers the expectation, vii. 232. Generally the effect of chance, 233.
Merry Wives of Windsor, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 198.
Merton College, Oxford, accounts of the disputes respecting the visitation of, xii. 193.
Metaphysical Poetry, what, ix. 19. Borrowed from Marino and his followers, and recommended by Donne and Jonson, 23. Other successors, 23. Critical remarks on this kind of writing, 23.
Metastasio, translation of an air in the Clemenza of, i. 358. Translation of the speech of Aquileio, in the Adriano of, 359.
Metrodorus, his account of life, iii. 235.
Midsummer, an Ode, i. 328.

Midsummer Night's Dream, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 201.

Milbourne, Rev. Mr. specimen of his criticism on Dryden's translation of Virgil, ix. 426.

Milton, John, preface to an essay on his use and imitation of moderns in his Paradise Lost, viii. 1. From whence he took the first hints of Paradise Lost, 2. MSS. called Adam Unparadised, supposed to be the embryo of Paradise Lost, 3. Subscriptions solicited for Mrs. Eliz. Foster his grand-daughter, 6. Inferior both to May and Cowley in Latin Poetry, ix. 13. Life of, 84. Descended from the proprietors of Milton, near Thame in Oxfordshire, 84. His grandfather keeper of the forest of Shotover, 84. His father a Scrivener, and eminent for his skill in musick, 84. His mother's name Caston, a Welsh family, 85. His brother Christopher knighted by King James, and made a Judge, 85. His sister Anne, married Edward Philips, Secondary in the Crown Office, who left two sons John and Edward, who were educated by the poet, 85. Born at his father's the Spread Eagle, in Bread-street, London, Dec. 9, 1608, 85. Received private tuition under Mr. Young, then went to St. Paul's school, and entered Sizar at Christ's College, Cambridge, Feb. 12, 1624, 86. At fifteen years of age, he versified Psal. cxiv. and cxxxiv. 86. Wrote many elegies in his eighteenth year, 86. Wrote Latin verses with classic elegance, 87. Received corporal punishment at Cambridge, 87. Took his Bachelor's degree 1628, and Master's 1632, 88. Observations on his "*Scheme of Education*," 89. One of his objections to academical education, 89. His objections to entering into the ministry, 89. After leaving the university, he spent five years with his father in the country, where he read the Greek and Latin authors, 90. His Mask of Comus, first acted in 1634, 91. His Lycidas, written in 1637, and his Arcades about the same time, 91. Travels in 1638, 92. Scarce any ever wrote so much, or praised so few, 93. Particularly noticed at Florence, 93. Receives various Italian testimonies in his favour, 94. Returns to London, 95. Instructs his nephews, J. and E. Philips, and some other boys, 95. His biographers inclined to shrink from this part of his life, 96. A schoolmaster an honest and useful employment, 97. In education, he is said to have performed wonders, 97. On Sundays he instructed his scholars in theology, 99. His treatise on reformation, published in 1641, 99. Answers a book of bishop Usher's in defence of Episcopacy, 99. Publishes his reasons of church government urged against prelacy, and two other pamphlets on the same subject, 100. Marries Mary Powel, who leaves him after one month, 102. Publishes several books on divorce, for which he is called before the Lords, but soon dismissed, 103. Becomes an enemy to the Presbyterians, 103. Pays his addresses to a daughter of Dr. Davis, 104. His wife asks forgiveness, and returns to him, 104. Publishes his Arcopagitica, 104. Publishes a collection

of Latin and English poems 1645, 105. Takes a larger house in Barbican for his scholars, 105. Grants a refuge to the relations of his wife, 105. As a schoolmaster compared to a chamber milliner, 105. Is supposed to have had a design of entering into Sir W. Waller's army as Adjutant General, 106. Removes to a small house in Holborn, 106. Writes in justification of the King's murder, 106. Writes remarks on the articles of peace between Ormond and the Irish rebels, 107. Suspected of having interpolated the *Icon Basilike*, 107. Answers Salmasius's *Defensio Regis*, 108. His blindness laid to the charge of Salmasius's book, 110. Loses his wife in childbed, 111. Marries a daughter of Capt. Woodcock, who also dies in childbed in the first year, 111. Various answers to the "*Defensio Populi*," 109. Writes his "*Defensio Secunda*," 112. Instance of his flattery to Cromwell, 112. Supposed to have written the declaration of the reasons for a war with Spain, 114. Attempts to collect a Latin Dictionary, which is afterwards made use of in a new edition of Littleton, 115. Compiles a history of England to the Conquest, designs his Paradise Lost, 116. Sketch of the original plan, 116. Continues to write in favour of a Commonwealth, even to within a few weeks of the Restoration, 121. At the Restoration concealed himself in Bartholomew Close, 122. His Defence burned by the common hangman, 123. His prosecution stopped by the intercession of Davenant, whose life Milton had saved, 123. Removes to Jewin Street, and marries Elizabeth Minshul, 125. Is said to have had an offer of continuing in his place, 125. Accidence commenced Grammar 1661, 126. Employs Elwood the quaker to read Latin to him, 126. Takes a house in Artillery Lane, 127. Wrote his Paradise Lost only between the autumnal and vernal equinoxes, 129. Was of opinion that the world was in its decay, 130. Imagined the climate too cold for flights of imagination, 131. His daughters were not taught to write, 133. Lives unmolested after the Restoration, 134. Retires to Chafont during the plague, 134. The next year returns to Bunhill-fields, 135. A complete copy of Paradise Lost first seen 1665, 135. Obtains a licence, and sells the copy for 5*l.* and 5*l.* at the sale of 1300 copies of each of the first three editions, 135. Causes of the supposed neglect of the Paradise Lost, 136. Books of various languages read to him by his daughters and friends, 138. Publishes his history of England three years after Paradise Lost, 139. Publishes Paradise Regained, and Sampson Agonistes, in the same year, 140. Publishes his *Artis Logicæ plenior Institutio* 1672, 141. Publishes a Treatise on true Religion, &c. 141. Reprints his juvenile Poems with some additions, 142. His last publication was familiar Epistles in Latin, some academical exercises, 142. Died Nov. 10, 1674, and buried at St. Giles's Cripplegate, 142. A monument erected to his memory in Westminster Abbey by Mr. Benson, 143. His person described, 143. His domestic habits described,

scribed, 144. His salary, as Latin Secretary, 200*l.* a year, 145. Received 1000*l.* for his Defence of the People, lost very considerable sums of money, 145. Left 1500*l.* to his widow, 145. Account of his great learning, 145. His theological opinions, 146. His political notions, 147. He thought woman made only for obedience, and man for rebellion, 148. Account of his family, 149. Comus acted April 5, 1750, for the benefit of a grand-daughter of Milton, Dr. Johnson wrote a prologue, 150. Account of his poetical works, 152. Character of his Lycidas, 153. Character of *L'Allegro* and *Il Penseroso*, 155. Many of their images borrowed from Burton's Anatomy of Melancholy, 157. Mask of Comus characterised, 158. His sonnets characterised, 160. His Paradise Lost characterised, 160. His Paradise Regained characterised, 178. His Sampson Agonistes characterised, 178. Philips's Parody on him characterised, 300. His Paradise Lost becomes popular through Addison's remarks, x. 138. Remarks on his versification, v. 91, 105. The peculiarity of it, wherein it consists, 106. He formed his scheme of it upon the models of Greece and Rome, 115. Critical remarks on his Sampson Agonistes, a tragedy v. 431, 437.

Mince Pies and Plumb Porridge, animosities excited by the use of, ix. 197.

Mind, the productions of, proceed step by step, iii. 9. The freest part of man, 32. The tranquillity of it, from what sources generally derived, iv. 33. Its extensive powers displayed, 266. The rise and progress of its dispositions and faculties, v. 65. Shewn in the gradations from pleasure to ambition and avarice, 68. The medicines most suitable to its distempers, often unpleasing to the taste, 117.

Mines, alone, not the source of wealth, ii. 450. Without agriculture, must be exhausted for the purchase of bread, 451.

Minim, Dick, his history, vii. 239. Used the company of the lower players, 239. His opinion of many of the poets, 240. Becomes a critick, 242. Forms a plan for an academy of criticism, 244. Presides in a critical society, 245. His advice to a student, 247.

Ministers, account of the disputes between the Independents and Presbyterians on the authority of, iv. 510.

Misanthrope, of Moliere, a complete character, iii. 21.

Misella, her affecting narrative of her being betrayed by the treachery of her uncle, and the fatal influence of it on her virtue and happiness, v. 175. 181.

Misellus, his account of his commencing an author, iv. 103.

Misery, how increased by comparison with happiness, iii. 245.

Miseries of the World, the knowledge of, necessary to happiness, iii. 309.

Misæapelus, the events which discouraged him from engaging in trade, v. 288. His appearing in the character of a wit, 336.

Misocolax, his censure of the practice of giving unmerited praise, v. 355.

Misothea, her fondness for disputation, v. 268.
Misty, Dick, his history, vii. 315.
Mitissa, her conduct in a married life described, iv. 230.
Modena, Duke of, translation of a distich on his running away from a comet, i. 356.
Moderation, man of, his character, vi. 26.
Molesworth, his account of Denmark, answered by Dr. King, x. 32.
Monastick life, considerations on, iii. 436.
Monboddo, Lord, visited by Dr. Johnson, viii. 216.
Money, no man can be born a lover of it, xi. 151. Enquiry into the value of, in Scotland, about 200 years ago, viii. 220.
Money Lenders, their vile practices exposed, iii. 124.
Montague, Lady Mary Wortley, Savage's flattery of her in the dedication to his miscellany of poems, x. 303.
Montrose, account of, viii. 215.
Morad, his history, vi. 287. His dying charge to his son Abouzaid, 289.
Morality, inquiries relating to it vastly preferable to physical contemplations, iv. 157. This truth illustrated in the character of Gelidus, 157. The ancient poets very exceptionable teachers of it, 188.
Morin, Lewis, his life translated from the Eloge by Fontenelle, xii. 160. Born at Mens 1635, 160. Applies to the study of botany, 160. Studied philosophy at Paris, 161. Studies physick, and confines himself to a regimen of bread, water, and fruit, 161. Admitted Doctor of Physick 1662, 161. Physician to the Hotel Dieu, 162. Physician to the Mad. de Guise, who, at her death, leaves him a pension of 2000 livres, 163. Retires to St. Victor, 163. Associate botanist of the Royal Academy 1699, 163. Pensionary of the Royal Academy, 166. Died 1714, 167. He kept a journal of the weather for forty years, 166.
Morrow, Demetrius's speech on the expectation of, i. 263.
Mortality, the due consideration of it a proper means of preventing our misery, and promoting our happiness, iv. 110.
Mother, their greater cruelty in distressing their offspring than in murdering it, x. 313.
Mountains, on the measurement of the height of, viii. 248. Advantages of travelling through mountainous and barren countries, 250. Mountainous countries generally contain the oldest inhabitants, 254. Contain inhabitants more barbarous than maritime parts, 255. Mountaineers are warlike and thievish, 257.
Muck Island, account of, viii. 289.
Mull Isle, account of, viii. 376.
Murray, Lady Sophia, celebrated by Waller under the name of Amoret, ix. 233.
Myrtilla, her account of the character and behaviour of Flavia, v. 78.
Muses, memory the mother of, vii. 296.

Musick, the pleasure of ladies, in attending musical performances, vii. 68.
Mysargyrus, his history, iii. 109, 123. History of his companions in the Fleet prison, 141, 155.

N.

NAIRN, account of, viii. 232.
Narration, historical, the difficulty of this kind of writing illustrated, v. 328.
Nature, the contemplation of its works, fitted to afford pleasure and instruction, iv. 30. It furnishes a source of proper materials for reflection from the objects about us, and discovers new reasons for adoring the sovereign Author of the universe 30. By enlarging our curiosity after the works of nature we multiply the inlets of happiness, 32.
Nation, its state to be discovered by the manners of the common people, viii. 228.
Natural History, difficulties in writing on that subject, vii. 220.
Nature, no danger of her being exhausted, vii. 10.
Naval dominion, its origin, ii. 351,
Navigation, no tradition of, before Noah's Ark, ii. 264. Slow progress of, for two centuries after the discovery of the compass, 265. Don Henry, son of John I. King of Portugal, the first who formed the design of making new discoveries about 1410, 265. Short account of discoveries made under the direction of Don Henry, 266. Short account of the progress of other discoveries, 276.
Neale, Edmund, known by the name of Smith. See *Smith*.
Necessaries, and superfluities of life considered, vii. 147.
Needle-work, the folly of confining girls wholly to it, vii. 50.
Negligence, the power of it strengthened by small indulgencies, vi. 354.
Nelson, Robert, anecdote of him, iii. 287.
Neutrality, a prisoner may promise to observe it, ix. 11.
News, on the fond appetite for, iv. 387.
Newspapers, account of the Mercurius Aulicus, Mercurius Rusticus, and Mercurius Civicus, x. 86. Account of L'Estrange's Observator, and Lesley's Rehearsal, 86. The advantage of, to idlers, vii. 25. Contribute to the knowledge of the common people, 26. Directions for spinning out news, 27. The amazing increase of, 119. Description of a newswriter, by Sir Henry Wotton, 119. Qualifications of a newswriter, 119. On the increase of advertisements, 159.
New Scotland, the first plan of establishing a colony there, ii. 344.
Newton, Sir Isaac, Pope's Epitaph intended for him, with the Visitor's criticisms, xi. 214. Observations on his character, ii. 328. An Epitaph recommended for him, 328. Review of his four

four Letters to Dr. Bentley, containing some arguments in proof of a Deity, 384.
Night, described by Dr. Donne, ix. 37.
Nitella, her excessive nicety freely censured, v. 281.
Noir, M. le, short account of, vii. 192.
Nombre de Dios, account of Drake's expedition against it, xii. 67.
Nothing, criticism on Lord Rochester's poem on, ix. 204. Poema J. Passeratii de Nihilo, 208.
Novelty, the strong propensity of the human mind towards it, v. 54. Hence we grow weary of uniformity, 55. An eminent source of pleasing gratification, 409. The charms of it transitory, however endearing the possession, vi. 191. In writers, considered, ix. 77.
Nouradin, the merchant of Samarchand, his dying address to his son Almamoulin, v. 314.
Nugaculus, his mean and absurd character delineated, v. 206.
Nugent, Dr. account of his translation of the Life of Benvenuto Cellini, ii. 250.

O.

OBSCURITY in writing, often the effect of haste, vi. 173.
Obidah, his journey of a day, an instructive description of human life, iv. 412.
Old age, its best pleasures drawn from a review of a virtuous life, iv. 268. By what means it becomes entitled to veneration, 323. The peculiar vices of it described, 324. The numerous infelicities which attend it, 436. Wealth only an imaginary support of it, 436. Piety the only proper and adequate relief and best provision against the infirmities and distresses of that season, 440. Is peculiarly given to procrastination, v. 2.
Oldfield, Mrs. allows Savage 50*l.* a year during her life, x. 296. Celebrated in the *Wanderer* for her beauty, 295.
Oldisworth, with Broome and Ozell, translate the Iliad, xi. 50.
Omar (the son of Hassan), his history, vii. 401.
Opera, the Italian, an exotick and irrational entertainment, x. 143.
Opinion, is always independent, iii. 32.
Opinions, formed in solitude, liable to error, xi. 59. Causes of the variety of, considered, iii. 232.
Oppression, domestick, the terror and distress of it, v. 48. The difficulty of preventing it in governments, iii. 324.
Opulence, visionary, the folly of, v. 15.
Oratory, as practised by the English, considered, vii. 361.
Order for Merit, instituted in Prussia, xii. 230.
Orthography, difficulties in settling it, ii. 10.
Ortogrul of Basra, his history, vii. 393. Resolves to gain riches by silent

silent profit, and persevering industry, 394. Does not find happiness in riches, 395.

Ossian, Dr. Johnson's opinion of the authenticity of the poems of, viii. 352.

Ostig in Sky, account of, viii. 299. Miserable state of agriculture there, 301.

Ostriches, the Indian method of taking them, xii. 108.

Othello, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 224.

Otway, Thomas, life of, ix. 223. Son of Humphry Otway, Rector of Woolbeding, born at Trottin in Sussex, March 3, 1651, 223. Educated at Winchester school, and Fellow Commoner of Christ Church, 1669, 223. Commences Player, in which he fails, 223. Writes the tragedy of Alcibiades, 1675, 224. Translates "Titus and Berenice," and the Cheats of Scapin, 1677, 224. Writes Friendship in Fashion in 1678, 224. Enters into the army as Cornet, but soon quits it, 225. His Don Carlos, said to have been acted for thirty nights successively, 226. His Orphan, exhibited 1680, 226. History and Fall of Caius Marius, in the same year, 226. The Soldier's Fortune published 1683, 226. Venice Preserved published 1685, 226. Died April 14, 1685, 227.

Overbury, Sir Thomas, account of Savage's tragedy, x. 298.

Ovid, the Epistle of Sappho to Phaon, translated by Pope, xi. 58.

Ozell, Mr. with Oldisworth and Broome, translated the Iliad, xi. 50.

P.

PAGE, Judge, his speech to the jury on the trial of Savage, x. 308. Savage revenges the insolence and partiality by a satire on the Judge, 315. Story of his sending to Pope respecting the filling up a blank with his name, xi. 192.

Pain, enquiry into the distinction between it and pleasure, viii. 24.

Painting, positions respecting minature and cupola painting, ix. 306. The parallel of, with poetry, vii. 134. The fondness of the English to their own portraits, 178. Advantages of historical pictures, 179. Actions not momentary cannot be properly represented in a picture, 180. Proper and improper subjects considered, 180. To be a connoisseur rather than a critick, recommended, 305. On imitating nature, 317. Different schools not to be united, 318. Observations on the Dutch and Italian styles, 318. Observations on the style of Michael Angelo, 319. More enthusiam recommended to painters, 319. Attending to accidental discriminations, is to deviate from the line of beauty, 334.

Pamphlets, history of their origin and progress, ii. 240.

Papilius, his account of the ingredients necessary to form a wit, vi. 4.

Paradise Lost, designed by Milton, ix. 116. Sketch of the original plan, 116. The uncertainty from whence he took the plan, 124. Written only between the autumnal and vernal equinoxes, 127. Chiefly composed in the night and the mornings, 132. A complete copy first seen 1665, 135. Obtains a licence, and sells the copy for 5*l.* and 5*l.* more at the sale of 1300 copies of each of the three first editions, 135. First edition 1667, second 1674, third 1678, 136. Characterized, 162.

Paradise Regained, characterized, ix. 178.

Parallels, on illustrating things by, vii. 134.

Parents, observations on the bad behaviour of, vii. 167. Exemplified in the story of Perdita, 168.

Parliament of England, the right of punishing its own members asserted, viii. 68. A man attainted of felony cannot sit in Parliament, 70. Proceedings on the expulsion of Mr. Wilkes considered, 71. On their declaring Mr. Luttrel elected, 72. Considerations on the re-election of persons who have accepted of places and pensions, 77. Difference between their vote and a law, explained, 79. Progress of petitions to, 87. Favourers for a dissolution always to be found, 90. Persons proper to be elected representatives, 142. The power of, over the Americans, considered, 172.

Parnell, Thomas, his life by Goldsmith, x. 49. Descended from a Cheshire family, born at Dublin 1679, 50. Educated at Dublin university, 50. Archdeacon of Clogher 1705, 50. Married Anne Minchin, 50. Joins the Tories in the latter end of Queen Anne's reign, 50. Becomes too fond of the bottle, 51. Died July 1717, in his way to Ireland, 51. Character of his works, 52. Wrote the life of Homer prefixed to Pope's translation of the Iliad, xi. 81. His poems published by Pope in 1721, 102.

Passeratius, Jo. poema ad Erricum Memmium, ix. 208.

Passion, the ruling, theory of, xi. 130.

Passions, persons under the predominant influence of them exceedingly offensive to others, iv. 66. Natural and adscititious, strong motives of action, 314, 315. Excited by sympathy, 443.

Pastorals, generally the first productions of a poet, xi. 170.

Pastoral Poetry, the progress of xi. 253.

Pastoral Life, a glimpse of the state of happiness in, iii. 357.

Pastor Fido, specimen of Waller's translation of, ix. 280.

Patience, the usefulness of it in alleviating the miseries of human life, iv. 209. Motives to the exercise of patience and submission under the severest afflictions, 212, 213.

Patriot, addressed to the electors of Great Britan [1774], viii. 142. Characterized, 143. No claim to that character from an acrimonious and unremitting opposition to the Court, 143. The true lover of his country, 145. Marks of a man not being a Patriot, 149.

Patriotism, no man can be born a lover of his country, xi. 131.

Patriots, their conduct considered and reprobated, viii. 126, 140.

Patrons, their avarice of praise and flattery, v. 217. Often corrupted by avarice, and deluded by credulity, vi. 118.
Paul V. *Pope*, account of the quarrel between him and the Venetians, xii. 7.
Paul, Father. See *Sarpi*.
Pauses, their influence on the harmony of poetical measures, v. 117.
Payne's Tables of Interest, preface to, iii. 104.
Peat, account of the nature of that fuel, viii. 331.
Pedantry, the persons to whom the censures of it may be justly applied, vi. 195. The fear of it often produces it, 198.
Peevishness, a species of depravity, disgusting and offensive, v. 19. Sometimes the effect of distemper or affliction, 20, 21. Exemplified in the character of Tetrica, 20, 21. Persons of this temper the sources of peculiar affliction to their dependants, 261. The fatal effects of, 261. A due attention to the dignity of human nature a proper preservative and remedy against this vice of narrow minds, 263.
Peiresc, the fate of his MSS. vii. 260.
Pekuah, lady, is carried off by Arabs, iii. 393. The Princess Nekeyah's sorrow for the loss of, 394. She is recovered from the Arabs, 403. Her adventures amongst the Arabs, 404.
Pensive man, characterized, ix. 155.
Pepys Island. See *Falkland's Islands*.
Perdita, her story, vii. 168.
Perfection in composition, the effect of attention and diligence, v. 170. The methods by which the antients attained to an eminence therein, 171.
Periander, his opinion of the importance of restraining anger, iv. 66.
Periodical Essays, the difficulties of carrying them on, vii. 1. The advantages of writing in, 7. New ones under the same disadvantages as new plays, 9.
Perseverance, its resistless force and excellence, iv. 279. In intellectual pursuits necessary to eminence in learning and judgment, v. 419. The advantages of, iii. 344.
Persians, their contempt for men who violated the laws of secrecy, iv. 81.
Persian Tales, translated by Ambrose Philips, xi. 250.
Persius, his opinion of learning, iii. 199.
Pertinax, his skill in disputation, v. 152.
Petitions, their progress, viii. 87. By whom generally supported, 88.
Petrarch, his fame filled the world with amorous ditties, ix. 6.
Philips, Ambrose, his life, xi. 249. Educated at St. John's College, Cambridge, 249. Published his Pastorals before 1708, 249. A zealous Whig, 249. Translates the Persian Tales for Tonson, 250. Writes the Distressed Mother, and translates Racine's Andromache, 250. The Epilogue to Adromache written by Budgel, 251. The malevolence between him and Pope,

Pope, 254. Commissioner of the Lottery, 1717, and made Justice of the Peace, 255. Writes the Briton, a Tragedy, 1721, and also Humphrey Duke of Gloucester, 256. Undertakes a periodical publication, called the Free Thinker, 256. Appointed Secretary to Boulter, Primate of Ireland, 256. Chosen to represent the county of Armagh, 257. Secretary to the Lord Chancellor, and Judge of the Prerogative Court, 257. Returns to London, 1748, and died 1749, 258. His character, 208. His works characterized, 258.

Philips, Claude, an itinerant musician, lines on, i. 344.

Philips, John, his life, ix. 294. Born at Bampton, Oxfordshire, Dec. 30, 1676, 294. Son of Dr. Stephen Philips, Archdeacon of Salop, 294. Educated at Winchester, where he distinguished himself by the superiority of his exercises, 294. Became acquainted with the poets very early, 295. Entered at Oxford, 1694, 295. Intended for the study of Physick, and studied particularly Natural History, 295. Wrote his Splendid Shilling, 1703, 295. Blenheim, 1705. Cider, 1706. Began his Last Day, 296. Died Feb. 15, 1708, and buried in Hereford Cathedral, 296. His Epitaph at Hereford, 297. A monument erected to his memory in Westminster-Abbey, by Sir Simon Harcourt, with the inscription by Dr. Atterbury, 297. His character, 298. Character of his works, 299. A copyer of the style of Milton, 299. Account of him by Edmund Smith, 302. Account of his family and brothers, 304. Character of his works, 305. Note on Smith's account of him, 310.

Philips, John and Edward (nephews of Milton), some account of them, ix. 85.

Philips, Mrs. her opinion of some of the writings of Lord Roscommon, ix. 221. Her Pompey brought on the Irish Stage, 221.

Philomides, his reflections on the excellence and utility of good humour, v. 7.

Philotryphus, his character, iv. 255.

Physick, mathematicks recommended in the science of Physick, by Boerhave, xii. 26.

Physicians, a pleasing character of, x. 55. Proceedings on a plan for attending the poor gratis, 55. In a great city the mere plaything of fortune, xi. 358. Have the second claim of benefit to mankind, xii. 22.

Picus Mirandula, his Epitaph, ii. 329.

Pilgrimages, enquired into, iii. 335.

Pindar, observations on the poetry of, ix. 51. His odes discovered to be regular by Congreve, x. 201. West's translation characterized, xi. 261.

Piozzi, Mrs. select letters of Dr. Johnson from the collection of, xii. 331.

Pitt, Christopher, his life, xi. 217. Son of a Physician at Blandford, born 1699, 217. Entered a scholar at Winchester College,

lege, 1714, removed to New College, 1719, 217. Translates Lucan before he was twenty years of age, 217. Presented to the Rectory of Pimpern, Dorsetshire, 218. Translates Vida's Art of Poetry, 218. Translates the Æneid, 218. Died 1748, and his Epitaph, 220.

Plagiarism, not to be charged upon authors merely for similarity of sentiment, iii. 213. A charge often unjustly urged to the prejudice of some authors, vi. 14. Some instances of the truth of this remark with regard to some of the classic writers, 14.

Plantations, considerations on, viii. 380.

Plays acted in the Universities before Kings and Queens, ix. 89.

Player, requisites to form a good one, ix. 224.

Pleasing others, the art of it a pleasing acquisition, v. 209. Its excellency should engage us to cultivate it in proportion to its usefulness, 210.

Pleasure, the mind corrupted and debased by the pursuit of immoral, iv. 286. The gratification of sensual, volatile, v. 42. The fatal rock in the ocean of life, 42. The variation of, with the seasons, 339. Of contemplation and virtue preferable to that of the senses, 343. The essence of, consists in choice, 406. Sensitive and animal, derive their agreeableness from novelty, 409. The danger of pursuing the allurements to, unlawful, vi. 283. Defined, vii. 232. Enquiry into the distinction between it and pain, x. 200. On the pleasure arising from pity, 204. The pleasure on seeing a tragedy represented, 204. The pleasure arising from the imitative arts considered, 206.

Pleasures of mankind, generally counterfeit, vii. 68. Seldom such as they appear to others, 68. Of ladies at a musical performance, 68.

Pleasures of the Town, remarks on, iv. 296.

Plenty, Peter, his complaint of his wife's buying bargains, vii. 138.

Plutarch, sentiment of, upon Aristophanes and Menander, iii. 23.

Poemata, Messia, i. 360. Jan. 20, 21, 1773, 364. Dec. 25, 1779. 364. In Lecto, die Passionis, Apr. 13, 1781, 365. In Lecto, Dec. 25, 1782, 365. Nocte inter 16 & 17 Junii, 1783, 365. Cal. Jan. in lecto, ante lucem, 1784, 366. Jan. 18, 1784, 366. Feb. 27, 1784, 367. Christianus perfectus, 367. Jejunium & cibus, 369. Ad Urbanum, 369. In rivum a mola Stoana Lichfeldiæ diffluentem, 370. Γνωθι Σεαυτον, 370. Ad. Th. Laurence, M. D. cum filium peregre agentem desiderio nimis tristi prosequeretur, 372. In Theatro, March 8, 1771, 373. Insula Kennethi inter Hebridas, 374. Skia, 375. Ode de Skia insula, 375. Spes, 376. Versus, collari capræ domini Banks inscribendi, 377. Ad fœminam quandam generosam quæ libertatis causæ in Sermone patrocinata fuerat, 377. Jactura temporis, 377. Εις Βιεχιον, 378. Εις το της Ελισσης περι των ονειρων Αινιγμα, 378. In Eliza enigma, 378. Latin versions of four collects in the Liturgy, 379. Psalmus cxvii. 380. Latin version of "Busy curious thirsty Fly," 381. Latin version of three sentences on the monument of John of Doncaster, 381.

Trans-

Translation of a song in Walton's Complete Angler, 382. Version of Pope's Verses on his own Grotto, 383. Græcorum epigrammatum versiones metricæ, 384. Pompeii epigrammata, 398. Epicteti epigramma, 403. E Theocrito, 403. E Euripidis Medea, 403. Septem Ætates, 404. Geographia metrica Templemanni Latine redditus, 405.

Poet, advertisement to the edition of the Lives of the Poets, of 1783, ix. 3. Metaphysical, what, 19. Critical remarks on this kind of writing, 24. Dryden's opinion on the question, whether a poet can judge well of his own productions? 322. Do not make the best parents, exemplified in Dr. Young, xi. 322. Ancients exceptionable teachers of morality, iv. 188. The forbearance due to young ones, vii. 98. The general knowledge necessary for, iii. 332.

Poetry, observations on occasional compositions, ix. 398. A simile described, x. 116. On the neglect of poetical justice, 121. Similes in poetry considered, xi. 175. That Sound should seem the echo of the Sense, considered, 176. Harmony the end of its measure, v. 117. The parallel of, with Painting, vii. 134. The easy, characterized, 308. Observations on affectation in, 309. A dissertation on, iii. 330. Early writers in possession of nature, their followers of art, 332. To Miss ******, on her giving the author a gold and silk net-work purse, of her own weaving, i. 333. To Miss *****, on her playing upon the harpsichord, in a room hung with flower-pieces of her own painting, 334. To a friend, 337. Written at the request of a Gentleman, to whom a Lady had given a sprig of myrtle, 340. Lines in ridicule of certain poems published in 1777, 352. Imitation of the style of ****, 354.

Poetry, Poetical devotion cannot often please, ix. 274. Characterized, 275.

Poetry, Pastoral, generally the first productions of a poet, xi. 170. The peculiar beauties of it, iv. 232. The difficulty of succeeding in it, 235. 237. Mere nature to be principally regarded, 238. Wherein the perfection of it consists, 243.

Poetry, Epick, what it is, ix. 160. Critical remarks on, vi. 110.

Poetry, Lyrick, its origin and manner, vi. 109.

Policy, too frequently supported by the arts of intrigue and fraud, v. 50.

Politeness, rules for estimating its advantages, v. 174. Its amiable influence on the manners, 174.

Politian, his poetical compositions censured for his vanity and self-esteem, v. 358.

Polyphylus, his character, iv. 124.

Pomfret, John, his life, ix. 285. Son of the Rev. Mr. Pomfret, Rector of Luton, 285. Educated at Cambridge, 285. Rector of Malden, Bedfordshire, 285. Obstructed in Institution to a valuable living, from a passage in his Choice, 285. Dies of the small-pox, in 1703, aged 36, 286. Character of his poems, 286.

Pompeius, epigrammata, i. 398.
Pontanus, Scaliger's opinion of, iv. 20. The instructive inscription on his tomb, iv. 187.
Pope, Alexander, his account of N. Rowe, x. 69. With Arbuthnot supposed to have assisted Gay in writing Three Hours after Marriage, 239. His account of the origin and success of the Beggar's Opera, 242. A conversation with Addison on Tickell's translation of Homer, xi. 98. Fenton and Broome assist him in the translation of the Odyssey, xi. 104. His life, 54. Born in London, May 22, 1688, 54. His Father grew rich by the trade of a linen-draper, 54. Both his parents papists, 54. Of a tender and delicate constitution, and of a gentle and sweet disposition, 55. From his pleasing voice called the little Nightingale, 55. Received his first education under a Romish priest in Hampshire, from whence he was removed first to Twiford, near Winchester, and again to a school near Hyde Park Corner, 56. Is said to have lisped in numbers, 56. His father left off business with 20,000*l.* but living on the principal, greatly reduced it before his death, 56. At twelve years of age, forms a plan for his own education, 57. His primary and principal purpose was to be a poet, 57. His first performance, the Ode to Solitude, at twelve years of age, 58. Made a version of the first book of the Thebais, at fourteen, 58. At fifteen years of age studies French and Italian, 59. Destroyed many of his puerile productions, 59. At sixteen introduced to Sir W. Trumbal, which ended in friendship, 60. His life, as an author, to be computed from this time, when he wrote his Pastorals, 60. Verses written by Wycherly in his praise, 61. His Letters to Mr. Cromwell, published in a volume of Miscellanies, by Curll, 61. Early encouraged by Mr. Walsh, 62. Frequents the company of wits, at Will's Coffee-house, 62. His Pastorals first published in Tonson's Miscellany, in 1709, 63. His Essay on Criticism written 1709, and severely attacked by Dennis, 63. His Essay translated into French by Hamilton, Robotham, and Resnel, and commented on by Warburton, 67. His Messiah first published in the Spectator, 68. His version on the unfortunate Lady badly employed, 68. Story on which the Rape of the Lock was founded, 69. The great merit of that poem, 70. That poem attacked by Dennis, as also the Temple of Fame, 72. Writes the Epistle from Eloisa to Abelard, 72. Windsor Forest, 1713, 73. Writes a Narrative of the frenzy of John Dennis, 73. Account of the ironical comparison between the Pastorals of Philips and Pope, published in the Guardian, 74. Studies the art of painting under Jervas, 74. Supposed to have painted a picture of Betterton, 74. Proposes a translation of the Iliad, by subscription, in six quarto volumes, at six guineas, 75. Sells the copy to B. Lintot, 77. Is greatly terrified at the undertaking, 78. Is objected to by some for being too much a Tory, and by others for want of a sufficient knowledge of the Greek language, 79. Greatly assisted

sisted by former translators, 79. History of the notes to the Iliad, 80. The life of Homer, written by Parnell, 81. The Iliad took him five years in translating, 82. 654 copies of the Iliad subscribed for, and he gained 5320*l.* 4*s.* by this work, 82. Sinks a considerable part of his money for annuities, 83. Extracts from the first translation and the printed compared, 84. Story of his reading the translation of the Iliad to Lord Halifax, 92. Addison and he become rivals, 95. Contest between Pope's and Tickell's translations of the Iliad, 98. His own account of the jealousy of Addison, 99. Purchases his house at Twickenham, 1715, 100. Forms his grotto at Twickenham, 101. Publishes a quarto edition of his works in 1717, 101. Loses his father in 1717, 102. The publication of the Iliad completed in 1720, 102. His publications censured by Burnet, Ducket, and Dennis, 102. Purposes to become rich by the South-Sea bubble, and luckily escapes without much loss, 102. In 1721, he published the poems of Dr. Parnell, and an edition of the works of Shakspeare, 102. Deficiences of his edition of Shakspeare exposed by Theobald, 103. Merits of this edition of Shakspeare, 104. Publishes proposals for a translation of the Odyssey, in five volumes, 5*l.* 5*s.* 104. Assisted in the translation by Fenton and Broome, 104. Examined before the Lords on the trial of Bp. Atterbury, 104. Atterbury presents a Bible to Pope at their last interview, 105. Translated only twelve books of the Odyssey, 105. Pope's translation in the British Museum, 105. 819 copies subscribed for and completed in 1725, 105. A criticism on the Odyssey, published by Spence, 106. Establishes a friendship with Spence, 106. Is visited by Voltaire, 107. Joins with Swift in publishing three volumes of Miscellanies, 107. Dunciad published in 1728, 108. History of the Dunciad, 109. Mr. Pope executed in effigy by the Dunces, 111. Publishes a poem on Taste, 1731, 113. Loses his mother at the age of 93, 115. Calls Curll before the House of Lords for publishing some letters of noblemen to him, 116. Curll's account of his obtaining the letters, 117. Publishes a volume of Letters, 1737, 118. Publishes the First Part of the Essay on Man, 1733, 121. History of the Essay on Man, 122. The Essay attacked by Mr. Crousaz, as immoral, and defended by Warburton, 123. His Letter to Warburton, 126. Supposed to have been made a tool of by Bolingbroke, to spread his opinions, 126. Endeavours to get his Essay on Man translated into Latin, 127. Lives among the great, 128. A report prevailed of Queen Caroline paying him a visit, which did not take place, 128. Writes an Epistle on the Use of Riches, 1733, 128. Publishes the Man of Ross, 129. Publishes his characters of Men, 1734, 130. Publishes his Characters of Women, 131. Duchess of Marlborough, celebrated in that poem, under the character of Atossa, 132. Published Imitations of several Poems of Horace, 132. Such imitations first practised by Oldham and Rochester, 132.

Publishes some of Dr. Donne's Satires, 133. At open war with Lord Hervey, 134. Publishes his last Satires, 134. Never wrote on politicks, 135. First volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus published by him, in conjunction with Swift and Arbuthnot, 136. Published two volumes of Latin Poems, written by Italians, 137. Planned a Poem, subsequent to his Essay on Man, but never completed it, 137. Publishes another book of the Dunciad, 138. Is at variance with Cibber, 139. Celebrates both Cibber and Osborne in the Dunciad, 141. Account of his latter end, 144. Died May 30, 1744, and buried at Twickenham, 145. A monument erected to his memory, by the Bishop of Gloucester, 145. Offended Lord Bolingbroke by having printed 1500 of the Patriot King more than Lord Bolingbroke knew of, and not discovered until the death of Pope, 145. Account of a difference between Pope and Mr. Allen, 147. Account of Pope's Picture of Betterton, 148. His person described, 149. His dress, 149. His method of living and conversation, 150. The frugality of his domestic character, 153. Proud of his money, and the greatest fault of his friends, poverty, 154. Fond of enumerating the great men of his acquaintance, 154. His social virtues, 155. His Letters appear premeditated and artificial, 157. Many of the topicks of his Letters contrary to truth. 157. *Viz.* contempt of his own poetry, 157. Insensibility to censure and criticism, 157. Disesteem of kings, 158. Contempt of the world, 158. Scorn of the great, 158. His own importance, 159. Learned his pretended discontent from Swift, 159. Sometimes wanton in his attacks, and mean in his retreat, 160. His virtues, liberality, and fidelity of friendship, 161. Paid Savage 20*l.* a year, 161. The report of a defamatory Life of Swift being found in his papers, on enquiry appears groundless, 162. Lived and died in the religion of Rome, 162. Never lost his belief of Revelation, 162. In his early life a literary curiosity, and afterwards studied the living world, 162. Entertained a desire for travelling, but did not gratify it, 163. His intellectual character, Good Sense, 163. His genius, 163. His great memory, 164. Made Poetry the business of his life, 164. Never wrote on popular or temporary occasions, 165. Never published his works under two years, 166. Compared with Dryden, 167. His great care in polishing his works, 167. Frequently corrected his works after publication, 168. His prose works characterized, 169. His pastorals considered, 170. Windsor Forest, 171. Temple of Fame, 171. The Messiah, 172. The Verses on an unfortunate Lady, 172. Ode for St. Cecilia's Day, 173. Copy of the Ode, 174. Ignorant of the principles, and insensible to the effects of Musick, 176. His Essay on Criticism, 176. The Rape of the Lock, 179. Eloisa to Abelard, 181. The Iliad, 182. Observations on the notes to the Iliad, 185. The Odyssey, 186. The notes to the Odyssey written by Broome, 186. The Dunciad, 186. The design

sign of that poem, 187. His Essay on Man, 188. His characters of Men and Women, 190. His lesser poems considered, 191. The question, Whether Pope was a poet? considered, 195. Copy of his Letter to Mr. Bridges, 196. The Visitor's Criticisms on Pope's Epitaphs, 199. His Epitaph on Charles Earl of Dorset, 199. His Epitaph on Sir William Trumball, 202. His Epitaph on the Hon. Sir Simon Harcourt, 204. His Epitaph on James Craggs, 205. His Epitaph intended for Mr. Rowe, 206. His Epitaph intended for Mrs. Corbet, 206. His Epitaph on the Hon. Robert Digby and his sister, 208. His Epitaph on Sir Godfrey Kneller, 209. His Epitaph on Gen. Hen. Withers, 210. His Epitaph on Elijah Fenton, 211. His Epitaph on Mr. Gay, 212. His epitaph intended for Sir Isaac Newton, 214. His Epitaph on Edmund Duke of Buckingham, 215. Writes part of the prologue to Sophonisba, 226. The malevolence between him and Philips, 254. Remarks on his versification, v. 136. Fate of the MSS. he left to Lord Bolingbroke, vii. 260. Account of his edition of Shakspeare, ii. 173. View of the Controversy between Crousaz and Warburton, on the Essay on Man, 254. Crousaz's Observations on his Opinion of the Ruling Passion, 255. Of Whatever is, is Right, 258. His character in conversation, xi. 152. Messiah in Latin, i. 360.

Popery, causes why many persons embrace it, ix. 256. The Hind and Panther published by Dryden, in defence of Popery, 360. Egg and Canna the only islands of the Hebrides where that religion is retained, viii. 368.

Population, the flight of every man a loss to the community, and rogues ought rather to be made useful to the society they have injured, than be driven from it, x. 258. Decayed religious houses, or want of them, no evidence of a decreasing population, viii. 284.

Portia, (daughter of Cato,) characterized, ii. 377.

Portland, Earl of, taken up for being concerned in Waller's plot, ix. 246. Receives a letter from Waller, advising him to confess, which he rejects, and applies to the Lords for redress, 247. After being examined several times by the Lords, is admitted to bail, 249.

Possidippus, his account of human life, iii. 234.

Posthumous Works, thoughts on the publication of, vii. 260.

Poverty, the impropriety of reflecting on persons for it, x. 335. The afflictive scenes of it described, iv. 338. The fears of it strongly excite to activity and diligence, 339. The folly of those whose negligence and profusion involve them in the miseries of it, 339. In what cases they are objects of pity, 340. The disappointments attending it, 176. Why its circumstances are so often regarded with contempt, vi. 184. When only to be dreaded, 362. Ought not to be looked on as hereditary, viii. 35. What it is, and the necessity of it, considered, 40.

Power, the effect of necessity, v. 373.
Praise, of servants, the highest panegyrick of private virtue, iv. 432. The practice of giving unmerited, censured, v. 355. The excellency of that which is truly deserved, 412. The integrity and judgment with which it ought to be dispensed, 412. The love of it engages in a variety of means for attaining it, vi. 142. The general passion for it shewn, vi. 306. To an old man an empty sound, iii. 426.
Prayer and labour should co-operate, ix. 34.
Prayers by Dr. Johnson, Sept. 18, 1738, xii. 441. April 24, 1752, 443. May 6, 1752, March 28, 1754, 444. Jan. 23, 1759, 445. March 25, 1759, 446. Jan. 1, 1770, Jan. 1, 1777, 447. Sept. 18, 1779, 448. June 22, 1781. Oct. 6, 1782, 449. Dec. 5, 1784, 450.
Precedent, implicit submission to it unreasonable, v. 405.
Preceptor, (a plan of education,) preface to the, ii. 291.
Precipitation, often fatal to great designs, iv. 278.
Preferment-hunters, characterized, i. 209.
Presbyterians and Independents, account of the disputes between them at Oxford, on the authority of ministers, xii. 188.
Prescience, advantages of, iii. 288.
Prester John, great pains taken by the Portuguese for the discovery of his country, ii. 285.
Presumption, more easily corrected than pusillanimity, iv. 164.
Pride, frequently the effect of hereditary wealth, x. 334. Generally the source of anger, iv. 68. Characterized, vii. 121. Its competition with idleness, 121.
Printing, Mr. Savage's peculiar attention to correctness in, x. 326. By subscription, first tried by Dryden's Virgil, xi. 76.
Prints, observations on the collectors of, vii. 226.
Prior, Matthew, his life, x. 157. Of obscure original, by some supposed to have been born at Winburne, Dorsetshire; by others to have been the son of a Joiner, in London, 157. Educated for some time at Westminster, 158. Received his academical education at Cambridge, at the expense of the Earl of Dorset, 158. Took his Bachelor's degree in 1686, and his Master's by mandate, in 1700, 158. Wrote the City Mouse and Country Mouse, 1688, 159. Secretary to the Embassy to the Congress at the Hague, 159. Gentleman of the Bedchamber to King William, 160. Wrote a long Ode on the Death of Queen Mary, 160. Secretary to the Treaty of Ryswick in 1697, 160. Secretary at the Court of France, in 1698, 160. Under-secretary of State, 161. Wrote the Carmen Seculare, in 1700, 161. Member of Parliament for East Grinstead, 1701, 162. Went to Paris, with propositions of peace, in 1711, 164. Recalled from Paris, Aug. 1715, 166. On his return, taken up and examined before the Privy-Council, 167. Remained in confinement for two years, when he was excepted in Act of Grace, but soon after discharged, 168. Died at Wimpole, Sept. 18, 1721, and buried at Westminster, 170. Left 500*l.* for a monument, 170. Copy

of his Epitaph, 170. His character, 172. Character of his writings, 175. Described in the Assembly of Bards, xi. 173.

Private Vices public Benefits, how far they may sometimes prove so, viii. 51.

Procrastination, the danger of, ix. 34.

Prodigality, destitute of true pleasure, and the source of real and lasting misery, iv. 341, 342.

Projects, the folly of, exposed, iii. 129. The folly of, in general, 174. Projectors characterized, 220. The folly and wickedness of those who only project the destruction and misery of mankind, 219. For the good of mankind, in searching out new powers of nature, and contriving new works of art, ought to be encouraged, 222.

Prologue, at the opening of Drury-Lane Theatre, 1747, i. 220. To the Masque of Comus, 323. To the Good-natured Man, 324. To the Word to the Wise, 326.

Pronunciation, difficulties in settling it, ii. 10.

Properantia, her letter on the alteration of the style, v. 228.

Prosapius, his character, iv. 122.

Prosperity, often productive of various infelicities, vi. 61. 348. Obstructs the knowledge of ourselves, vi. 62. The danger of, iii. 356.

Prospero, his character, vi. 347.

Prostitutes, reflections on their infamous and deplorable condition, v. 230. vi. 186. In what respects objects of compassion, v. 232.

Proverbs, ch. vi. ver. 7—11, paraphrased, i. 349.

Prudence, wherein its province lies, v. 264. Characterized, vii. 228. Exemplified in the character of Sophron, 228.

Prudentius, the motives on which he contracted marriage, iv. 118.

Prune, Mrs. her treatment of Leviculus, vi. 247.

Prussia, King of, (the former,) characterized, xii. 220. Account of his Tall Regiment, 221. His disagreement with his Son, 222. Obliges his Son to marry against his will, 224. Died 1740, 225.

Prussia, King of, (Charles Frederick,) his life, xii. 220. Born Jan. 24, 1711-12, 220. Remarkable for his disagreement with his father, 222. Designed to fly his country, but discovered by his father, himself arrested, and his confident executed, 223. Obliged by his father to marry, but does not consummate during his father's life, 224. Applies himself to study and liberal amusements, 225. Succeeds to the Crown, 1740, 228. Receives his wife as Queen, 228. Releases the boys marked for military service, 229. Continues his correspondence with learned men, 229. Governs with very little ministerial assistance, and banishes the Prime Minister and favourite of his father, 229. Grants a toleration of Religion and Free Masonry, 229. Institutes the Order of Merit, 230. Charitable if not liberal, 231. Advancement of learning one of his first cares,

cares, 231. Revives his claim to Herstal and Hermal, 232. On the death of the Emperor of Germany, claims Silesia, 233. His proceedings in the war for Silesia, 233. Makes peace with the Queen of Hungary, on surrendering to him the half of Silesia, 237. Observations on his Reasons for enacting and repealing Laws, 238. Account of the Code Frederique, 239. Epitome of his plan for the Reformation of Courts, 240. Proceedings of his army 1742 against the Austrians, 244. Is deserted by the French, 248. Makes peace with the Empress, who surrenders the remaining part of Silesia, 250. Reforms his laws, and concludes a defensive alliance with England, 251. Raises an army under pretence of fixing the emperor in possession of Bohemia, 256. His declaration of reasons for going to war, 256. The Queen of Hungary's answer to the declaration, 260. Enters Bohemia with 104,000 men, Aug. 1744, 261. Besieges and takes Prague, Sept. 1744, 263. Quits Prague, and retires with his army into Silesia, 266. After several engagements, enters Dresden as a Conqueror, 270.

Psalmanazar, George, account of him, xi. 206.

Public Spirit, the duty of, in times of danger, vii. 29.

Punch, the mixture used in making it, requisite to conversation, vii. 135. The ingredients of both compared, 136.

Punishments, capital, the severity and frequency of them in some cases disapproved, v. 272. 275. Instead of hindering the commission of the crime, they often prevent the detection of it, 276.

Puritans, their tenets ridiculed, ix. 197.

Puzzle, Will, his story, vii. 369.

Pyramids, a visit to, iii. 388.

Pyramus and Thisbe, written by Cowley, when only ten years of age, ix. 3.

Q.

QUEBEC, considerations on the establishment of popery in that province, viii. 146.

Quibble, the ill use made of it by Shakspeare, vii. 256.

Quick, Molly, her complaint against her mistress for only hinting at what she wants, vii. 182.

Quick, Ned, ready at finding objections, vii. 348.

Quin, Mr. his friendship for Thomson, xi. 230.

Quincunx figures, their excellence, xii. 284.

Quisquilius, his extravagancies in indulging an injudicious curiosity, v. 68.

Quixote, Don, the idea of Hudibras taken from it, ix. 190. The characters compared, 190. Recommended by Dr. Sydenham to young physicians, xii. 182.

R.

RAASAY, island of, described, viii. 274.
Rake, the life of one, iii. 109. 123.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, the defects of his History of the World, v. 330.
Rambler, his reflections upon a review of his essays, vi. 392. Prayer on the, xii. 442.
Ranger, Tim, his history, vii. 248. Tries dress, the company of rakes, keeping of race-horses, and building, but finds no happiness in any of them, 250. Becomes a fine gentleman, and a collector of shells, fossils, &c. hires a French cook, but in all disappointed, 257.
Rape of the Lock, story on which it was founded, xi. 69.
Rarities, the choice and study of them should be subservient to virtue and the public good, v. 71. 73.
Raschid, his character, a striking example of the sad effects of insatiable avarice, iv. 249.
Rasselas, Prince of Abyssinia, the history of, iii. 301.
Rats, none in the islands of Sky, viii. 305.
Reading Man characterized, iii. 197.
Ready Man characterized, iii. 197.
Reason, the uncertain continuance of, iii. 422. The importance of its keeping a constant guard over the imagination, iv. 49.
Rectitude delineated, vii. 142.
Regimen, rather to be decreased than increased as men advance in years, xii. 165.
Register, universal, of a new kind, to what useful purposes it may be applied, v. 215.
Regret, sometimes both necessary and useful, vii. 290.
Rehearsal, the character of Bays designed for Dryden, ix. 349. Written by Buckingham, assisted by Butler, Martin Clifford, and Dr. Sprat, 349. First acted in 1671, 349. The dialogue between Love and Honour designed for the Duke of Ormond, 350.
Reid, Andrew, employed by Lord Lyttelton in the punctuation of his life of Henry II. xi. 385.
Relaxation, the necessity and usefulness of it with regard to study, v. 109.
Religion, observations on the change of, in Scotland, viii. 208. A toleration granted in Prussia, xii. 229. The pleasure and advantages of, iv. 282. Its origin and excellency, 284. The source of the noblest and most refined pleasures, 286. The common objections to a life of religion, groundless and unreasonable, 287. The use of austerities and mortifications, v. 251. The danger of women when they lay it aside, iii. 111. Consolations to be found in, i. 218.
Remission of Sins, the first and fundamental truth of religion, v. 246.

Repentance, the absurdity of delaying it, v. 5. The doctrine of it embarrassed by superstitious and groundless imaginations, 249. Unjustly confounded with penance, 249. Wherein true repentance consists, 249. The completion and sum of it a real change of temper and life, 251.

Reputation, industry and caution necessary to support it, v. 372. Tainted, the greatest calamity, vi. 102.

Resentment, the effects of, more certain than gratitude, x. 336.

Resolution and firmness of mind, necessary to the cultivation and increase of virtue, iv. 361.

Resolutions, the fallacious estimate generally made, vii. 106. Custom commonly too strong for, 107.

Restless, Tom, short history of, vii. 193.

Retirement, the disadvantages of it when indulged to excess by men of genius and letters, iv. 93. Rural, the motives of some persons to desire it, v. 410.

Retrospection on our conduct, the importance and usefulness of it, iv. 50.

Rhodes, Isle of, story of the dragon which ravaged it, vii. 80.

Rhodoclia, her remarks on the amusements and pleasures of the town, iv. 296.

Richard II. observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 205.

Richard III. observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 212.

Richardson's, Jonathan, Treatise on Painting, gave the first fondness of that art to Sir Joshua Reynolds, ix. 2.

Richardson, Samuel, his character of Lovelace taken from the Lothario of the Fair Penitent, x. 62. Characterized as a writer, 62.

Riches, the folly of pursuing them as the chief end of our being, iv. 374. The true use of, v. 319. The general desire of them whence it proceeds, 384. The peace of life too often destroyed by incessant and zealous strugglings for them, 385. The arts by which they are gained frequently irreconcileable with virtue, 386. Not the cause of happiness, vii. 248. The general desire for, 292. Not so dangerous as formerly, 292. Hope of, more than the enjoyment, 293. What it is to be rich, 293. Avarice always poor, 293. Story of Tom Tranquil, a rich man, 295. Best obtained by silent profit and industry, 395. Not the cause of happiness, exemplified in the history of Ortogrul of Basra, 395. Ill effects of, i. 208.

Riches (hereditary), advantages and disadvantages of, iii. 247.

Ridicule, the business of comedy, iii. 4.

Riding, honours due to the lady who undertook to ride 1000 miles in 1000 hours, and performed it in about two thirds of the time, vii. 21. An equestrian statue proposed to be erected to her memory, 23. Difficulties respecting a proper inscription. 23.

Righteousness considered, vii. 358.

Rio verde, translations of the two first stanzas of that song, i. 354.

Riots, in London (1780), description of, xii. 422.
Roarer, his character, vi. 24.
Rochester, John Wilmot, Earl of, Life of, ix. 201. Son of Henry, Earl of Rochester, 201. Born April 10, 1647, 201. Educated at Burford school, 201. Entered at Wadham College, 201. Travelled into France and Italy, 201. Entered into the sea-service, 201. Early given to intemperance, 202. Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, and Comptroller of Woodstock Park, 202. Mentioned by Wood as the greatest scholar of all the nobility, 203. His favourite authors, Boileau and Cowley, 203. Pursues a life of drunken gaiety, 203. Becomes acquainted with Dr. Burnet, which produced a total change of his manners and opinions, 203. Died at the age of thirty-four, July 26, 1680, 204. His character, 204. Many things imputed to him which he is supposed not to have written, 204. The first edition of his works printed the year after his death, Antwerp in the title-page, 204. Character of his works, 205. His poem on Nothing criticised, 205. His Praise of Satire criticised, 206. His Satire against Man criticised, 207. Takes E. Settle under his protection, 350.
Roll's Dictionary of Commerce, Preface to, ii. 312.
Romances, the general design of them, iv. 20. Those of the former and present age compared, 22.
Romans, their donatives rather popular than virtuous, vii. 13. Made no standing provision for the needy, 13. Their history has long found employment for the studious, and amusement for the idle, ii. 375. When poor, robbed mankind; when rich, robbed one another, 380.
Rome, supplied by Sicily with corn, ii. 441. Afterwards supplied with corn from Africa and Egypt, 442.
Romeo and Juliet, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 222.
Rona, account of the island of, viii. 276.
Roscommon, Wentworth Dillon, Earl of, his life, ix. 211. Son of James Dillon Earl of Roscommon, born in Ireland, 211. Educated in Yorkshire, at his uncle's, Lord Strafford's, 211. Sent to Caen, to study under Bochart, 212. Is said to have had preternatural intelligence of his father's death, 212. The credit to be given to such intelligence, 212. Travels into Italy, 213. At the Restoration returns to England, is made Captain of the Band of Pensioners, and addicts himself to gaming, 213. Goes to Ireland, and made Captain of the Guards, 214. Attacked by three ruffians, on his return from the gaming-table, is rescued by a half-pay officer, to whom he resigns his commission in the Guards, 214. Returns to England, and marries a daughter of the Earl of Burlington, 214. Forms a plan of a Society for reforming our language, 214. Purposes to retire to Rome, but is attacked by the gout, and, with the assistance of a French empirick, dies in 1684, and is buried in Westminster-Abbey, 216. His poetical character, 216. Dryden's opinion of Roscommon's Essay on translated Verse, 218. His Art of Poetry praised, 219. Account of his other

other pieces, 221. Mrs. Philips's opinion of some of his works, 221.

Rota Club, account of, and the members, ix. 121.

Rowe, Nicholas, the first who had three nights of a new play, ix. 347. His life, x. 60. Born at Little Beckford, Bedfordshire, 1673, 60. Educated at Westminster, under Busby, 61. A student of the Middle Temple, 61. At twenty-five produced the Ambitious Step-mother, 61. Tamerlane in 1702, 61. Fair Penitent in 1703, 62. Ulysses in 1706. Royal Convert, 1708, 63. The Biter, a comedy, 1706, 64. Jane Shore, 1714, 64. Lady Jane Grey, 1715, 64. Publishes an edition of Shakspeare in 1709, 65. Under-secretary to the Duke of Queensbury, 65. Advised by Lord Oxford to study Spanish, 66. Succeeded N. Tate as Poet-Laureat, 66. Land-surveyor of the Customs, 66. Clerk of the Council to the Prince of Wales, 66. Secretary of the Presentations, 66. His life, as prefixed to his translation of Lucan's Pharsalia, by Dr. Wellwood, 66. Died Dec. 6, 1718, and buried in Westminster-Abbey, 69. The testimony of Pope in his favour, 69. Chiefly considered as a tragick author and translator, 70. Character of his works, 71. Pope's Epitaph intended for him, with the Visitor's criticisms, xi. 206. Observations on his edition of Shakspeare's Works, ii. 172.

Royal Society, supposed to have been established, to divert the attention of the people from publick discontent, x. 86. Enquiry into, What have they done? vii. 354.

Rudeness to convenience, the progress of, vii. 252.

Ruling Passion, M. Crousaz's observations on Pope's opinion of it, ii. 255.

Rum, account of the island of, viii. 363. Land there not more than 2½*d.* an acre, 364.

Rupert, Prince, driven by Admiral Blake into the Tagus, xii. 44. Afterwards into Carthagena, 45. His fleet destroyed by Blake in the harbour of Malaga, 45.

Rural Elegance, observations in the praise of, xi. 275.

Rural Situation, a sketch of its peculiar pleasures and advantages, v. 408.

Ruricola, his observations upon the prevalence of a fond appetite for news, iv. 387.

S.

SABRINUS Georgius, de sacerdote furem consolante epigramma, x. 180.

Sacharissa, that character designed by Waller for Lady Dorothea Sidney, ix. 232.

Salmasius, employed by Charles II. to write in defence of his father and monarchy, ix. 108. His character, 108. Publishes his Defensio Regis in 1649, 108. Answered by Milton, 108.

Leaves a reply to Milton, which was published by his son, 110.
Samson Agonistes, characterized, ix. 178. Critical remarks on the beauties and improprieties of that dramatick piece, v. 431.
Sanderson, Dr. Robert, bishop of Lincoln, his critical nicety in preparing his lectures, iv. 130.
Sannazarius, his inducements to the piscatory eclogue, iv. 236.
Sarpi, Father Paul, his life, xii. 3. Born at Venice, 1552, 3. Educated under his mother's brother, 3. Studies logick under Capella of Cremona, 3. Takes the order of Servites, 1566, 4. Public Professor of Divinity at Mantua, 4. His great acquisitions in every branch of knowledge and literature, 5. Several charges laid against him in the Inquisition, which passed over, 5. Refused a bishopric by Clement VIII. 5. The part he took in the quarrel between Paul V. and the Venetians, 6. Attacked by five ruffians employed by the Pope, and receives fifteen stabs, 8. Retires to his convent, and writes the History of the Council of Trent, 8. Died 1623, 9. His character, 10.
Satire, Lord Rochester's praise of, criticised, ix. 207.
Savage, Richard, his life, xii. 281. Born Jan. 10, 1697, a son of Earl Rivers by the Countess of Macclesfield, 283. Left to the care of his mother, who abandons him, 283. Committed to the care of a poor woman, to be brought up as her own son, 284. Lady Mason, his grand-mother, takes some care of him, 285. His god-mother, Mrs. Lloyd, left him 300*l.* which was never paid him, 285. Placed at a small grammar-school near St. Alban's, 285. Lord Rivers on his death-bed enquires particularly of him, and is assured by his mother that he was dead, by which he loses 6000*l.* left him by his father, 286. His mother attempts to send him to America secretly, 287. His mother places him with a shoe-maker in Holborn, 288. On the death of his nurse discovers his parents, 288. Applies to his mother, who resolves to neglect him, 288. Became an author through necessity, 289. Publishes his first Poems against the Bishop of Bangor, 289. Writes his first play, Woman's a Riddle, in his eighteenth year, 290. At twenty-one writes Love in a Veil, 291. Is patronized by Sir Richard Steele, 291. Story of his going with Sir Richard Steele, and writing a pamphlet, which he sells for two guineas, to raise money, 292. Steele proposes to marry one of his natural daughters to Savage, 293. Steele discards him, 293. Through the intercession of Wilks obtains 50*l.* from his mother, 295. Frequents the Stage, becomes acquainted with Mrs. Oldfield, who allows him 50*l.* a year during her life, 296. Mr. Wilks occasionally allows him a benefit, which is counteracted by his mother, 297. Writes the tragedy of Sir Thomas Overbury, 298. Cibber corrects the tragedy, 299. Experiences the friendship of Aaron Hill, who writes the Prologue and Epilogue to the tragedy of Overbury, 300. Acts the part of Overbury, 300. Seventy guineas left for Savage, by Mr. Hill's publishing his case in the Plain Dealer, 302. His flattery to Lady M. W. Montague in his Dedication

dication to his volume of Poems, 303. Adds to his reputation by his Poem on the death of George I. 304. Account of his killing Mr. James Sinclair, 305. His trial and defence, 308. Is found guilty of murder, 309. He obtains a pardon, although it had been greatly obstructed by his mother, 310. Further accounts of his mother's enmity, 311. Meets the principal evidence against him in distress, and divides his only guinea with her, 314. His own opinion of the killing of Sinclair, 315. Lived a life of want and plenty, 316. Threatens to publish a narrative of his mother's conduct, in hopes of extorting a pension from her, 317. Received into the family of Lord Tyrconnel, who promises him a pension of 200*l.* a year, 317. Writes the Author to be Let, 318. The part he had in the Dunciad, 321. His epigram on Dennis, 322. Receives twenty guineas for a panegyrick on Sir R. Walpole, 322. Laments the misery of living at other men's tables 323. Publishes the Wanderer, with the character of that poem, 324. His peculiar attention to correctness in printing, 326. Sells the copy of the Wanderer for ten guineas, 326. His quarrel with Lord Tyrconnel, 328. Writes the Triumph of Health and Mirth, 330. Closely studies the great, 331. Again turned adrift on the world, 333. Too much elevated by good fortune, 334. His mother continues her ill treatment of him, 336. The resentment between Lord Tyrconnel and him kept up for many years, 337. Publishes the Bastard, a Poem, 338. This poem obliges his mother to retire from Bath to London, 339. Ready to accept the praises of the people, and to find excuses for their censure, 340. Imputed none of his miseries to himself, 341. Mistook the love, for the practice of virtue, 342. His actions precipitate and blameable, his writings tended to the propagation of morality and piety, 342. Exerts all his interest to be appointed Poet Laureat, but is disappointed, 343. Becomes volunteer Laureat to the Queen, for which the Queen sends him 50*l.* and leave to continue it annually, 344. Copy of the first volunteer Laureat, 344. Accused of influencing elections against the Court, 348. An information against him in the King's Bench, for publishing an obscene pamphlet, 349. Writes the Progress of a Divine, 350. Satirized in the Weekly Miscellany, and defended in the Gentleman's Magazine, 352. The information dismissed by Sir Philip Yorke, 353. Purposes writing the Progress of a Freethinker, 354. His practice to conceal himself from his friends, whilst he spent the Queen's pension, 354. Sir R. Walpole promises him the first place vacant, not exceeding 200*l.* a year, 355. Extracts from his poem on the Poet's dependance on a Statesman, 356. Extracts from an Epistle upon Authors, never published, 357. Dedicates a poem on Publick Spirit to the Prince of Wales, for which he received no reward, 360. For a great part of the year lived by invitations, and lodged by accident, sometimes in Summer on a bulk, and in Winter in a glass-house, 366. Wherever he went could not conform to the œconomy of a family, 368. As his affairs

grew

grew desperate, his reputation declined, 369. Proposes to publish his works by subscription, but not so much encouraged as he either expected or merited, spent the money he received, and never published his poems, 369. His universal acquaintance, 370. By the death of the Queen, loses both his prospect of preferment and his annuity, 371. Purposes writing a new tragedy, on the story of Sir John Overbury, 371. Writes a poem on the death of the Queen, on her subsequent birth-day, with extracts from it, 372. His friends send him into Wales, on a promise of allowing him 50*l.* a year, 375. Forms enchanting prospects of a country life, 376. Takes a lodging in the liberties of the Fleet, and receives one guinea a week of his friends subscription, 376. Sets off for Wales in July 1739, spends all his money before he reaches Bristol, gets a fresh remittance, arrives at Bristol, where he is well received, and stays for some time, and at last goes to Swansea, the place of his destination, 381. His annuity greatly diminished, 382. Completes his tragedy, 382. Returns to Bristol, where 30*l.* is subscribed for him, 383. Becomes neglected at Bristol, 384. Arrested at Bristol, and his Letter to a Friend on that occasion, 387. Is very kindly treated by the keeper of the prison, 392. His poem London and Bristol delineated, 393. His letter to a friend, who advised him not to publish London and Bristol delineated, 394. Postpones the publication, 395. Dies in prison, Aug. 1, 1743, and buried in the church-yard of St. Peter's Bristol, 398. His person described, 398. His character, 398. Allowed 20*l.* a year by Pope, xi. 161.

Savecharges, Sukey, her complaint, vii. 215. By marriage articles to have a coach kept, 216. Her husband provides a coach without horses, 218.

Scaliger, his partiality in preferring Virgil to Homer, v. 140.

Scamper, Edward, his history, iii. 141.

Scandal, the ladies disposition to it, too frequent, iv. 298.

Scatter, Jack, his history, iii. 143.

Schemes, the Idler's privilege of forming them, vii. 3.

Scholar, journal of three days, vii. 267. The life of a, iii. 323. His hopes on entering at the University, i. 211. View of the general life of, 212.

Schools, the study proper for, ix. 98. Account of the practice of *barring out* the master, x. 74.

Schoolmaster, an honest and useful employment, ix. 97.

Science, the paths of it narrow and difficult of access, v. 342. The progress of it obstructed by servile imitation, 370.

Sciences, the encouragement of them by the patronage of the great, casual and fluctuating, v. 124.

Scotland, much civilized by Cromwell's soldiers, viii. 234. State of literature from the middle of the sixteenth century, 234. Civility, part of the national character of the Highlanders, 236.

Scotland, Johnson's Journey. See *Hebrides.*

Scotland, New, considerations on the establishment of a colony there, ii. 344.

Scruple, Sim, his story, vii. 336.
Seasons, the change of them productive of a remarkable variation of the scenes of pleasure, v. 339.
Scruple Shop, account of that fixed at Oxford by the Parliament party, 1646, xii. 199.
Sebald's Islands. See *Falkland's Islands.*
Sebastian, King of Portugal, a tragedy, critical observations upon it, v. 346.
Second Sight, enquiry into, viii. 339.
Secrecy, rules concerning the doctrine and practice of it, iv. 87.
Secrets, the importance of keeping them, iv. 81. The general causes of the violation of fidelity, in reference to secrets, 83. The aggravated treachery of such conduct, 83. 85. The imprudence of committing this trust to persons of whose wisdom and faithfulness we have no just assurance, 86.
Seduction of innocence, a detail of the infamous arts and gradations by which it is often effected, vi. 179.
Seged, his history, vi. 368.
Self-conceit, the strong dispositions of many to indulge it, v. 31. How easily promoted, 31. By what artifices men of this quality delude themselves, 34.
Self-denial, thoughts on, vii. 206.
Self-knowledge, its great importance, iv. 156. vi. 88. A happy preservative against indiscretion and vice, iv. 182. Frequently obstructed by partiality and self-love, vi. 89. The deplorable folly of opposing our own convictions, 91.
Serenus, his history, iii. 155.
Serge, Dick, his history, iii. 144.
Sermon, an annual one at Huntingdon, in commemoration of the conviction of the witches of Warbois, iii. 72.
Serotinus, his quick rise to conspicuous eminence, vi. 148.
Servants, the importance of a wise regulation of our conduct towards them, iv. 432. Their praise of their superiors the highest panegyrick of private virtue, 432. The danger of betraying our weakness to them one motive to a regular life, 433. The folly of giving them orders by hints only, vii. 182.
Settle, Elkanah, his character by Dryden, ix. 321. Remarks on his play of the Empress of Morocco, 321. Writes a vindication, with a specimen, 325. Protected by the Earl of Rochester, 350. Attacks Dryden on his Medal, 355. Made City Poet, 355. Spent his latter days in contriving shews for fairs, &c. and died in an hospital, 355. Supported himself by standing elegies and epithalamiums, vii. 47.
Shadwell succeeds Dryden as Poet-Laureat, ix. 362.
Shaftesbury, Lord, account of him by Mr. Gray, xi. 370.
Shakespeare, William, only two editions of his works from 1623 to 1664, ix. 137. His Tempest altered by Dryden and Davenant, 323. His plots in the hundred novels of Cinthio, 330. Dryden's Troilus and Cressida altered from Shakespeare, 340. An edition of his works, in six quarto volumes, published by Pope, in 1721, xi. 103. The deficiencies of this edition detected by Theobald, 103. Merits of Pope's edition, 104. His

eminent success in tragi-comedy, vi. 99. Proposals for printing his dramatic works, 1766, ii. 124. Difficulties in explaining the original meaning of the author, 124. Omissions of former editors pointed out, 130. Preface to the edition of his works, 1768, 133. The peculiarities by which he gained and kept the favour of his countrymen, 136. The poet of nature, 136. His drama the mirror of life, 139. The opinions of various critics on his plays, 140. Observations on his style, 145. His faults and defects, 146. His plots generally drawn from novels, 159. Enquiry into his learning, 162. Came to London a needy adventurer, 166. Careless of future fame, 170. Account of the modern editions of his works, 171. Rowe's, 172. Pope's, 173. Theobald's, 174. Hanmer's, 176 Capel's, 177. Warburton's notes on, 177. Upton's critical observations on, 180. Grey's notes, 181. Character of, by Dryden, 194. General observations on the Tempest, ii. 197. Two Gentlemen of Verona, 198. Merry Wives of Windsor, 198. Measure for Measure, 200. Love's Labour Lost, 201. Midsummer Night's Dream, 201. Merchant of Venice, 202. As You Like It, 202. Taming of the Shrew, 203. All 's Well that Ends Well, 203. Twelfth Night, 204. Winter's Tale, 204. Macbeth, 204. King John, 205. Richard II. 205. Henry IV. 206. Henry V. 208. Henry VI. 209. Richard III. 212. Henry VIII. 213. Coriolanus, 214. Julius Cæsar, 214. Anthony and Cleopatra, 214. Timon of Athens, 215. Titus Andronicus, 216. Troilus and Cressida, 217. Cymbeline, 218. King Lear, 218. Romeo and Juliet, 222. Hamlet, 223. Othello, 224.

Shenstone, William, his life, xi. 276. Born at Leasowes, in Hales Owen, Shropshire, 1714, 276. Entered of Pembroke College, Oxford, 1732, 277. Published a volume of Miscellanies, 1737. His Judgment of Hercules, 1740. His Schoolmistress, 1742, 277. Wanders about to acquaint himself with life, 277. Delights in rural elegance, 278. Died 1763, 280. His character, 280. Gray's Account of him, 281. Account of his works, 282.

Shiels, Robert, the writer of the Lives of the Poets, commonly attributed to Cibber, x. 274. Some account of him, 274.

Shifter, Dick, his history, vii. 283. Disappointed in the pleasures of a country life, 284.

Sicily Island, supplied the Romans with corn, ii. 441.

Sidney, Lady Dorothea, addressed by Mr. Waller under the name of Sacharissa, ix. 232. The various noble offers which she had, 232. Marries the Earl of Sunderland, 232.

Simile, what it should be, xi. 175.

Similitude, a general and remote one in the dispositions and behaviour of mankind, vi. 64.

Sinclair, James, account of his being killed by Savage and his companions, x. 304.

Singularity, in general displeasing, iii. 286. Instances in which it is praiseworthy, 287.

Skaiting,

Skaiting, two translations of lines under a print of persons skaiting, i. 357.
Skinner (the Grammarian), account of his writings, ii. 39.
Sky, Islands of, one inn in them, viii. 269. Animal productions in, 270. Their bread and diet, 270. No customs paid there, 271. Only one house of prayer in the islands, 283. Account of the cattle in, 304. Account of the horses, 305. Account of the stags, 306. No rats nor mice, 306. The inhabitants described, 307. The different ranks of men there, 309.
Slanes Castle, account of, viii. 223.
Sleep, considered, vii. 125. Equally a leveller with death, 126. Alexander perceived himself to be human only by the necessity of sleep, 126.
Sloane, Sir Hans, satirized by Dr. King in the Transactioneer, x. 32.
Smith, Dr. instance of Wilks's generosity to him, x. 294.
Smith, or *Neale, Edmund*, his life, by Dr. Oldisworth, x. 1. Son of a merchant of the name of Neale, by a daughter of Baron Lechmere, 1. Took the name of Smith from being brought up by an uncle of that name, 2. Educated at Westminster, under Busby, and removed to Oxford, 2. His character, 3. Character of his works, 5. His life by Dr. Johnson, 16. Born at Handley, in Worcestershire, 16. Educated at Westminster, and took his Master's degree at Oxford 1696, 16. Narrowly escapes expulsion for irregularities in 1700, 18. Expelled 1705, 19. Resides in London, 19. Account of his works, 20. Dedicates Phædra, a tragedy, to the Marquis of Halifax, who had prepared to reward him with a place of 300*l.* a year, which he loses, through not soliciting it, 20. Purposes writing a tragedy of Lady Jane Grey; retires into the country for that purpose, where he died in July 1710, 23. The story of his being employed to alter Clarendon's History false, 24. Copy of his Analysis of Pocockius, 27.
Smollet, Dr. an obelisk raised to his memory near the place of his birth, viii. 406.
Smuggle, Ned, his story, vii. 370.
Sneaker, Jack, a hearty friend to the present Establishment, his history, vii. 40.
Snug, Dick, his story, vii. 314.
Snug, Timothy, his history, iii. 143.
Sober, Mr. his history, vii. 123.
Sobriety, considered, vii. 358.
Society, mutual benevolence the great end of it, iv. 360.
Softly, Sam, his story, vii. 372.
Soldiers, their contemptible state in time of peace, vii. 81. Their wish for war not always sincere, 81. On the bravery of the English, ii. 427. Arises very much from the dissolution of dependence, which obliges every man to regard his own character, 429.
Solid, Jack, his story, vii. 315.
Solitude, a relish for those pleasures an argument of a good disposition,

position, iv. 29. The disgustful tediousness of it to many, 29. The peculiar pleasures of it, v. 408. Enquiry into the state of happiness in, iii. 361.

Somervile, Mr. his life, x. 278. Born at Edston in Warwickshire, 1692, 278. Educated at Winchester, and fellow of New College, 278. Died July 19, 1742, and an account of his death by Shenstone, 279. Account of his works, 280.

Sophron, his letter on frugality, iv. 364. His history, vii. 228.

Sorrow, the indulgence of it incapacitates to enjoy the pleasures of contemplation, iv. 30. The experience of it a preservative against the vanities of the world, 38. Cautions against it, 303. Instructions for preventing it, 306.

Soul, Dr. Boerhaave's opinion of, xii. 33.

Sounds, their origin described, ix. 27. Account of a cavern reported to be remarkable for reverberation of, viii. 295.

South-Sea, little advantage to be expected from commerce there, viii. 101.

Southern, the first who had two nights of a new play, ix. 347.

Spain, its naval power almost put an end to, by the destruction of the Armada, ii. 351.

Spectator, notes respecting the writers, &c. in that publication, x. 83. The first English publication that taught minuter decencies and inferior duties, 84. Advantages of such publications, 85. Designed to divert the attention of the people from public discontent, 86. Observations on the character of Sir Roger de Coverley, 87. Observations on Sir Andrew Freeport, 88. Nearly 1700 of them sold daily, 88.

Spence, Mr. published a criticism on Pope's translation of the Odyssey, xi. 106. Forms a friendship with Pope, by which he obtains preferment in the church, 106.

Spencer, Edmund, one of his stanzas compared with the same as altered by Prior, x. 182. Some imitations of his diction censured, v. 325.

Spirituous Liquors, the bad effects from the use of, ii. 397. Eight millions of gallons consumed every year in England, 398.

Spleen, extracts from Sir R. Blackmore's essay on, x. 215.

Sport, analogy of the supposed sport of superior beings tormenting man, with man's sport over inferior animals, viii. 46.

Sprat, Dr. Thomas, his life of Cowley rather a funeral oration than a history, ix. 1. Assisted Buckingham in writing the Rehearsal, 349. His life, x. 36. Born at Tallaton, Devonshire, 1636, 36. Became Commoner at Oxford 1651, 36. Takes orders, and made Chaplain to the Duke of Buckingham, whom he is said to have assisted in writing the Rehearsal, 37. A favourite of Wilkins, and one of the first Fellows of the Royal Society, 37. Writes the History of the Royal Society, 37. Made Bishop of Rochester, 1683, 38. Writes the History of the Rye-House Plot, 38. Made Commissioner of ecclesiastical affairs, 38. Stood neuter respecting the *Declaration*, 38. Withdraws from the commission, 39.

In a conference whether the Crown was vacant, spoke in favour of his old master, 39. A plan laid to charge him and others with a plot to restore King James, 39. The Bishop seized, and confined for some time, 40. In the cause of Sacheverell appeared among the friends of the Church, 40. Died May 20, 1713, 41. List of his works, 41.

Spring, the pleasures of that season displayed, iv. 29. An ode, i. 327.

Spritely, Robin, his observations on watering-places, and of a select set at one of them, vii. 316. His farther account of company at the Wells, 335.

Stag, verses on the head of a stag, ix. 268. Account of those in the Islands of Sky, viii. 306.

Stage, tragedies in rhyme introduced soon after the Restoration, ix. 320. A controversy between Dryden and Sir R. Howard on Dramatic Rhyme, 321. Not attended with much profit in the time of Dryden, 347. Southern the first who had two nights and Rowe three nights of a new play, 347. A flattering dedication to a play a principal part of the profit of an author, 348. Dryden wrote prologues for two guineas each, and afterwards raised them to three guineas, 348. Dryden's observations on Rymer's Remarks on the Tragedies of the last Age, 447. Dennis's reasons for paying no regard to the opinion of an audience, x. 124. Account of the dispute between Collier and the poets, 190. The laws of dramatic action stated, vi. 97. The complaint, concerning the dramatic art being long exhausted, vii. 9. Thoughts on the appearance of new actors, 96. New actors compared to new monarchs, 96. The cruelty of combinations for or against young actors, 98. The origin of tragedy and comedy, ii. 141. Advantages of the mingled drama, 142. Tragedy, comedy, and hitsory, distinguished, 143. Objections to the want of unity of time and place removed, 151.

Stage-coach, characters in a stage-coach, iii. 190.

Standish, Mrs. her character, iv. 76.

Startle, Will, his story, vii. 314.

Steady, Tom, his story, vii. 313.

Steele, Sir R. sold the comedy of the Drummer for 50 guineas, x. 95. His controversy with Addison on the "Peerage Bill," 102. Patronizes Savage, 290. Story of writing a pamphlet, 291. Story of his being served by bailiffs in livery, 292. Proposes marrying one of his natural daughters to Savage, 293. Discards Savage, 293. The early friendship between him and Addison, 75. Borrows 100*l.* of Addison, which he reclaims by an execution, 75.

Stella (Mrs. *Johnson*), invited by Swift into Ireland, xi. 7. Removes to Dublin, and marries Swift, 21. Dies Jan. 28, 1728. Her end supposed to have been hastened by the neglect of Swift, 29. Odes to, i. 335, 336, 337, 339.

Stepney, George, his life, ix. 291. Descended from the family at Pendegrast,

Pendegrast, Pembrokeshire; born at Westminster, 1663, 291. Educated at Westminster, and removed to Cambridge, 291. Engaged in many foreign employments, 291. Died in 1707, and buried in Westminster Abbey, 292. His Epitaph, 292. Character of his works, 293.

Stoicks, their erroneous system concerning evil, iv. 207.

Strafford, Lord, character of, by Sir John Denham, ix. 80.

Strand, characterized, i. 196.

Study, exercise the best relaxation from, xii. 13. The imbecility of spirit incident to persons addicted to it, vi. 103.

Sturdy, Bob, his story, vii. 337.

Style, the alteration of it humorously displayed, v. 228.

Subordination, the necessity of, in places of public education, xi. 192. Enquiry into the nature of, viii. 27. The necessity of, 27.

Sunday, the different methods of employing that sacred season, iv. 194. The true method recommended, 198.

Superfluities and Necessaries of life considered, vii. 147.

Superstition, a disposition irrational and terrifying, iv. 283. The danger of falling into, iii. 341.

Supreme good, falsely supposed by some to be a state of quiet, vii. 71.

Suretyship, the danger of, exemplified in the character of Candidus, iii. 157.

Suspicion, often the concomitant of guilt, v. 51. An enemy to virtue and happiness, 51. Old age peculiarly addicted to it, 52.

Suspirius, the screech-owl, his character, iv. 377.

Swift, Dean Jonathan, Sir R. Blackmore's observations on the Tale of a Tub, xi. 1. His life, 2. His birth and parentage uncertain, 1. An account, said to be written by himself, says he was the son of an attorney, and born in Dublin, St. Andrew's Day, 1667; and another account, delivered by himself to Pope, states his being the son of a clergyman, and born at Leicester, 1. Educated at Kilkenny, and entered in Dublin University 1682, 2. Admitted Bachelor of Arts by *special favour*, 2. Attends his studies very close, 2. On the death of his uncle Godwin Swift he is introduced to Sir W. Temple, who patronises him, 2. King William offers to make him Captain of horse, 3. Consulted by the Earl of Portland on triennial Parliaments, 3. The disorder which brought him to the grave supposed to be first contracted by eating fruit, 4. Takes the degree of Master of Arts at Oxford, July 5, 1692, 4. Pays an annual visit to his mother at Leicester, and generally on foot, 4. Leaves Sir W. Temple in discontent, 1694, 5. Enters into the Church, and obtains the prebend of Kilroot, in Conner, 5. Returns to Temple, and gives up his prebend, 5. Wrote Pindaric Odes to the King, Temple, and the Athenian Society, 5. Dryden's declaration, that Swift would never be a Poet, 6. Temple dies, and leaves his MSS. to Swift, of whom he had obtained a promise of the first vacant prebend of Westminster or Canterbury, but never performed, 6. Dedicates Temple's posthumous Works to the King, 6. Goes to

Ireland with the Earl of Berkeley as private secretary, 6. Disappointed of the deanry of Derry, he gets two small livings in the diocese of Meath, 7. Invites Stella to Ireland, 7. Publishes the Dissentions in Athens and Rome, in 1701, 7. In 1704, the Tale of a Tub, 7. In 1708, the Sentiments of a Church-of-England-Man, and some other pamphlets, 9. Enters into the service of Lord Harley, 1710, 10. Writes thirty-eight Papers in the Examiner, 11. Publishes a Proposal for correcting, &c. the English Tongue, 13. Writes a Letter to the October Club, 13. In 1712 publishes the Conduct of the Allies, 14. Reflections on the Barrier Treaty, and Remarks on the Introduction to Vol. III. of Burnet's History of the Reformation, 15. Discovers the misery of greatness, 16. Accepts the Deanery of St. Patrick's, 1713, 17. Refuses 50*l.* of Lord Oxford, but accepts of a draft of 1000*l.* on the Exchequer, but intercepted by the death of the Queen, 17. Keeps a journal of his visits, &c. 17. Endeavours to reconcile Lord Oxford and Bolingbroke, but in vain, 18. Publishes, in 1714, the Public Spirit of the Whigs, in answer to the Crisis, 18. 300*l.* offered for the discovery of the author, 19. Retires, in 1714, into Berkshire, 19. Goes to settle on his Deanery in Ireland, 19. Writes several other political pamphlets, 20. Mrs. Johnson removes from the country to a house near the Deanery, 21. Marries Mrs. Johnson, 21. Becomes popular by recommending to the Irish the use of their own manufactures, 22. Account of the death of Vanessa, 22. Acquires fresh esteem by the Drapier's Letters, 23. 300*l.* offered for the discovery of the author, 24. His conduct to his butler, who was entrusted with the secret, 26. Makes his butler verger of St. Patrick's, 26. Obtains the appellation of *The Dean*, 26. In 1727, publishes his Miscellanies, 3 vols. and Gulliver's Travels, 27. His wife dies Jan. 28, 1728, 29. He greatly laments her death, though supposed to have hastened it by neglect, 29. His discourse with Bettesworth the lawyer, 29. Lends money to the poor without interest, but requires the re-payment without charity, 32. His continual, increasing asperity, 33. His giddiness and deafness increase, 33. Always careful of his money, 34. Polite Conversation, published 1738, 34. Directions for Servants, soon after his death, 34. Loses his mental powers, 35. Dies in October 1744, in his 78th year, 36. His powers as an author, 37. Dictated political opinions to the English, 37. Delivered Ireland from plunder and oppression, 37. Irish may date their riches and prosperity from his patronage, 38. Remarks on his works, 38. Deserted the Whigs, when they deserted their principles, 39. His character as a churchman, 39. His person, temper, and œconomy, 40. Story of Gay and Pope visiting him after they had supped, 42. His character by Dr. Delany, 45. Promotes the subscription for Pope's Translation of the Iliad, 96. Joins with Pope in publishing three volumes of Miscellanies, 109. Published the first Volume of the Memoirs of Scriblerus, in conjunction

conjunction with Pope and Arbuthnot, 136. Narrowness of mind in his letters, 160. The report of Pope having written a defamatory life of him groundless, 162. His History of the last Years of Queen Anne saved by an accident, vii. 260.

Sycophants, their infamous character, v. 213.

Sydenham, Thomas, his life, xii. 180. Born at Winford Eagle, in Dorsetshire, 1624, 180. Entered Commoner of Magdalen Hall, Oxford, 1642, 181. Supposed to have spent some time in arms, 181. Bachelor of Physick 1648, 181. Did not take up the practice of physick without having qualified himself for it, as was reported, 182. Practises physick in Westminster, 187. Died 1629, 189. His character, 189.

Symerons, or fugitive Negroes, enter into treaty with Sir Francis Drake, xii. 76.

T.

TACKSMAN in Sky, described, viii. 311. Complaints of them shewn to be unjust, 310.

Tacksman in Col, account of, viii. 365.

Talisker in Sky, account of, viii. 291.

Taming of the Shrew, observations on Shakspeare's, ii. 157.

Tantalus, his fabled punishment a strong image of hungry servility, vi. 186.

Tasso, represents spirits as promoting or obstructing events by external agency, ix. 60. Represents the pleasures and splendours of heaven, 60.

Taste, low, censured, vi. 218.

Tate, Nahum, died in the Mint, in extreme poverty, x. 66.

Tatler, notes of some of the writers, x. 83. Designed to divert the attention of the people from public discontent, 86.

Taxation no Tyranny, an answer to the resolutions and address of the American Congress [1775], viii. 155.

Tea, review of Mr. Hanway's Essay on, ii. 390. The use of, in China, 391. Rise and progress of the use of, in England, 391. First imported from Holland 1666, 392. First, price 3*l.* per lb. which it continued to 1707, 392. Descended to the lower class 1715, 392. Clandestinely imported from France, 1720, 392. In 1755, 2000 tons imported, 392. The mischiefs of, 393.

Tears, the true taste of, ix. 36.

Tediousness in a Poet, the most fatal of all faults, x. 179. Characterized, 179.

Temper, good, by what means it is frequently vitiated, v. 23.

Temperance, the cause of, vii. 358.

Tempest, general observations on Shakspeare's, ii. 197.

Tempest, Tom, a friend of the House of Stuart, history of, vii. 38.

Temple, Rev. Mr. his character of Gray, xi. 369.

Temple, Sir William, patronises Swift, xi. 3. Leaves his MSS. to Swift, 6.

Templeman, Geographia Metrica, Latinè, i. 405.
Temptations to vice, the motives to resist them, with the difficulty attending that resistance, iv. 144.
Tenants, the orders of, in the Isles of Sky, viii. 310.
Terms of Art, the necessity of, vii. 291.
Ternate, account of the king and inhabitants of, xii. 138.
Tetrica, a lively example of habitual peevishness, v. 21.
Thales, the departure of, from London, i. 196.
Theatre, Greek, general conclusion to Brumoy's, iii. 61.
Theobald, exposes the deficiencies of Pope's edition of Shakspeare, xi. 103. Celebrated by Pope in the Dunciad, 105. Observations on his edition of Shakspeare, ii. 119.
Theocritus, Excerpta ex, i. 403.
Theodore, the Hermit of Teneriffe, the vision of, ii. 454.
Thief and Pirate contrasted, viii. 102.
Thirlby, Mr. assists Pope in the notes to the Iliad, xi. 81.
Thomson, James, his life, xi. 221. Son of a Minister at Ednam, in Roxburgh, born 1700, 221. Educated under Mr. Riccarton, 221. Removes to London, 222. Becomes acquainted with Mallet and Aaron Hill, 223. Sells his poem on Winter to Mr. Millar, 223. Dedicates his Winter to Sir Spencer Compton, from whom he receives a present of 20 guineas, 223. It is recommended by Dr. Rundle to Lord Chancellor Talbot, 224. Publishes Summer, a poem on the death of Sir Isaac Newton, and Britannia, in 1727, 225. Is entertained in the family of Lord Binning, 225. Publishes Spring in 1728, and Autumn 1730, 226. Writes Sophonisba 1727, 226. The prologue to Sophonisba written by Pope and Mallet, 226. Travels with a son of Chancellor Talbot, 226. Gets the place of Secretary of Briefs, 227. Writes his poem on Liberty, 227. Loses his place by the death of the Chancellor, 228. Allowed a pension of 100*l.* a year by the Prince of Wales, 228. Writes the tragedy of Agamemnon 1738, 228. Licence refused to his Edward and Eleonora, 229. In conjunction with Mallet writes the masque of Alfred, 229. Writes Tancred and Sigismunda 1745, 229. Appointed Surveyor-general of the Leeward Islands, 230. Publishes his last piece, the Castle of Indolence, 230. Died 1748, and buried at Richmond, 230. His person described, 230. His tragedy of Coriolanus brought on the stage after his death by the friendship of Sir George Lyttleton and Mr. Quin, 230. His friendly letter to his sister, 231. Character of his works, 235.
Thought, the power of in animals, vii. 92. Some men never think, 93. Whether the soul always thinks, 93. Farther enquiries on thought, 94.
Thraso, his reflections on the influence of fear and fortitude, v. 352. 353.
Thrasybulus, a remarkable instance of being deluded by flattery, vi. 133.
Thrale, Mrs. impromptu on her completing her 35th year, i. 357.
Tiger, Mr. publishes two volumes of Butler's Works, ix. 187.

Tickell,

Tickell, Thomas, his life, x. 267. Born 1686, at Bridekirk, in Cumberland, 267. Entered at Oxford April 1701, 267. Initiated under the patronage of Addison, 267. His Translation of Homer preferred to Pope's, 268. A conversation between Pope and Addison on the Translation, 268. Under secretary to Mr. Addison, 272. Secretary to the Lords Justices of Ireland, 272. Died April 23, 1740, 272. A contributor to the Spectators, 273. The Translation of the Iliad, published by him, supposed to have been Addison's, xi. 99.

Time, the principal employment of it should be directed with a view to the end of our existence, v. 58. The negligent waste of it censured, 233. Ought to be spent with frugality, and improved with diligence, 234. 253. The injustice of wasting the time of others, vii. 53. Statesmen and patrons more reproached for it than they deserve, 54. Those who attend statesmen the most criminal, 54. A tribute of time to be paid to a multitude of tyrants, 55. The continual progress of, taken notice of by all nations, 173. The effects of the progress not regarded, 173. The neglect of the present hour censured, iii. 243. The loss of, considered, 259. Considerations on the loss of iii. 314. The best remedy for grief, 401.

Timon of Athens, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 215.

Titus Andronicus, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 216.

Toleration of Religion in Prussia, xii. 229.

Tomkyns, apprehended for being concerned in a plot against Parliament with Waller, ix. 245. Convicted and executed, 249.

Tradesman, case of one attempting to become a wit and a critick, vii. 186. Impropriety of his turning fop and fine gentleman, 379. The progress of, in London, iii. 225. The folly of his seeking happiness in rural retirement, iii. 227.

Tragedy, origin of, iii. 8. More uniform than comedy, 41. Critical remarks on the manner of composing it, v. 346.

Tragi-Comedy, the nature and design of it, vi. 98. Shakspeare's eminent success in that species of dramatic composition, 99.

Tranquil, Tom (a rich man), his history, vii. 294.

Tranquilla, her account of the addresses of Venustulus, Fungosa, Flosculus, and Dentatus, designed as a contrast to the narrative of Hymenæus, v. 309. Her marriage with Hymenæus, and the felicity with which it was attended, vi. 158.

Translations, the progress of, xi. 182. Unknown in Greece, 182. Not much read in Italy, 183. State of, in France, 183. Observations on, vii. 272. A production of moderns, 272. The progress of, 272. Early cultivated in England, 275. Its progress in England, 276.

Translator, character of a good translator, ix. 70.

Travels, directions for writing works of, vii. 350. Specimen of the common method of writing journals of travels, 387.

Treakle, Zachary, complaint against his idle wife, vii. 56. His wife's answer and complaints against her husband, 111.

Trees, the want of, in a good part of Scotland, viii. 212.

Troilus and Cressida, observations on Shakspeare's play of, ii. 217.
Trumbull, Sir William, Pope's Epitaph on him, and criticisms on it, xi. 202.
Truth, how far ridicule the test of it, xi. 357. Its high original and vast importance, v. 160. Its easy entrance into the mind when introduced by desire and attended with pleasure, vi. 147. A steady regard to the lustre of moral and religious truth, a certain direction to happiness, 236. The crime of the violation of, vii. 75. The want of it in historians lamented, 75. Exemplified in an Englishman's and a Frenchman's account of the capture of Louisburgh, 76.
Trypherus, his character, v. 175.
Tucker, Dr. his proposals concerning America considered, viii. 200.
Turenne, Marshal, his saying of the importance of immediately correcting our mistakes, iv. 210.
Turk, characterised as a husband, i. 321.
Turnips, introduced into the Isle of Col, viii. 360.
Turpicola, her history, vi. 287.
Twelfth Night, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 204.
Two Gentlemen of Verona, observations on Shakspeare's comedy of, ii. 198.
Tyrconnel, Lord, takes Savage into his house, and promises him a pension of 200*l.* a year, x. 317. His quarrel with Savage, 327.

V.

VAFER, his character of an insidious flatterer, vi. 134.
Vagario, his character, iv. 176.
Vagulus, his account of Squire Bluster, vi. 9.
Valdesso, his excellent remark upon resigning his commission, iv. 186.
Vanessa, her unhappy partiality for Swift, and death, xi. 22. By her will orders the poem of Cadenus and Vanessa to be published, 23.
Van Homrigh, Mrs. See *Vanessa*.
Vanity, of authors, represented in the case of Misellus, iv. 103. Excessive, exemplified in the character of Mr. Frolick, 389. Its tendency to idleness, vi. 84.
Venice, account of the quarrel between that state and Paul V. xii. 7.
Venustulus, the manner of his addresses to Tranquilla, v. 308. His unmanly and timid conduct exposed, 351.
Verecundulus, the infelicities he sustained through his habitual bashfulness and timidity, vi. 103.
Versification, remarks on its rules, v. 92, 104. The peculiarity of Milton's, in his Paradise Lost, 106. See *Virgil*.
Vice, the descriptions of it in writing should be always calculated to excite disgust, iv. 26. The essence of, considered, viii. 55.

Victoria, her letter on the foolish anxiety to excel merely in the charms of external beauty, v. 376. On the mortifications arising from the loss of it, 394.

Vida, his Art of Poetry translated by Christopher Pitt, xi. 218. His remarks on the propriety of Virgil's versification, v. 132.

Vines, first planted by Noah, ii. 442. Progress of the cultivation of, 443. Ordered to be destroyed by an edict of Domitian, 443. Of France, superior to the mines of America, 451.

Virgil, account of the Sortes Virgilianæ, ix. 8. Specimen of Sir John Denham's Translation, 80. Milbourne's criticisms on Dryden's Translation, 427. Vain attempts to translate Virgil by Brady and Tate, 431. Æneid, translated by Christopher Pitt, xi. 219. This Translation contrasted with Dryden's, 219. In what respect superior in pastoral poetry, iv. 239. Remarks on the judicious propriety of his versification, 242. Why preferred to Homer by Scaliger, v. 140. The plan of his Æneid formed upon the writings of Homer, 393.

Virtue, the danger of mistaking the love for the practice of virtue, exemplified in Savage, x. 342. The representations of it in works of fancy should be always exact and pure, iv. 26. The difference between speculative and practical virtue, 90. The error of substituting single acts of it for habits, 184. Obstructed by confounding the praise with the practice of goodness, 184. United with industry supplies the genuine sources of hope, v. 211. Virtue and truth often defeated by pride and obstinacy, 102. The constant pursuit of it the highest excellence, vi. 268. The criterion of, considered, viii. 49. Such conduct not to be repented of for the event, iii. 397. To be pursued by virtuous means, i. 271. The various attacks on it, 217.

Virtuoso, his character distinctly drawn, v. 68. The advantages he is capable of communicating to others, 73. His excessive fondness for curiosities often the evidence of a low genius, 76.

Visionary schemes, the effects of, iii. 422.

Visitor's criticisms on Pope's Epitaphs, xi. 199.

Vivaculus, his letter on Virtuosos, vi. 215.

Ulinish, account of, viii. 291.

Ulva Isle, account of, viii. 382. The *Mercheta Mulierum* paid there, 383.

Ulysses, the discovery of, improper for a picture, vii. 181.

Uneasiness of mind, often relieved by comparing our lot with that of others, vi. 265.

Union, the difficulty of, either between nations or smaller communities, iii. 129.

Universities, the superiority of the English, to their academies, and foreign universities, vii. 133.

Voltaire, his visit to Congreve, xi. 194. Pays a visit to Pope, x. 107. Young's Epigram on him, 248.

Volunteer Laureat, x. 367.

Vossius, Isaac, delighted in having his hair combed for many hours together, ix. 294.

Voting, considerations on the rights of, for representatives in Parliament, viii. 73.

Voyages, introduction to The World Displayed, a collection of, ii. 264. Abstract account of, in search of new countries, viii. 96. Ill consequences of, 98.

Upton, Mr. observations on his Critical Observations on Shakspeare, ii. 180.

Usefulness, public, should be the object of our diligent endeavours, v. 371. 375.

W.

WAINSCOT, TOM, complaint of his son's becoming a fop, and neglecting business, vii. 379.

Waller, Edmund, his life, ix. 229. Born at Colshill, in Hertfordshire, March 3, 1605, 229. His father left him 3500*l.* a year, 229. Educated at Eton, and removed to King's College, Cambridge, 229. Returned to Parliament in his 18th year, 229. Wrote his first poetry in his 19th year, 230. Wrote poetry almost by instinct, 231. Marries Mrs. Banks, a great heiress, 232. Loses his wife, who leaves one daughter, 232. Addresses Lady Dorothea Sidney, under the name of Sacharissa, who rejects his addresses, 232. Celebrates Lady Sophia Murray, under the name of Amoret, 233. Supposed to have taken a voyage, 234. Marries a lady of the name of Bresse, or Breaux, by whom he has five sons and eight daughters, 234. Being returned to the Parliament of 1640, makes a noisy speech on imaginary grievances, 235. No bigot to his party, 237. His speech on Episcopacy, 237. Sends 1000 broad pieces to the King when he set up his standard, 240. Continues to sit in the rebellious conventicle, and to speak against their proceedings, 241. Nominated one of the Commissioners to treat with the King at Oxford, 241. Engaged in a plot against Parliament, 242. The manner in which the plot was discovered, 244. Him and Tomkyns taken up, both of whom confess the whole plot, 245. A day of thanksgiving appointed for deliverance from the plot, 244. Earl of Portland and Lord Conway taken up, on the declaration of Waller, for being concerned in the plot, are examined several times by the Lords, and admitted to bail, 249. Tomkyns and Chaloner executed for the plot, 249. Tried and condemned, and, after a year's imprisonment, and a fine of 10,000*l.* is banished, 250. Obtains, from Cromwell, permission to return, 251. Received by Cromwell as a kinsman, 251. Writes his famous panegyrick on Cromwell, 251. Writes a poem on the death of Cromwell, 253. Writes again on the restoration of Charles II. 253. Returned to Parliament for Hastings, 254. Obtains from the King the provostship of Eton, but Clarendon refuses to put the seal to the grant, from his not being a clergyman, 256. His opposition to Clarendon on that account, 256. Kindly treated

treated by James II. 257. Prepares for his latter end, 258. Died Oct. 21, 1687, and was buried at Beaconsfield, 259. Account of his descendants, 259. His character by Clarendon, 260. Declared he would blot from his works any line that did not contain some motive to virtue, 266. His works characterised, 267. Specimen of his translation of the *Pastor Fido*, 279.

Walmsley, Gilbert, some account of, x. 25.

Walpole, Horace, travels through France into Italy with Gray, where they quarrel, and each pursues his journey separately, xi. 365.

Walsh, William, his life, ix. 312. Born at Aberley, Worcestershire, 1663, 312. Entered Gentleman Commoner at Oxford 1678, 312. The best critick in the nation, 312. Member of Parliament for Worcestershire, 312. Gentleman of the Horse to Queen Anne, 312. A zealous friend to the Revolution, 312. Corresponded with Pope, on the pastoral comedy of the Italians, 313. Supposed to have died in 1709, 313. Account of his works, 313. An early encourager of Pope, xi. 62.

Wants, those who have no real, form imaginary ones, iii. 308. The wants of him who wants nothing, 310.

War, Princes think it necessary to assign some reason for, but frequently a very unsatisfactory one, xii. 256. Should be conducted by rules consistent with the universal interest of mankind, v. 53. Different feelings on the approach of, vii. 17. Deplorable case of the ladies losing their gallants, 18. The raising and training an equal number of women recommended, 19. Women capable of being defeated, as Braddock, without seeing his enemies; of surrendering Minorca, without a breach; and of looking at Rochfort, 20. Every man ought to fight as the single champion, 29. The duty of thinking as if the event depended on a man's counsel, 29. Proposal for erecting a fort on Salisbury plain, resembling Brest, arming it with beef and ale, and using our soldiers to attack it, 31. Asses, bulls, turkeys, geese, and tragedians, to be added by way of accustoming the soldiers to noises equally horrid with the war cry, 32. Diminution of the love of truth one of the calamities of war, 120. Ill effects of making preparations for it in the time of peace, viii. 101. Every method of pacification to be tried before war is engaged in, 121. Its miseries little attended to by many, 121. No expectation of allies in a war which might have been prevented, 123. The propriety of demanding expences in preparing for war when the opposite party consents to conditions required, considered, 136.

War of 1756, origin of, ii. 337.

Warbois, witches of, conviction of, commemorated in a sermon at Huntingdon, iii. 72.

Warburton, W. Bishop of Gloucester, his literary and critical character, xi. 123. Defends Pope's Essay on Man against Crousaz, 125. Commences a friendship with Pope, 69. Erects a monument to the memory of Pope, 125. Ob-

servations on his notes on Shakspeare, ii. 177. View of the controversy between him and M. Crousaz. on Pope's Essay on Man, 254.

Warner, Tim. account of his good sort of woman to his wife, vii. 400.

Warrior, the vanity of his wishes, i. 213.

Warton's Essay on Pope, Review of, ii. 413.

Watering-places, observations on, and on a select set at one of them, vii. 312.

Watts, Dr. Isaac, his life, xi. 238. Born at Southampton 1674, 238. Began with Latin at four years of age, 238. Educated in a dissenting academy, 239. A maker of verses from fifteen to fifty, 239. Leaves the academy at twenty years of age, 240. Tutor to Sir John Hartop's son, 240. Becomes preacher at twenty-four years of age, 240. Sir Thomas Abney takes him into his house, 240. His character as a preacher, 243. His moral character, 244. His works characterised, 245. Received an unsolicited diploma of D. D. from Edinburgh and Aberdeen in 1728, 246. Died 1748, 246. His character, 247.

Wealth, the contempt of it represented in various instances, iv. 370. 371. Wrong notions of its usefulness corrected, 374. Why the object of general desire, v. 383. The real importance and influence of it shewn in the case of disappointed expectations, vi. 80.

Weather, causes why an Englishman's conversation is first on the weather, vii. 42. A more noble topick than generally supposed, 42. Influences the temper, 43. The folly of submitting to such influence, 43.

West, Gilbert, his life, xi. 259. Educated at Eton and Oxford, 259. Designed for the Church, but obtains a commission in the Army, 259. Resigns his commission, and appointed clerk extraordinary of the Privy Council, under Lord Townshend, 1729, 260. Settles at Wickham in Kent, 260. Publishes his Observations on the Resurrection, 1747, 260. Created LL.D. at Oxford, 1748, 260. Frequently visited by Littleton and Pitt, 260. Clerk of the Privy Council and treasurer of Chelsea Hospital, 261. Died 1756, 261. His works characterised, 262.

Wharton, Lord, his vile character, x. 82.

Whatever is, is right, true sense of that assertion of Mr. Pope, ii. 258.

Whirler, Jack, his history, vii. 72.

Whisperer, his character, vi. 25.

Whitefoot, his character of Sir Thomas Browne, xii. 29.

Whitehead, Paul, summoned before the Lords for his poem called Manners, xi. 135.

Wickedness, the general spread of it considered, v. 131.

Wife, an idle one described, vii. 56. Cautions in choosing one, 396.

Wilkes, John, considerations on his being rejected by the House of Commons as representative for Middlesex, viii. 67.

Wilks, Mr. (the actor) occasionally allows a benefit to Savage, x. 297. Instances of his generosity, 295.
Wills, the necessity of making them, exemplified in the story of Sophia Heedful, vii. 390.
William III. King, supplied copious materials for prose and verse, x. 163.
Winbury, Miss, Pope's unfortunate lady, xi. 172. Said to have been in love with Pope, 172.
Windows in Scotland described, viii. 227.
Winter, the season of seriousness and terror, v. 54. And of retirement and study, 57. The horrors of it in the Polar countries, vi. 266. In the Hebrides little more than rain and wind, viii, 266. An Ode, i. 331. Winter's Walk, 332.
Winter's Tale, observations on Shakspeare's comedy, ii. 204.
Wishes, vain, the folly of indulging them, v. 17.
Wit, has its changes and fashions, ix. 19. Pope's description erroneous, 20. Properly characterised, 20. Exuberance of, condemned, 40. Sir R. Blackmore's account of, x. 212. Its original, iv. 144. Wherein it differeth from learning, 144. The mutual advantages of their being united, 149. The folly of affecting that character, 168. The means necessary to the production of a person eminent for the character of a wit, v. 194.
Wits, seldom rewarded by their superiors, ix. 225. Affected, the meanness of their character, v. 366. vi. 4. 200. In the time of Charles II. characterised, i. 220.
Witchcraft, history of, iii. 70. An annual sermon still preached at Huntingdon in commemoration of the conviction of the witches of Warbois, 72. King James I. wrote in defence of it, 72. Act of Parliament made 1 James I. for the punishment of, 72.
Withers, Gen. Hen. Pope's Epitaph on him; with the Visitor's criticisms, xi. 210.
Wolsey, the rise and fall of, i. 210.
Women, Lord Bacon's severe reflection on beautiful, iv. 246. Infelicities peculiar to, 251. The want of attention to their enquiries censured, v. 356. Their deplorable case in the beginning of a war, by losing their gallants, vii. 18. Recommended to follow the soldiers to camp, 19. Capable to become soldiers, 19. An army of, might have been defeated, as Braddock, without seeing the enemy, surrendered Minorca, without a breach, and looked at Rochfort, 20. A good sort of one characterised, 400. The danger they are in when they lay aside their religion, iii. 139. The fortitude of, described, i. 271.
Wonders, an instance of the desire of man to propagate a, ix. 2.
Wood, considerations on making plantations, viii. 380.
Wood's Halfpence, their history, xi. 24.
Word to the Wise, prologue to, i. 326.
World, Milton supposed it to be in its decay, ix. 131. This opinion was refuted by Dr. Hakewill, 131. Compared to a clock, 31.

World Displayed (a collection of voyages), Introduction to, ii. 264.
Wormwood, Dick, his story, vii. 337.
Writing, the rage for, vii. 6.
Wycherley, W. a man esteemed without virtue, and caressed without good-humour, xi. 61. Wrote verses in praise of Pope, 61.

X.

XERXES, the vanity of a warrior exemplified in him, i. 214.

Y.

YALDEN, Thomas, his life, x. 261. Born at Exeter in 1671, 261. Educated at Oxford, 261. His readiness at composition, 261. Became Doctor of Divinity 1706, 263. Rector of Chalton and Cleanville, 263. Preacher of Bridewell, 1698, 263. Charged with a dangerous correspondence with Kelly, 263. His papers seized, but no criminality appearing, was discharged, 264. Died July 16, 1736, 264. Account of his poems, 265.
Young, Edward, his life, by Herbert Croft, xi. 286. Born at Upham near Winchester, 1681, 286. Account of his father, 287. Queen Mary was god-mother to him, 287. Educated at Winchester College, 288. Entered at New College, 1703, 288. Law Fellow of All Souls, 1708, 288. Bachelor of Civil Laws, 1714, and Dr. 1719, 289. Speaks the Latin Oration, when the foundation of the Codrington Library was laid, 289. Published his Epistle to Lord Lansdown, 1712, 289. Poem on the Last Day published, 1713, 293. Account of some pieces omitted in his works, 293. Patronized by Lord Wharton, 296. Busiris brought on the stage, 1719, 297. The Revenge, 1721, 297. Has two annuities granted him by Lord Wharton, 299. Attempts to get into Parliament for Cirencester, 300. Takes orders, and becomes a popular preacher, 300. Account of his Satires, 301. Acquired more than 3000*l.* by the Universal Passion, 304. Chaplain to George II. 309. Writes the Brothers, 309. Presented to the living of Welwyn, 1730, 311. Married Lady Elizabeth Lee, daughter to the Earl of Lichfield, 1731, 311. His wife died 1741, 313. His Philander and Narcissa supposed to be intended for Mr. and Mrs. Temple, 313. The occasion of the Night Thoughts read, 315. His son defended from the reports of his ill behaviour to his father, 318. The character of Lorenzo not designed for his son, 318. His letter to Pope, 324. None of his writings pejudicial to the cause of Virtue and Religion, 326. The Brothers brought on the stage 1753, 328. Gives 1000*l.* to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel,

Gospel, 328. History and account of his poem called Resignation, 332. His friendship for his housekeeper, 334. Died 1765, 335. Many untruths mentioned of him in the Biographia; 335. Story of his straying into the enemy's camp, with a classick in his hand, 336. The Archbishop of Canterbury's Letter to him, 337. Appointed clerk of the closet to the Princess Dowager, 1761, 337. Not the Parson Adams of Fielding, 339. His epitaph, 340. His Poems characterised by Dr. Johnson, 341.

Youth, modesty and active diligence its amiable ornaments, iv. 63. Often deluded and ruined by profuseness and extravagance, 169. Too easily ensnared by early immersion in pleasure, 271. A time of enterprize and hope, v. 254. Delighted with sprightliness and ardour, 267. The dangers to which it is often exposed, vi. 208. Their fond opinion of their own importance, 325. The forbearance due to young actors on the stage of life, vii. 98. The proper employment of, iii. 353.

Z.

ZEPHYRETTA, her character, iv. 120.

Zoroaster, supposed to have borrowed his institutions from Moses, vii. 14.

Zosima, her history, iv. 73. Her epitaph, ii. 335.

FINIS.

Printed by JOHN NICHOLS and Son,
Red Lion Passage, Fleet Street, London.

00097597

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 28 September, 2015